

ENGLISH TRAINING FOR MISSION



reach the unreached.

www.besent.ch

Table of contents

BEsent – Training Manual.....	11
Training Unit 1	11
Introduction to the online training.....	11
The five big steps of sending	13
What is training?	13
Teaching	13
Application	13
Outreach.....	13
Overview over the BEsent-Training lessons	14
Training Unit 2	18
The model of Jesus and the 10 Commandments of sending	18
Sending: The best definition is exactly how Jesus lived	18
The example of Jesus.....	19
How did Jesus live?	20
The sending of Jesus' disciples: The 10 commandments of sending	21
Training Unit 3	25
The condition for sending: The power of the Holy Spirit I.....	25
What shall we do to be saved?	26
10 conversions in the book of Acts	27
A clear, healthy and biblical conversion contains	27
By grace through faith.....	28
The cycle of faith	30
1. Faith.....	31
2. Repentance by faith.....	32
10 Detailed steps for repentance and forgiveness	34
Heart mirror	35
3. Baptism in water by grace through faith.....	40
4. Receiving the Holy Spirit by grace through faith.....	41
Conditions for receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit	44
Task: Receive the Holy Spirit	46
Training Unit 4	47
The conditions for sending: The power of the Holy Spirit II	47
The exchange of persons.....	47
The three levels of the coming of the Holy Spirit	48
1. Coming of the Holy Spirit	48
2. Filling	49
3. Overflow	50
“The seven-fold overflow of the Holy Sprit“ for anyone that is ready to be sent:	51
1. Guidance.....	51
2. Prayer	51
3. Laying on of hands, to receive the Holy Spirit and healing	51
4. Doing good	52
5. Talking from inspiration	52
6. Listening to the voice of the shepherd.....	53
7. Seeing what the Father does.....	53
Training Unit 4b	54
Sending team	54
The model of Jesus	54
Teams in the ministry of Peter and Paul	54
Form a Team	55
Calling practically	55
Basics about the forming and functions of a sending tems	56
Application	63

Training Unit 5	64
Prayer for the harvest (Prayer walk)	64
Prayer for the harvest (prayer walk)	70
Three sources, areas, places where the harvest workers come from	71
Examples in praying for the harvest.....	72
1. Research: What does a harvest field and a harvest worker look like?	74
2. Spiritual Mapping I: What is the enemy doing in that region?	74
3. Spiritual Mapping II: What does God do/plan within that region?.....	74
Prayer proclamations	75
Application	77
Outreach.....	78
Training Unit 6	79
1st Commandment of sending: Go I: Go by faith.....	79
Sending means	80
The four promises for the ministry of sending.....	81
1. Promise: The Lord is with us.....	81
2. Promise: God prepared	81
3. Promise: Authority	81
4. Promise: The Power of the Holy Spirit	82
1. Commandment of sending: GO.....	83
Application	88
Outreach.....	88
Training Unit 7	89
1st Commandment of sending: Go II: Going as a team	89
The ministry of evangelism	90
The ministry of sending has two levels:	91
The difference between the ministry of evangelism and the ministry of sending	94
Main goals of the ministry of sending	95
Why do the sending ministry together?.....	96
Application	97
Outreach.....	98
Training Unit 8	99
2nd Commandment of sending: Preach I:	99
The Gospel of the Kingdom of God: Faith	99
What does it mean to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of God?	100
THE GOSPEL IS A PERSON: JESUS!	101
Application	105
Outreach.....	105
Training Unit 9	106
2nd Commandment of sending:	106
Preach II: 'from creation to salvation'	106
Summary: Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God Part I	106
Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God Part II.....	108
Way of salvation: "From Creation to Salvation"	109
Introduction: The highest God	109
1. Creation	110
2. God and man together	111
3. Sin and separation	112
4. Commandments	113
5. Sacrifice	115
6. God sends Jesus.....	116
7. Jesus, the Son of God	117
8. Jesus, the sacrifice	118
9. Resurrection	119

10. Jesus sends the Holy Spirit	120
11. Faith, repentance, baptism in water and Holy Spirit	121
12. His Kingdom.....	122
Application	124
Outreach	125
Training Unit 10.....	126
2nd Commandment of sending: Preach III: Repentance, Baptism: In water and Holy Spirit	126
Different terms on the way from unbelief to belief.....	126
4 main steps within a biblical new birth.....	127
1. Faith.....	127
2. Repentance.....	128
3. Water baptism.....	131
4. Receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit.....	135
Application	136
Outreach	137
Training Unit 11.....	138
2nd Commandment of sending: Preach IV:	138
The call to repentance into following Jesus Christ.....	138
Summary proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God	139
Summary part II: Proclaim From Creation to Salvation.....	139
The five areas of the Gospel.....	140
Summary Part III: Faith, repentance, baptism, receiving of the Holy Spirit.....	140
4 main steps of a true biblical new birth.....	141
The call to repentance and into following Christ	141
How and why were they “called”?	142
Summary: the call to repentance and into following Jesus	145
The call to repentance and into following Jesus includes three parts:.....	145
Application	146
Outreach	147
Training Unit 12.....	148
2nd Commandment of sending: Preach V:	148
Methods of evangelism (DBS: Discovery Bible Study)	148
Engel scale	149
Faith in salvation versus faith in miracles	150
Methodology and practice of evangelistic DBS.....	152
The five steps of DBS	153
Methodology for an evangelistic DBS with open people	154
Example of an evangelistic DBS.....	155
Overview of 24 especially useful evangelistic texts to use with people of peace	160
Application	161
Outreach.....	162
Training Unit 13.....	163
2nd Commandment of sending: Preach VI:	163
You will be my witnesses.....	163
To be a witness means	165
Application	169
My personal testimony	169
Outreach.....	171
Training Unit 14.....	172
3rd & 4th Commandment of sending:	172
Seek persons & houses of peace	172
1 st Level: Elements of evangelism for the members of the community of faith.....	173
2 nd Level: Evangelism by Evangelists (Acts 8)	174
3 rd Level: Evangelism by sent ones/Apostles	174
Person (man or woman) and a house of peace	175

A person of peace (some translate: "person of honour") is characterized by:.....	176
Examples for people of peace in the New Testament	176
Examples for finding people of peace	177
Application	180
Outreach.....	181
Training Unit 15.....	182
5th Commandment of sending: Heal the sick.....	182
Authority and power	184
5 th commandment of sending: Heal the sick!	186
The power of the Holy Spirit lives in us:.....	190
Testimonies of the author, Florian Bärtsch.....	190
Measure of faith.....	192
What should we do if we pray and healing DOESN'T happen?.....	193
Healing practically	194
Final thoughts.....	195
Application	196
Outreach.....	197
Training Unit 16.....	198
6th Commandment of sending: Cast out demons!	198
The spiritual war.....	201
Manifestations	204
Practice: How did Jesus do it practically?.....	206
Application	207
Outreach.....	208
Training Unit 17.....	209
6th Commandment of sending: Raise the dead!	209
Raisings from the dead in the Bible.....	210
Conditions to raise the dead	213
Practice of raising the dead.....	213
Application	217
Outreach.....	218
Training Unit 18.....	219
The 8th commandment of sending:.....	219
Be led by the Holy Spirit	219
The evangelistic ministry of the Holy Spirit.....	222
The "Power Ministry" of the Holy Spirit.....	223
Being led by the Holy Spirit.....	223
Hearing God's voice and being guided by it was normal for:	224
Personal examples of the Holy Spirit's guidance	225
Task.....	227
Treasure hunt	228
Personal examples of the Holy Spirit's guidance	229
Application	230
Outreach.....	231
Training Unit 19.....	232
The 9th commandment of sending:.....	232
Be prepared for rejection and persecution!.....	232
Spiritual warfare.....	233
10 common forms of persecution.....	234
10 important principles of persecution.....	235
Application	240
Outreach.....	241
Training Unit 20.....	242
The 10th commandment of sending: Make disciples I:.....	242

The Jesus Model.....	242
Summary	243
What is discipleship?	245
The training model of Jesus:.....	248
Application	249
Outreach.....	250
Training Unit 21.....	253
Make disciples II:.....	253
Discipleship means keeping the commandments of Jesus.....	253
What is discipleship?	254
The 50 “key” commandments of Jesus (the Law of Christ).....	254
Brief discipleship – six commandments	256
Brief discipleship – eight commandments	256
What is the discipleship level that we aim for with this training?	257
The four discipleship areas of the BEsent training.....	257
The discipleship topics of the BEsent training.....	258
Recommended order	259
Application	260
Outreach.....	261
Training Unit 22.....	262
Make disciples III:.....	262
The setting for discipleship	262
How does a discipleship training meeting look like practically?	267
Application	275
Outreach.....	276
Training Unit 23.....	277
Make disciples IV:	277
Disciplemaking movements	277
Application	282
Outreach.....	283
Training Unit 24.....	284
1. Discipleship training lesson:	284
Inner discipleship	284
The model of Jesus, how he trained disciples	284
What is discipleship?	285
Inner discipleship	286
The 16 discipleship training lessons	287
How does a discipleship training meeting look like practically?	288
How are new believers discipled?.....	289
1) Lack of basic experience about who Jesus is and what his grace means.....	293
2) Lack of basic experience about who God the Father is	294
3) Lack of basic experience, who the Holy Spirit is what his fellowship is	296
Application	297
Outreach.....	298
Training Unit 25.....	299
2. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life.....	299
A) Bible reading: DBS – Discovery Bible Study	299
Application	304
Outreach.....	305
Examples of suitable texts for a Discovery Bible Study for disciples	306
Training Unit 26.....	310
3. Discipleship training lesson: spiritual life	310
B) Personal prayer	310
Jesus taught his disciples how they should pray.....	311

Application	314
Outreach.....	315
Training Unit 27.....	316
4. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life.....	316
C) Assurance of salvation.....	316
About assurance of salvation	317
Assurance of salvation stays	318
Application	321
Outreach.....	322
Training Unit 28.....	323
5. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life.....	323
D) Be filled with the Holy Spirit!.....	323
The Holy Spirit in us	324
Being filled anew with the Holy Spirit.....	324
Application	328
Outreach.....	329
Training Unit 29.....	330
6. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life.....	330
E) Living in community	330
Living in community	331
Application	333
Outreach.....	334
Training Unit 30.....	335
7. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple.....	335
A) Giving testimony.....	335
Application	339
Outreach.....	340
Training Unit 31.....	341
8. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple.....	341
B) Go and preach the Gospel	341
Application	345
Outreach.....	346
Training Unit 32.....	347
9. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple.....	347
C) The ministry of the Holy Spirit	347
Teach your disciples to heal the sick.....	348
Application	352
Outreach.....	353
Training Unit 33.....	354
10. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple.....	354
D) Giving and sharing	354
Introductory thoughts on giving	355
Application	358
Outreach.....	359
Training Unit 34.....	360
11. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple.....	360
E) Making disciples.....	360
Introductory thoughts on making disciples	361
Application	364
Outreach.....	365
Training Unit 35.....	366
12. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple.....	366
A) You shall love God and your neighbour.....	366
Introductory thoughts on loving God and neighbour	367
Application	371

Outreach.....	372
Training Unit 36.....	373
13. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple.....	373
B) Transformational ministry	373
Introductory thoughts on transformational ministry	374
Introduction to the transformational ministry.....	375
Description of the old self	378
Knowing Christ – yet a lot of the old self remains in us	378
Taking off the old self and putting on the new self in 3 steps	378
Application	381
Outreach.....	382
Training Unit 37.....	383
14. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple.....	383
C) Forgiveness	383
Forgiveness – Disciples forgive others just as God forgives them	385
Application	387
Outreach.....	388
Training Unit 38.....	389
15. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple.....	389
D) Serving	389
Serving - heart of a servant.....	391
Application	393
Outreach.....	394
Training Unit 39.....	395
16. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple.....	395
E) Living by faith.....	395
Key texts on living by faith	397
Living by faith – key principle in the Kingdom of God.....	397
Application	400
Outreach.....	401
Training Unit 40.....	403
Community of faith	403
The Jesus Model.....	403
Review	403
Preview	403
Definitions.....	403
1. Discipleship group	403
2. Spiritual family, community of faith.....	403
3. House church/networked house church.....	403
The Jesus model.....	404
The goal of sending	406
The churches of the New Testament met in houses.....	407
What is a New Testament church?	408
Definition.....	408
The evolution of the church in the course of church history.....	408
Church is a spiritual family.....	409
Comparison: natural and spiritual families	409
Which model shall we use?	409
Spiritual processes and values that only take place in communities of faith	410
Application	411
Outreach.....	412
Training Unit 41.....	413
Community of faith	413
12 core functions of a community of faith (1-4).....	413
Jesus, The Sent One.....	413

The core text about the New Testament church	414
The twelve core values of the community of faith	414
How a community of faith is planted.....	415
1. They devoted themselves to the apostles' teachings	416
2. They devoted themselves to fellowship	416
What does a community of faith practically do in community meetings?	417
3. They devoted themselves to the breaking of bread	418
4. They devoted themselves to prayer	419
Application	420
Outreach.....	421
Training Unit 42.....	423
Community of faith	423
12 core functions of a community of faith (5-12)	423
5. Signs and miracles	425
6. Having everything in common	425
7. Giving to everyone in need	426
8. With one voice	426
9. Daily in the temple	426
10. Daily in their homes	427
11. Sharing meals	428
12. Praising God together	428
The effects of the twelve core values	428
Remarks	429
Where is the church of a sent one?	429
Application	430
Outreach.....	431
Training Unit 43.....	432
Community of faith	432
Structures for networked house churches	432
Structuring multiple networked house churches.....	433
Three types of house churches	435
How to structure networked house churches	435
2x2-team or as a sending team?	435
a) Organically, locally (2:2-team).....	435
b) Strategically, systematically-mobile (sending team)	435
1. The sending team	436
Basics about time commitment for a sending team	436
2. The sending team plants a community of faith and multiplies to the 4 th generation	437
Step by step.....	437
Multiplication to the 4 th generation.....	438
Overview of the multiplication steps	439
3. The sending team forms small networks consisting of 3-5 communities of faith	440
Summary	441
Application	442
Outreach.....	443
Training Unit 44.....	444
Community of faith	444
Leadership in the networked house churches.....	444
Leadership in networked house churches: apostles, deacons, elders.....	446
Pyramid system leadership	447
Leadership under Moses	447
In the New Testament, Jesus brings servant leadership	448
3 Types of leaders in the New Testament.....	449
The role of leadership in establishing a networked house church	450
Qualification, calling and training of New Testament leaders	453
Entrusting leadership	454

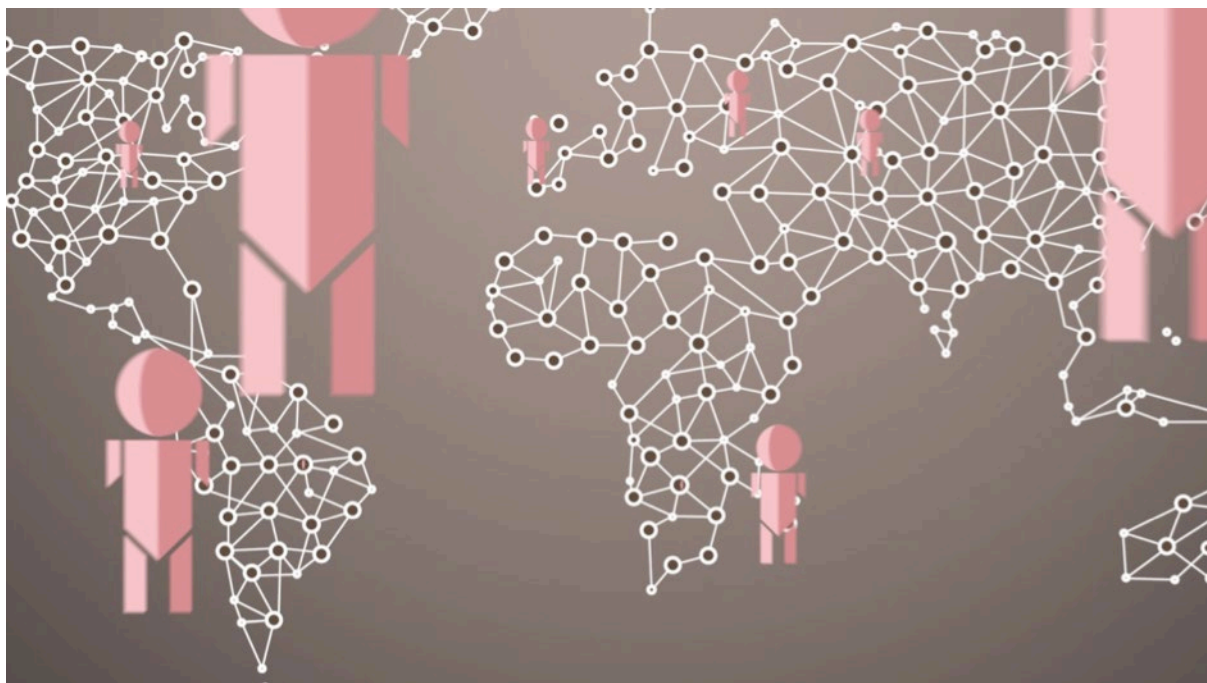
Team leadership	454
Summary	455
For the equipping of the saints	455
Application	457
Outreach.....	458
Training Unit 45.....	459
Multiplication – discipleship movement DMM	459
Multiplication	459
Multiplication is a central part in the creation order.....	460
Multiplication is a central part of the great commission	461
The discipleship commandment actually already implies:	461
DMM – The ministry of sending.....	463
How does this discipleship commandment work?.....	463
Summary	463
Multiplication is a central part for the sending of teams.....	464
Application	465
Outreach.....	466
Training Unit 46.....	467
Multiplication – The Jesus model	467
Discipleship movement in the ministry of Jesus	467
Discipleship movement in the ministry of Paul.....	469
Application	471
Outreach.....	472
Training Unit 47.....	473
Multiplication – multiplication principles	473
222 — 2 Timothy 2:2	473
Exponential growth	474
God loves lots of fruit.....	475
Elephants or rabbits	476
Everyone can win the whole world!.....	477
Multiplication on all levels	479
Our vision is to start	479
Multiplication – each according to its kind	480
Vision of a firework at night	480
Application	481
Outreach.....	482
Training Unit 48.....	483
Multiplication – the goal ahead	483
Case studies	483
1. Case study: Himalaya – systematically-mobile.....	483
2. Case study: Delhi – organically, locally.....	484
3. Case study: India – systematically, mobile.....	487
The development steps in detail:.....	487
The goal ahead	488
Mentoring the team	489
Mentoring each sent one	489
Mentoring each new disciple	490
Mentoring each new community of faith	491
Mentoring: training leaders	492
Goal setting	492
The best is yet to come	494
Application	495
Outreach.....	496

BEsent – Training Manual



Training Unit 1

Introduction to the online training



BEsent is a very practical and proven online-training about the **ministry of sending** in order to reach the unreached.

This first training is about

- Introduction to and presentation of the ministry of sending
- Introduction to and presentation of the online-training

What is the ministry of sending?

John 3:16-17

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him.

...for God so loved the world...

Example: The milk boiling over

The milk boiling over pot is a good example to illustrate the love of God.

The milk boils over and flows on the kitchen floor out to the balcony and from the 3rd floor it flows down the houses' balcony into the grass and from there into a mouse hole down into the deepest depth. God's love flows into the darkest places of the earth permeating all things.

God, our father in Heaven, knows everybody and hears every cry in our hearts!
 God's reaction and his answer to the lost is always: **love** (God loves the world)
 Out of **love** he **sends** Jesus, the Savior.

Experience: In front of the father's eyes his child falls to death

The father goes hand in hand with his child for a winter walk. Suddenly, the child slips away, and the father is only left with the child's glove in his hand. The child slides on the snow directly into an abyss. The child can barely hold on to a cliff. The shocked father runs to the child, bends down, wants to grab its hand – and at that very moment the child lets go. Because the child saw the father, it thought: "Now everything is well...", and let go of his hands...

- So God loved the world that he gave his one and only Son...
- The love does not end until it reaches the lost.

Romans 5:5-6

And hope does not put us to shame, because God's love has been poured out into our hearts through the Holy Spirit, who has been given to us. You see, at just the right time, when we were still powerless, Christ died for the ungodly.

If we really carry the love of God in our hearts, this love compels us, so we bring Jesus to the unreached and lost people.

2 Corinthians 5:14

For Christ's love compels us, because we are convinced that one died for all, and therefore all died.

Acts 4:12

Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to mankind by which we must be saved.

Personal experience of my new birth:

It was like a fire that came out of my Bible. At that very moment, I saw my personal life from the outside – all the sins, deeds and thoughts – like in a movie. Then I saw Heaven and Hell. Saved and lost. And I saw that I was lost. I was so shaken because a strong holiness burned inside of me – the fire of God. I then closed my Bible and then a voice said three times: open the Bible once again and read. So I read about Jesus – that he came to take away all sin. Then I knew: if that is true, then it is the only solution. So, I cried the name of Jesus aloud and asked him to grant me this redemption. An unspeakable joy rose up inside of me. And then voice spoke again: this forgiveness and joy is not only for you – but this redemption is for all people of this world and you shall pass it on!

Acts 4:18-20

Then they called them in again and commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John replied, "Which is right in God's eyes: to listen to you, or to him? You be the judges! As for us, we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard."

- Going to the **unreached, lost** and to bring them Jesus is a very **important** step of sending but it is about much more than just one step!!

The five big steps of sending



1) Requirements and preparations/training for the sending ministry



2) Go to the unreached and lost and bring them JESUS, the Gospel of the Kingdom of God



3) Stay with them, baptize them and make disciples of them



4) Start discipleship groups, spiritual families/communities of faith



5) Multiplication of disciples and of communities and start a DMM (Disciple Multiplication Movement)

In order to reach the unreached, the ministry of sending is the most important!

What is this BEsent -Training about? BEsent is a training. It's not about doctrine or teaching.

What is training?

- Teaching means: Listening and knowledge transfer
- Training means:
 1. Teaching
 2. Application
 3. Outreach

Teaching

This is the part where the topics are taught from the word of God and through the example of Jesus. This happens in the classroom.

Application

This part is about:

- the summary of what was heard in your own words
- processing and discussion
- the practice of what was heard, by "playing it out"
- Biggest focus on: thinking about where, when and with whom the learned lessons can be applied. Goal setting for the coming days. If possible in smaller groups or even better as teams.

Outreach

In the end, it's about the final part of practice – it's about going out and applying what was learned practically.

- Field training
- The best is obviously if someone with practical experience joins and shows us. And we, like the disciples of Jesus, can first watch, learn from it and finally put into practice.
 - This Training should become part of our lifestyle!

Overview over the BEsent-Training lessons



I. Equip and prepare

1. Introduction to the online training
2. The model of Jesus and the 10 commandments of sending
3. Condition for the sending: The power of the Holy Spirit I
4. Condition for the sending: The power of the Holy Spirit II
- 4b. Sending team
5. Prayer for the harvest (prayer walk)
 - Training units 1-5 contain the topics for the start weekend (2-2.5 days), if you want to do the training “full-time“, in one piece (start weekend plus 30 training days) with daily outreaches. One training day: 2h of teaching, 2h of application, 4h of outreach



II. Go, Preach and Baptize

6. 1st Commandment of sending: Go I: Go by faith
7. 1st Commandment of sending: Go II: Go as a team
→ Training units 6-7 are the topics for the first training day
8. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach I: The gospel of the Kingdom of God - Faith
9. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach II: The way of salvation (from creation to salvation)
10. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach III: Repentance – Baptism: In water and Holy Spirit
11. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach IV: The call for repentance and into discipleship
12. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach V: Methods of evangelism
(DBS Discovery Bible Study)
13. 2nd Commandment of sending: Preach VI: You will be my witnesses
→ Training units 8-13 contain topics for training days 2-7
14. 3rd and 4th Commandment of sending: Seek person & houses of peace!
15. 5th Commandment of sending: Heal the sick!
16. 6th Commandment of sending: Cast out demons!
17. 7th Commandment of sending: Raise the dead!
18. 8th Commandment of sending: Be led by the Holy Spirit!
19. 9th Commandment of sending: Be prepared for rejection and persecution!
→ Training units 14-19 contain the topics for training days 8-13



III. Make disciples

- 20. 10th Commandment of sending: Make disciples I: The Jesus model
- 21. 10th Commandment of sending: Make disciples II: Discipleship means keeping the commandments of Jesus
- 22. 10th Commandment of sending: Make disciples III: The setting for discipleship
- 23. 10th Commandment of sending: Make disciples IV: Discipleship movement
→ Training units 20-23 contain the topics for training days 14-15 → 2 Training units each day

The 16 discipleship topics for the first year of discipleship

- 24. Inner discipleship:
- 25. Spiritual life: A) Bible reading – DBS Discovery Bible Study
- 26. Spiritual life: B) Personal prayer
- 27. Spiritual life: C) Assurance of salvation
- 28. Spiritual life: D) Be filled with the Holy Spirit
- 29. Spiritual life: E) Living in community
- 30. Deeds of a disciple: A) Giving testimony
- 31. Deeds of a disciple: B) Go and preach the Gospel
- 32. Deeds of a disciple: C) The ministry of the Holy Spirit
- 33. Deeds of a disciple: D) Giving and sharing
- 34. Deeds of a disciple: E) Make disciples
- 35. Character of a disciple: A) Love God and your neighbour
- 36. Character of a disciple: B) Transformational Ministry
- 37. Character of a disciple: C) Forgiveness
- 38. Character of a disciple: D) Serving
- 39. Character of a disciple: E) Living by faith
→ Training units 24-39 contain the topics for training days 16-23
(2 discipleship training lessons each day)



IV. Community of Faith

- 40. Community of Faith: The Jesus model
 - 41. 12 core functions of a Community of Faith part I: Core functions 1-4
 - 42. 12 core functions of a Community of Faith part II: Core functions 5-12
 - 43. Structure for networked house churches
 - 44. Leadership in the networked house churches
- Training units 40-44 contain the topics for training days 26-27



V. Multiplication

- 45. Multiplication –Disciple Multiplication Movement DMM
- 46. The Jesus model
- 47. Multiplication principals
- 48. The goal ahead

For this training to become fruitful, a commitment is required:

- The participants must put the lessons into practice during the training
- After the training the sending must become a lifestyle (approximately 15h of effort each week)

Example: Girls overcome and go out

In the Himalayas girls went out to share the gospel. But they were still too scared because in that region it's not "normal" for girls/young women to evangelize. So they prayed another 30 minutes in front of the house, then went into the first house, where they found a lame man (100kg heavy, 2m tall). Immediately they laid hands on him, he stood up to his feet and was totally healed!

Notes:



Training Unit 2

The model of Jesus and the 10 Commandments of sending

John 20:21

Again, Jesus said, "Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, I am sending you."

- How shall we put into practice the ministry of sending?
- We look exactly at how Jesus did it and then follow his example:

Hebrews 3:1

Therefore, holy brothers and sisters, who share in the heavenly calling, fix your thoughts on Jesus, whom we acknowledge as our apostle and high priest.

- Jesus is **the sent one** and high priest – *the sent one* = Jesus is our great example for the sending – He is the standard!
- The ministry of sending is not «only» evangelism – the sending is **another ministry** than evangelism and it is a ministry to the whole body of Christ

Sending: The best definition is exactly how Jesus lived

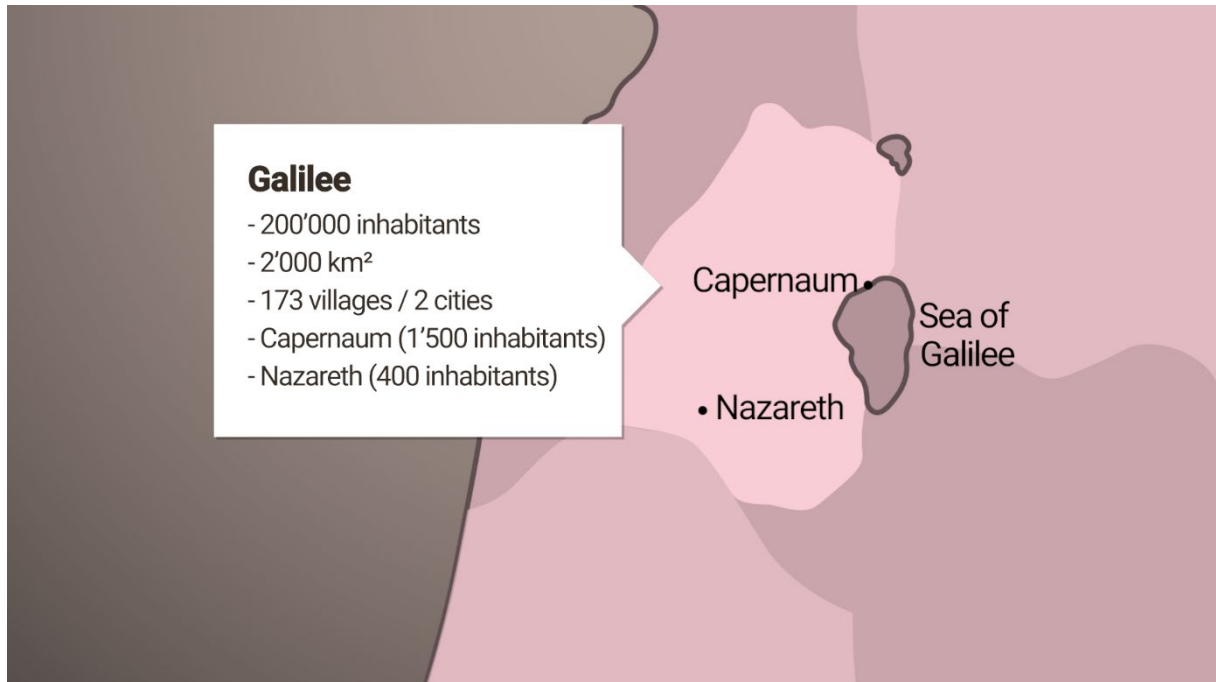
1. A sent one leaves his home (heaven) and goes to the unreached and stays there
2. A sent one calls people and **trains them out there** in a group as disciples
3. A sent one sends them (two by two), to do the same things, he taught them (Matthew 28:19-20)

Summary

A sent one:

....goes to the unreached and stays with them in their home
disciples them there in a group and trains them for the sending
sends them to do the same themselves
result: DMM – Discipleship Multiplication Movement

The example of Jesus



Within Galilee every place could be reached within a two-day walk

The journey to Jerusalem (around 100 km) required a three-day walk. Each day 30 km of walking could be done.

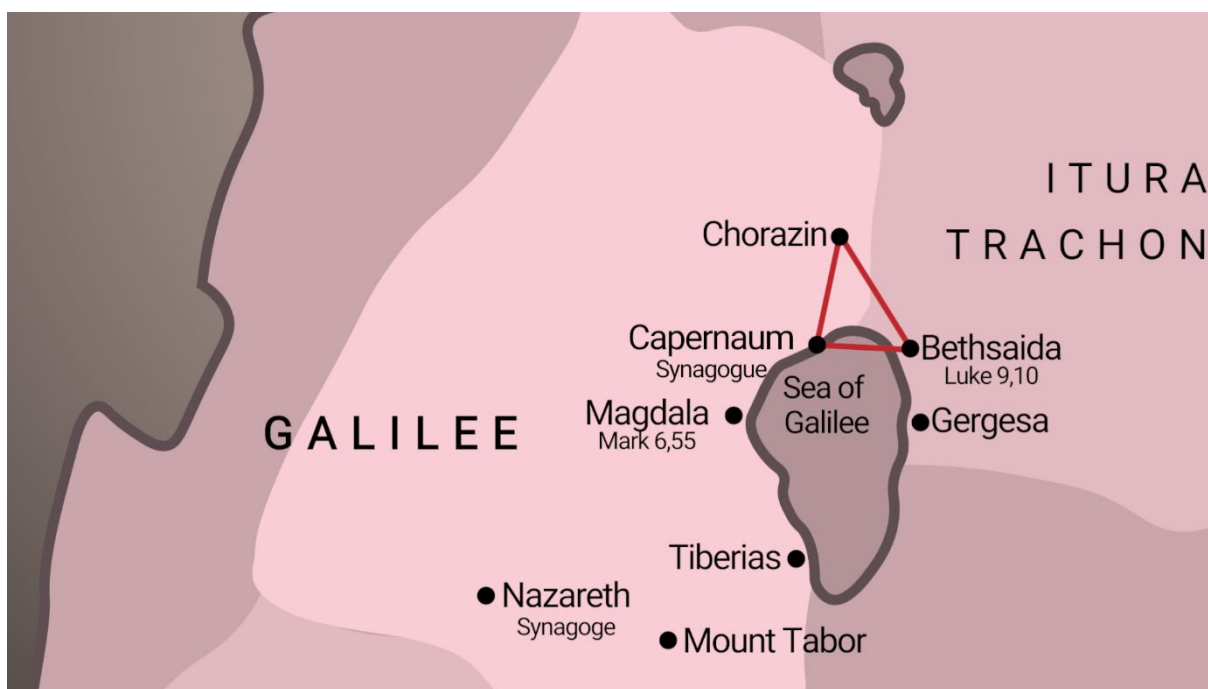
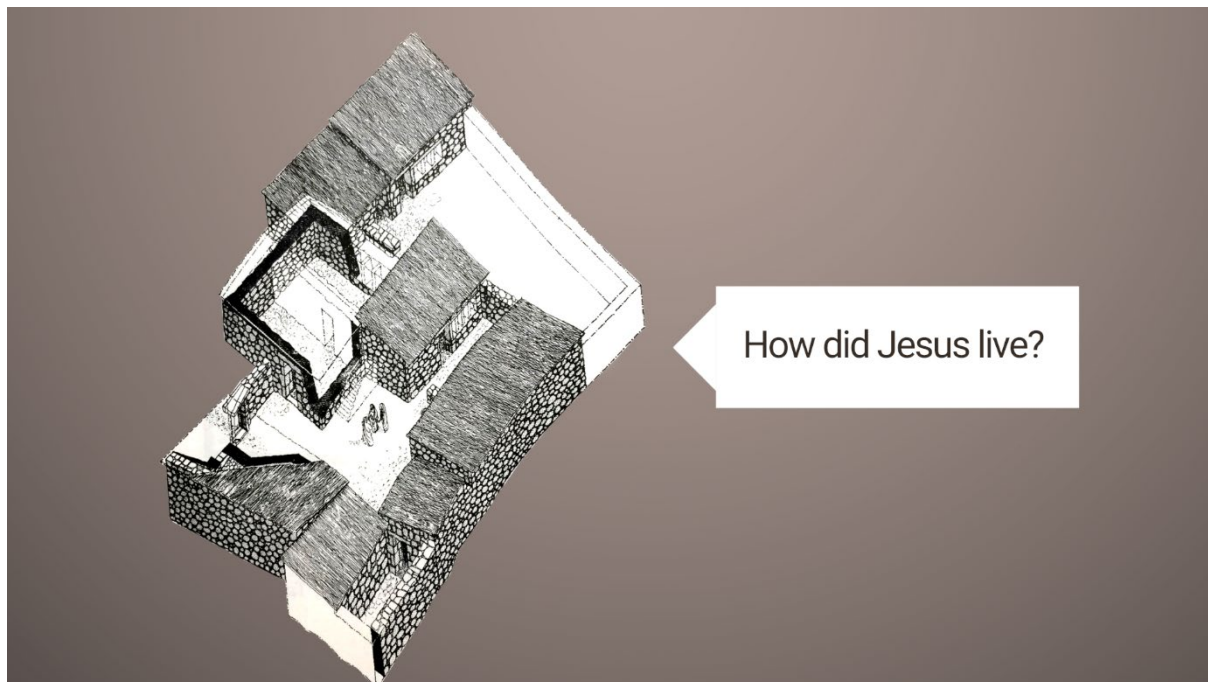
Matthew 4:23

Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease and sickness among the people.

Mark 6:56

And wherever he went—into villages, towns or countryside—they placed the sick in the market-places. They begged him to let them touch even the edge of his cloak, and all who touched it were healed.

How did Jesus live?



29 out of the 35 miracles mentioned in the gospels occurred within the little triangle between Capernaum, Chorazin and Bethsaida.

The training of the disciples by Jesus shows three steps:

1. Jesus proclaims and demonstrates the coming of the Kingdom of God. The disciples are with him and learn.
2. The disciples themselves begin to proclaim and to demonstrate the Kingdom of God. Jesus gives feedback and corrects them.
3. Jesus sends the disciples out to proclaim and to demonstrate the Kingdom of God. Others go with the disciples and learn from them.

The sending of Jesus' disciples: The 10 commandments of sending

- Jesus shared his life and his ministry with his disciples.
- From beginning on, he trained them to send them out to do exactly the same the Father sent him to do.
- After a while (about 1-2 years) of training, Jesus started to send his disciples out to have some first sending experiences.
- For these first sendings, Jesus gave clear instructions
- The sending is not only for the 12 or the 72 disciples: the sending applies to **all** disciples!
- Towards the end of his ministry and his life, Jesus prepared his disciples before he left and returned to the father.
- Finally, Jesus sent his disciples into all the world to all ethnic groups with the last sending words, to...
- ...proclaim this gospel of the Kingdom of God into all the world as a «testimony for all ethnic groups».

Sending texts in the Gospels and in Acts

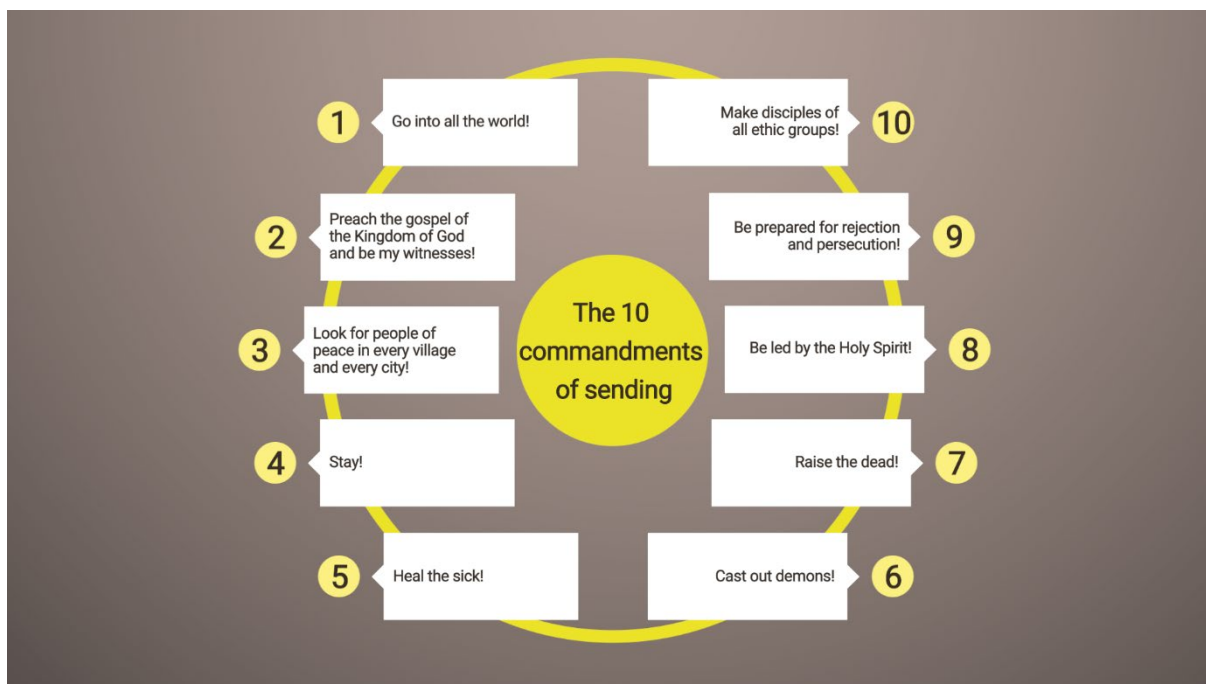
<u>The first sendings</u>	<u>The last sendings</u>
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Matthew 9:37-10:17 • Mark 6:7-13 • Luke 9:1-6 • Luke 10:1-20 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Matthew 28:18-20 • Mark 16:15-20 • Luke 24:45-49 • John 20:21-22 • Acts 1:4+8

→ Task: The first sendings and the last sendings

Within the next 45 minutes, study the two groups (first and last) of sending texts. Mark all scriptures within these texts that are **formulated as a command** and write down **all commands** into a list. Then formulate the 10 main commands of **going/sending** in that list

Commandments

Main commandments for going



→ Task: The 10 Commandments of sending

Learn the 10 Commands of the sending and a corresponding Bible verse by heart.

Notes:

1

Go into all the world!

„Go your way!“ (Luke 10,3)
 „He sent them two by two“ (Luke 10,1 + Mark 6,7)
 „Have faith in God“ (Mark 11,22)
 „Greet no one along the road“ (Luke 10,4)

2

Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God and be my witnesses!

„And as you go, preach, saying 'The kingdom of heaven is at hand,'“ (Matthew 10,7; also look at Luke 9,2, Luke 10,9, Mark 16,15);
 Preach: „Repentance and remission of sins in His name to all nations.“ (Luke 24,47);
 „You shall be my witnesses“ (Acts 1,8)

3

Look for people of peace in every village and every city!

„But whatever house you enter, first say, 'Peace to this house.' And if a son of peace is there, your peace will rest on it; if not, it will return to you.“ (Luke 10, 5-6, also look at Matthew 11, 11-14);
 „But whatever city you enter, and they do not receive you, go out into its streets and say, 'The very dust of your city which clings to us we wipe off against you.'“ (Matthew 10,10 + 11a, also look at Mark 6,11)

4

Stay!

„And remain in the same house, eating and drinking such things as they give, for the laborer is worthy of his wages.“ (Luke 10,7); „In whatever place you enter a house, stay there till you depart from that place.“ (Mark 6,10 also look at Luke 9,4); „For a worker is worthy of his food.“ (Matthew 10,10)

5

Heal the sick!

„Heal the sick!“ (Matthew 10,8);
 Then he called his twelve disciples together and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases. He sent them to preach the Kingdom of God and to heal the sick. (Luke 10, 1-2);
 „They will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.“ (Mark 16,18)

Raise the dead!

„Raise the dead!“ (Matthew 10,8)

6

Cast out demons!

„Cast out demons!“ (Matthew 10,8);
He gave them power and authority over all demons,
and to cure diseases. (Luke 9,1, Mark 6,7);
„In my name they will cast out demons.“ (Mark 16,17)

7

Be led by the Holy Spirit!

„Wait for the promise of the Father“ (Acts 1,4);
„But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you;
and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and
Samaria, and to the end of the earth.“ (Acts 1,8)

8

Be prepared for rejection and persecution!

„Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves [...] But beware
of men, for they will deliver you up to councils [...] And you will be hated
by all for my name's sake [...] When they persecute you in this city, flee
to another.“ (Matthew 10,16-17+22+23)

9

Make disciples of all the nations!

„Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in
the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching
them to observe all things that I have commanded you.“
(Matthew 28, 19-20);
„Go into all the world.“ (Mark 16,15);
„As the Father has sent me, I also send you.“ (John 20,21)

10



Training Unit 3

The condition for sending: The power of the Holy Spirit I

The first coming of the Holy Spirit into our lives

The ministry of sending is the most important ministry in order to reach the unreached.

John 20:21

Again, Jesus said, "Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, I am sending you."

John 17:18

As you sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world.

Summary of the 10 Commandments of sending:

1. Go into all the world
2. Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God and be my witnesses
3. Seek people of peace in each village and each city
4. When you find a person of peace, DON'T bring them back into the community of faith, but STAY with the person
5. Heal the sick
6. Raise the dead
7. Cast out evil spirits
8. Be led by the Holy Spirit
9. Be prepared for rejection and persecution
10. Make disciples of all ethnic groups

➔ The 10th commandment of sending requires more effort than all the other 9 together!

With his instructions for the sending the Lord clearly mentioned **two conditions** that need to be fulfilled before we can go and do the mission.

1. **We need to be filled with the Holy Spirit. We first need to receive the power of the Holy Spirit.**
2. **We need to pray for the harvest. We need to pray that the Lord would send harvest workers into his (ripe) harvest.**

When the Lord talks about our sending, he strongly emphasizes the most important equipment for the ministry of sending.

The most important equipment is the Holy Spirit, receiving the power of the Holy Spirit

John 20:21-22

*Again Jesus said, "Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, I am sending you."
And with that he breathed on them and said, "Receive the Holy Spirit."*

Luke 24:46-49

He told them, "This is what is written: The Messiah will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, and repentance for the forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. You are witnesses of these things. I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high."

In Acts, the Lord repeats the same thing concretely: we absolutely need the Holy Spirit and the power of the Holy Spirit. Without it we are not able to send out people (correctly). The last words the Lord said before he went into Heaven, were:

Acts 1:4+8

On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: "Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit." But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

We absolutely need the power of the Holy Spirit for the ministry of sending!

If we talk about the Holy Spirit in our lives, we need to distinguish two things:

1. The first time receiving the Holy Spirit at our conversion and our new birth
2. Regularly being filled with and the working of the Holy Spirit in the ministry of sending

Twice in the New Testament gentiles ask this question to the apostles: «What shall we do to be saved?»

Acts 16:30-33

He then brought them out and asked, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?" They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household." Then they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house. At that hour of the night the jailer took them and washed their wounds; then immediately he and all his household were baptized.

Acts 2:37-39

When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?" Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off—for all whom the Lord our God will call."

What shall we do to be saved?

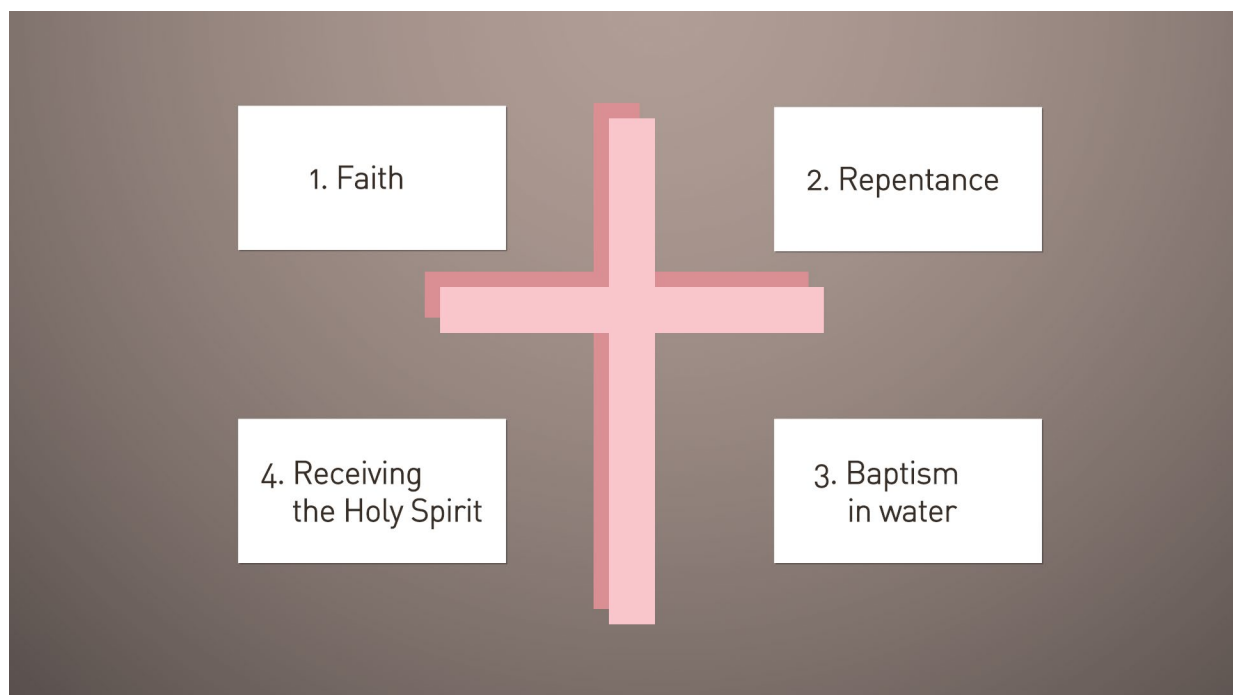
1. Believe in the Lord Jesus
2. Repent, as stated in Acts 3:19: "Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out"
3. Be baptized for the forgiveness of your sins
4. (If 1-3 are met) you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit

10 conversions in the book of Acts

The book of Acts only tells us about 10 conversions in total. It is interesting to study those, to see what the main characteristics of a biblical conversion are. Not all conversions are as exact described as the others.

Nr	Text	Description	Faith	Repentance	Baptism	Holy Spirit
1.	Acts 2:37-41	3000 people on Pentecost	X	X	X	X
2.	Acts 8:5-6+12+17	People in Samaria		X	X	X
3.	Acts 8:13	Simon, the sorcerer		X	X	
4.	Acts 8:35-38	The Ethiopian treasurer			X	
5.	Acts 9,17:18 / 22:16	Saul turns to Paul	X	X	X	X
6.	Acts 10:42-48	The first conversion of Gentiles	X	X	X	X
7.	Acts 16:14-15	Lydia	X	X	X	
8.	Acts 16:30-34	The prison guard		X	X	
9.	Acts 18:8	Crispus, head of the Synagogue		X	X	
10.	Acts 19:1-6	The disciples of John in Ephesus	X	X	X	X

A clear, healthy and biblical conversion contains



Everything that exists in the Kingdom of God and lasts before God, happens through faith. **By grace through faith** is the basic concept in the kingdom of God. Accordingly, this is the kingdom of God's concept for our salvation: **By grace through faith, that comes through hearing the word of God.**

By grace through faith

1. Normally, hearing the Word of God first results in faith in the sense of trusting Jesus as Saviour as well as faith in the sense of obedience to Jesus as the Lord and King in our hearts and lives.
2. Subsequently, from hearing the Word of God (!) and through the work of the Holy Spirit, a true conviction of our sinfulness occurs, as well as remorse and repentance (see John 16:8).
3. As soon as the first two parts of a biblical conversion (faith and repentance) happen internally in the heart, we express this in the outward event of baptism. What happens inside:
 1. **In faith that comes from hearing the Word of God**, the old man without Jesus dies. And the new man, who trusts Jesus as Saviour and follows him as Lord and King, stands up.
 2. **In true repentance**, that is a repentance, which occurred out of the Word of God and through the work of the Holy Spirit, the blood of Jesus Christ washes our sins away.

We are baptized because the Word of God says so, and we know and believe in our hearts that this is the will of God.

According to the "biblical order", the fourth and final step, the receiving of the Holy Spirit, usually comes after the completion of the first three steps as Jesus announced. There are exceptions, as described in Acts 10:44-48.

Ephesians 2:4-9

But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions—it is by grace you have been saved. And God raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly realms in Christ Jesus, in order that in the coming ages he might show the incomparable riches of his grace, expressed in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast.

By Grace:

- In the depths of His heart and being the heavenly Father is full of grace and love.
- Grace is a gift
- Grace is being favoured, without anything being expected in return.
- Grace is an undeserved blessing
- Grace means that the Father gladly surprises us by giving us undeserved goodness (forgiveness, reconciliation, the heavenly inheritance, etc.).
- Love is very similar, but emphasises that the Lord gives himself to us.

Everything that has to do with our salvation and rebirth happens through grace, as an undeserved gift and not as a reward or merit for neither good works nor good behaviour on our part.

Romans 3:24

and all are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus.

- Grace is not only the free gift of forgiveness and eternal life, but it becomes a dynamic force in us, an engine in following Christ.

Hebrews 12:28

Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful, and so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe,

2 Corinthians 12:9

But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore, I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me.

2 Corinthians 9:8

And God is able to bless you abundantly, so that in all things at all times, having all that you need, you will abound in every good work.

Titus 2:11-12

For the grace of God has appeared that offers salvation to all people. It teaches us to say "No" to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age,

1 Corinthians 15:10

But by the grace of God I am what I am, and his grace to me was not without effect. No, I worked harder than all of them—yet not I, but the grace of God that was with me.

This decision to be saved solely by grace and love happened before we were born, even before the world was created. It means in the word:

1 Peter 1:1-2

*who have been **chosen** according to **the foreknowledge of God the Father***

Romans 8:29-30

For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters. And those he predestined, he also called; those he called, he also justified; those he justified, he also glorified.

2 Peter 1:10

Therefore, my brothers and sisters, make every effort to confirm your calling and election.

5 steps

1. **Foreknowledge:** First, the Lord has known everything.
2. **Chosen:** And only after he has known everything and knows what is to come, he decides and determines in advance that we should belong to the favoured and gifted.
3. **Predestined:** He has determined that we should be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he may be the firstborn among many brethren. (Points 1-3 have already happened before the foundation of the world).
4. **Calling** to sonship and discipleship. This now really happens in our lives.
5. Confirm the **calling**

To faith	in	Jesus Christ (following him)
To fellowship	with	Jesus Christ (and the believers)
To service	for	Jesus Christ and his kingdom

By faith

- Because the heavenly Father is love and grace, he has sent and given us his Son as a present.
- With Him He has given us all the other treasures of the Kingdom of God. All treasures are hidden in Christ:
 - The gift of grace of forgiveness
 - The gift of grace of reconciliation
 - The gift of grace of the love of God

- The gift of grace of the grace of God
- The gift of grace of eternal life
- The gift of grace of sonship (sons and daughters of God)
- The gift of grace of the assurance of salvation
- The gift of grace of righteousness and holiness
- The gift of grace of full kingdom of God inheritance

All these treasures of the kingdom of God and all four decisive steps (faith, baptism, baptism in the water and in the Spirit) in our conversion/rebirth are not to be done mechanically as works, but through faith.

Faith is knowledge in our heart.

Hebrews 11:1

Now faith is confidence in what we hope for and assurance about what we do not see.

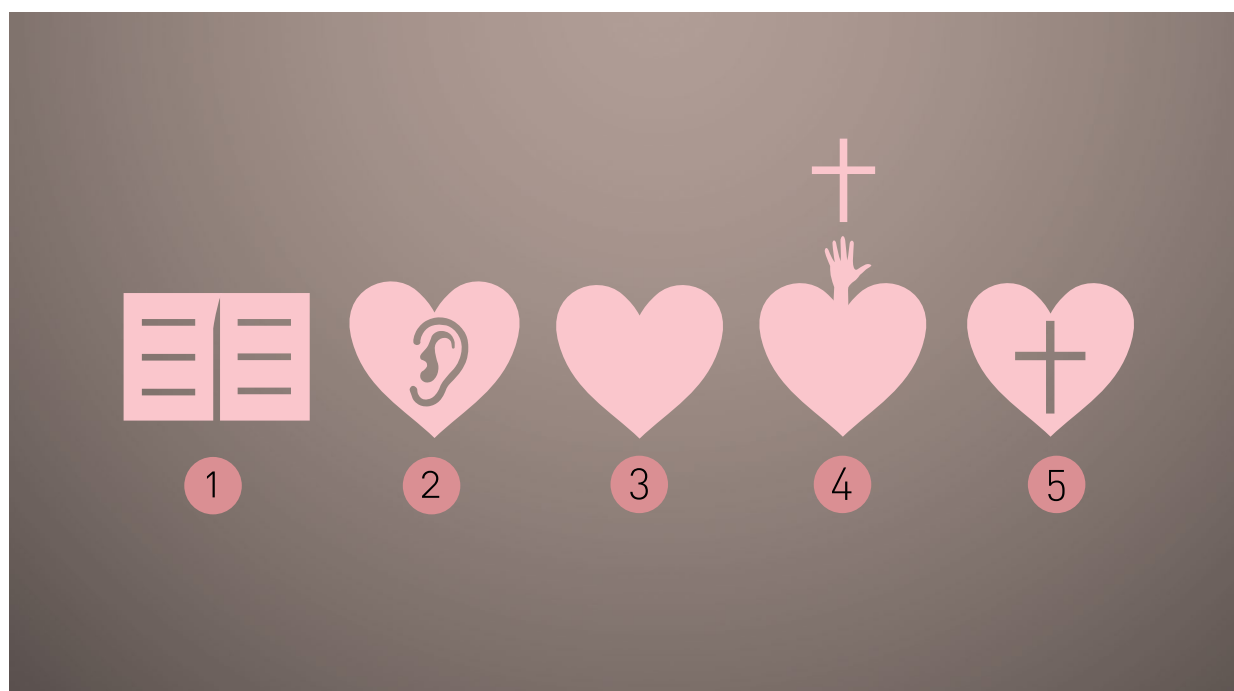
- This belief in salvation, this knowledge in the heart arises only through hearing and listening to the Word of God.

Romans 10:17

Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ.

The cycle of faith

1. God speaks.
2. We hear God speaking to us.
3. The Word of God creates faith in our hearts for the proclaimed promises. Knowing in our hearts, that is faith. Only the word of God has creating power, which creates faith. Faith is that certainty in the heart.
4. This faith in our hearts, created by the word of God, then grasps (trusts) these promises of God by faith.
5. Now the spoken words of God and the promises of God become reality in our lives, in our ministry.



Before we can go into the ministry of sending we have to...

Acts 1:4-5

On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: "Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. For John baptized with water, but in a few days, you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit."

Luke 24:49

I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high.

Acts 1:8

But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.

The receiving of the Holy Spirit, the gift of the Holy Spirit, is the fourth and final step of a biblical conversion (1st Faith, 2nd Repentance, 3rd Baptism in the Water, 4th "Baptism" or receiving of the Holy Spirit).

1. Faith

Trusting Jesus through faith as the Saviour and obeying him as Lord and King.

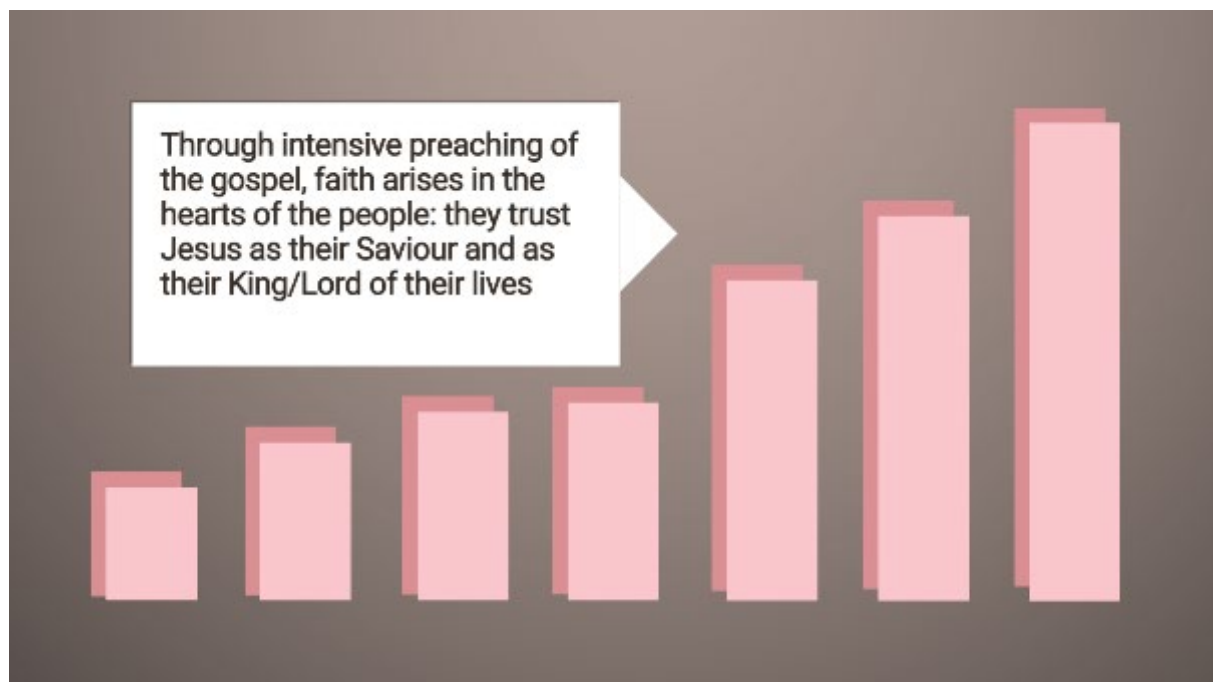
Through the proclamation of Jesus as the Saviour who forgives our sins and brings eternal life, certainty arises in our hearts – **we know in our hearts**. Faith and trust arise, that He died for us and is our Saviour. By proclaiming that Jesus is Lord and King of our lives, certainty arises in our hearts. Faith and trust occur that He is our Lord and we want to follow him in obedience to his Word. This saving faith then "grabs" Jesus as Saviour and Lord. He becomes reality as Saviour and Lord in our lives.

Galatians 2:20

I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I now live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

Acts 16:31

They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household."



The word Pistis (faith) in the original text of the New Testament means

- 1) **Trust** and
- 2) **Obedience**

- a) To trust Jesus, that He died on the cross for our sins, He now wants to come into our lives and save us from death
- b) Trust and obedient willingness, that Jesus – when he comes into our lives – can lead and reign in our lives

Believing in Jesus means trusting him as our Saviour, obeying and following Him as Lord and King. A biblical conversion is about answering a **double** call:

- 1) Once we follow the call to Jesus the savior through
 - ... we trust him, we believe in him.
 - ... we repent.
 - ... we get baptized.
 - ... we receive the gift of the Holy Spirit and become born again

But this is only the first part of a real biblical conversion. Now look to the second part.

- 2) The second part of the calling is the call to **follow** Jesus the Lord; to go to the lost with Jesus the Lord, **to be sent** by Jesus to preach the gospel of the kingdom of God.

Mark 3.14

He appointed twelve that they might be with him and that he might send them out to preach.

This is the first step and most important step in a healthy biblical conversion. The next three steps of repenting, baptism in the water, and the receiving of the Holy Spirit emerge from this first step.

If we truly trust Jesus, we also trust that He will forgive all our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness. Repentance out of faith is the second step in a healthy biblical conversion. If we really trust Jesus, we also trust him to forgive all our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

2. Repentance by faith

This second step of a biblical conversion also happens by grace through faith. This means that, through preaching about sin, repentance and lostness, certainty arises in our hearts. Faith and trust that we:

- a) are lost in our sins and
- b) need and get forgiveness through the blood of Jesus

1 John 1:7

(...) the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin

It is very important, that the process of repentance happens entirely out of faith. Only when our repentance is by faith and is heartfelt, and only when we trust Jesus as our Saviour, will our sins be washed away. They will be washed away by the blood of Jesus Christ the Son of God and we will receive forgiveness.

Repentance, the confession that we are sinners, and the confessing of sins can be done either by faith, from the heart or as a religious, traditional, mechanical “dead” ritual. Not every confession of sins is spiritually real. It then is simply a ritual without faith and relationship to Jesus to whom we faithfully turn in true repentance. It is repentance as a religious *work*.

The process of repentance includes at least three areas:

1. Recognizing, confessing and laying down our sins (*the* sin, unbelief and moral sins).
2. Deliverance from addictions and demonic ties. Deliverance is primarily happens in the process of repentance, not a baptismal exorcism, as it was done a few times in church history.
3. Forgiveness

Mathew 6:14-15

For if you forgive other people when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive others their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins.

Sin always has two aspects for every human being:

- A) The original sin
- B) The moral sins

The meaning of the original sin:

- that we did not love God with all our hearts, with all our souls and with all our strength.
- that we mistrusted him and did not open our hearts and our lives for him.
- that we lived without Him for so long.

Moral sins are the repeated breaking of the moral commandments of God. For example the 10 commandments. We should repent, if we truly know that we are sinners, through the working of the Spirit and the word of God in our hearts.

Acts 3:19

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out

To recognize in the heart that I am a sinner



John 16:8

When he comes, he will prove the world to be in the wrong about sin and righteousness and judgment

Confession with the mouth



1 John 1:8-9

If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

Turn to God and become a disciple



Acts 26:20

First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and then to the Gentiles, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and demonstrate their repentance by their deeds.

10 Detailed steps for repentance and forgiveness

1. Preaching sin, repentance and forgiveness from the Word of God.
2. Listening with open ears and hearts.
3. There is faith (knowledge in the heart) that we are sinners, need forgiveness, and that there is forgiveness in Jesus. Recognition of sinfulness and lostness.
4. Confess sins and bonds before God, possibly with witnesses.
5. Stop practicing the sins.
6. Where necessary, break and acquit from sins and bonds.
7. Where necessary, forgive others.
8. Where necessary do reparation.
9. Renew your mind. Replace old lies with new truth.
10. Planning and setting out to practice a new life style in which Jesus is the Lord. (Teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you).

Acts 2:38

Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

Acts 3:19

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out.

Heart mirror

The Greatest Commandment (Matthew 22:38) and the 10 Commandments (Exodus 20:1-17) serve as a mirror to recognize our guilt. The greatest commandment is on the one hand source and origin, on the other hand a summary of the 10 commandments.

This heart mirror helps to identify sins in your life. Answer with “yes” or “no” or “bound”, if you feel that you are bound in this particular sin. Then ask other believers for prayer and deliverance.

1. The greatest commandment:

Mathew 22:36-40

Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbour as yourself. All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments.’

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Not love God and have no desire for fellowship with Him			
Not worrying about Him, having no interest			
Hardly thinking of him			
Indifference to his will			
Not maintaining a relationship with him			
Not worshiping him gratefully in awe and wonder			
Not acknowledging Him admiringly as almighty creator of the world			
To take myself and my needs and my own interests more seriously than those of the people with whom I live.			

2. Commandment: Thou shalt have no other gods beside me

Violation of these commandments are	Yes	No	bound
Idolatry Leviticus 19:4-1, 1 Cor. 6:9, Gal. 5:20, Rev. 21:8			
Made gods Leviticus 19:4			
Do fortune-telling Leviticus 19:26, 20:27			
Do magic, sorcery Leviticus 19:26, Gal. 5:20, Rev. 21:8			
Visit necromancers Leviticus 20:27			
Visit fortune tellers Leviticus 19:31, 20:6			
God-despiser, God-hater Rom. 1:30			
Pride Rom. 1:30, 2 Tim 3:2			
Unbelief Rev. 21:8			
Further examples			
Possessions, people, books, hobbies, work			
Other religions, sects			
Esoteric			
Occultism, superstition, cursing, hypnosis, astrology			
Worshipping Saints and Mary			
Compulsions, drugs			

3. Commandment: Thou shalt not abuse the name of Yahweh, thy God

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Do not swear falsely Leviticus 19:12			
Blasphemy (make other people bad, abuse God's name)			
Further examples			
Swearing, cursing			
Abuse of the name of Jesus or God			
False religiosity			
healing formulas			
Make empty words			
Tradition instead of living faith, rejection of certainty of salvation			

4. Commandment: Remember the Sabbath that you are sanctifying him

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Keeping the sabbaths Leviticus 19:3-10			
Further examples			
Workaholic			
Idol of having to perform			
Constant restlessness			
"No time"			

5. Commandment: You are to honour your father and mother

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Do not respect the elderly Leviticus 19: 32			
Cursing Father or mother Leviticus 20:9			
Disobey the parents Rom. 1:30; 2 Tim. 3:2			
Further examples			
Rejection			
Hate			
Contempt			
No Forgiveness			
Wrong dependence			
Immature relationship to parents			

6. Commandment: You shall not kill

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
To sacrifice children Leviticus 18:21; 20:1			
Do not defraud your neighbour Leviticus 19:13			
Do not do what endangers your neighbour's life Leviticus 19:16			
Hate Leviticus 19:17			
Revenge Leviticus 19:18			
Anger, bear a grudge Leviticus 19:18			
Do not cut your bodies Leviticus 19:28, 1 King 18:28			
Tattoo Leviticus 19:28			
Do not mistreat foreigners Leviticus 19:33			
Injustice Rom. 1:29, 1 Cor. 5:9			
Wickedness Romans 1:29			
Murder Matt. 15:19, Rom. 1:29, Rev. 21:8			
Dispute Rom. 1:29, Gal. 5:20			
Wickedness, infamy Rom. 1:29			
Wicked, violent offenders Rom. 1:30, Rev. 21:8			
Inventive in evil Rom. 1:30			
Faithlessness (do not comply with a treaty) Rom. 1:31			
Unkindness Rom. 1:31, 2 Tim. 3:3			
Ruthlessness Rom. 1:31			
Enmity Gal. 5:20			
Outbursts of anger Gal. 5:20			
Discord, strife Gal. 5:20			
Causing division (having a different opinion on purpose) Gal. 5:20			
Ingratitude 2 Tim. 3:2			
Unforgiving 2 Tim. 3:3			
Wild, cruel 2 Tim. 3:3			
Enemy of the good (incapable of any self-denial) 2 Tim. 3:3			
Further examples			
Murder in thought, word and deed			
Prejudices, enemy images			
Racism			
Abortion			
Suicidal thoughts			
Self-rejection			

7. Commandment: Thou shalt not commit adultery

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Incest Leviticus 18:6; 20:11			
Adultery Leviticus 18:20, 20:10; Matt. 15:19; 1 Cor. 6:9			
Homosexuality Leviticus 18:22; 20:13; Rom. 1:26			
Sodomy Leviticus 18:23; 20:15			
Making prostitutes Leviticus 19:29			
Fornication Matt. 15:19; 1 Cor. 6:9; Gal. 5:19; Rev. 21:8			
Fornication with boys 1 Cor. 6:9			
Impurity Gal. 5:19			
Debauchery Gal. 5:19			
Lust of the eyes Matt. 5:28			
Further examples			
Fornication			
Impure thoughts			
Inward desire of another partner			
Divorce thoughts			
Pornography			
Masturbation: sexuality without a partner (self-related sexuality)			
Petting			
Masochism, sadism			
Perverse sexuality			

8. Commandment: You shall not steal

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Theft Leviticus 19:11; Matt. 15:19; 1 Cor. 6:10			
Fraud Leviticus 19:11			
Robbery Leviticus 19:13; 1 Cor. 6:10			
Further examples			
Theft of money and natural resources			
Things in the workplace			
Kleptomania			
Stealing time from people			
Gaining inheritance through dishonest means			
Tax evasion			
Not giving back excessively received money			
Keep borrowed money			

9. Commandment: Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Lying Leviticus 19:11; Rev. 21:8			
Injustice in the court Leviticus 19:15			
Slander Leviticus 19:16			
Ruse Rom. 1:29			
Defamers (thoughtlessly spreading things about others) Rom. 1:30			
Boastful (boasting words) Rom. 1:30; 2 Tim. 3:2			
Unreasonable (without insight) Rom. 1:31			
False testimony Matt. 15:19			
Blasphemy (against someone) Matt. 15:19, 2 Tim. 3:2			
Defamers (accuse and divide in bad intention) 2 Tim 3:3			
Traitor 2 Tim 3:4			
Being careless (acting hastily) 2 Tim. 3:4			
Swollen with conceit (thinking you are better than others and God) 2 Tim. 3:4			
Silly talk Eph. 5:4			
Joking (talking neg. about someone) Eph. 5:4			
Further examples			
Slandering people			
Not telling the whole truth			
Exaggerating, craving for admiration			
Negative talk about oneself			

10. Commandment: You should not covet

Violation of this commandment is	Yes	No	bound
Greed Rom. 1:29; 1 Cor. 6:10			
Envy Rom. 1:29; Gal. 5:21			
Catamite (wealth which softens) 1. Cor. 6:9			
Drunkard 1. Cor. 6:10			
Debauchery Gal. 5:19			
Jealousy Gal. 5:20			
Selfish (inclination to corruption) Gal. 5:20			
Drinking Gal. 5:21			
Gluttony Gal. 5:21			
Selfishness (loving yourself) 2 Tim. 3:2			
Greedy, money-loving 2 Tim. 3:2			
Godless, unholy 2 Tim 3:2			
Disorderly 2 Tim. 3:3			
Passion (desire) Col. 3:5			
Further examples			
Ambition			
Materialism			
Always comparing			
Lust oriented life			

3. Baptism in water by grace through faith

Baptism is a **simultaneous, external** expression (we dip into the water) of what is happening inwardly.

- Inwardly we lay the old man, who is lost, separated from God, burdened with sins and dominated by his own ego "to the grave" and stand up to a new life in which Jesus is our Saviour and Lord.
- Inwardly, we are washed clean by the blood of Jesus from all our sins.

This twofold inner event is expressed and accomplished externally through baptism. It is not that baptismal water has the spiritual power (sacramental) and works spiritually. It is the faith in the heart that grasps and receives salvation. Both, the inner reception in faith and the expression of water baptism, happen almost simultaneously. The so called infant baptism practiced by the major churches (Catholic Church, Orthodox Church, Reformed Church, Angelical Church) is in a biblical sense something like a blessing, but not a biblical baptism. The inner happenings (receive Jesus by faith and repentance by faith) do not take place, but only the external events with water. Many free churches follow the practice to separate the external events of baptism in the water from the internal event of receiving Christ as Saviour and Lord. They make a decision for Christ and repent, the actual baptism then follows months later. This does not follow the biblical pattern either. What God has put together, man should not separate. The practice of linking deliverance (baptismal exorcism) to baptism, because one thinks that baptism has some sort of sacramental power does not correspond to the biblical model as well.

Like all other steps of conversion, baptism in water should also be done by grace through faith. Through the clear proclamation of the baptismal command of Jesus in Matthew 28:19 (baptizing them in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit) and the spiritual significance of baptism, faith arises in the heart. This means, we know in our hearts, that we want to be baptized. The biblical model is to baptize by faith immediately after faith and repentance.

Acts 2:38-39

Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off—for all whom the Lord our God will call."



Faith, repentance and water baptism are conditions to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit!

But when all that happened, being assured by the promises of the word of God, we believe that we will receive the full gift of the Holy Spirit. Receiving the Holy Spirit is a matter of faith and trust, that Jesus will send the Holy Spirit as He promised - if we meet the requirements.

4. Receiving the Holy Spirit by grace through faith

When the first three steps of a biblical conversion (faith, repentance, baptism) have taken place, the conditions are met to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit **through** faith.

Acts 2:38-39

Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off—for all whom the Lord our God will call."

As I said, this fourth step of a biblical conversion is also done by grace through faith.

- This means that through the proclamation of the Holy Spirit and the receiving of the Holy Spirit, certainty arises in our hearts, faith and trust, that we
 - a) "have the right" to receive the Holy Spirit
 - b) and that we can now receive the Holy Spirit **through faith**.
- The one who baptizes with the Holy Spirit is Jesus, and so we should turn to Jesus (and the Father) **with faith** to **now** give us the permanent gift of the Holy Spirit.

Towards the end of his time on the earth Jesus spoke about the following...

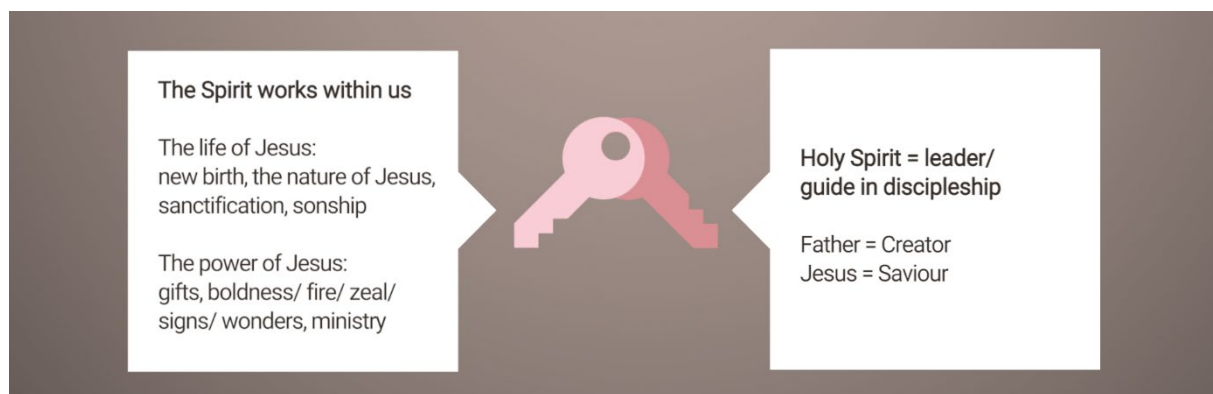
- ...that he will return to the Father
- ...but he won't leave us behind as orphans
- ...instead the Father and Jesus will send us the Holy Spirit
- ...and the Holy Spirit will remain in us (sealed within us)

John 14:16-18

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another advocate to help you and be with you forever, the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you. I will not leave you as orphans; I will come to you.

When the Holy Spirit comes to us, two key things will happen:

- A) He will bring the life and power of Jesus into our lives**
- B) He will lead and help us in following Jesus.**



The receiving of the gift of the Holy Spirit is an absolute crucial part of the conversion and the new birth!

- Acts 1:4-5 You will be **baptized with** the Holy Spirit
- Acts 1:8 You will **receive power** from on high and will be my witnesses
- Acts 2:4 And they were all **filled** with the Holy Spirit
- Acts 2:17-18 I will **pour out** my Spirit (2x)
- Acts 2:38 you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit
- Acts 8:15-17 that they want to receive the Holy Spirit...he had not yet been poured out on anyone among them...and they received the Holy Spirit!
- Acts 8:18 that **by the laying on of** the apostle's **hands** the Holy Spirit was **given**
- Acts 9:17 that you may see again and would be **filled** with the Holy Spirit
- Acts 10:44-48 the Holy Spirit **came on all**...the gift of the Holy Spirit had been **poured out**...those who **received** the Holy Spirit like us?

Summary: the terms for the first coming of the Holy Spirit

- Baptism with the Spirit
- Receiving (of the power) of the Spirit
- Pouring out of the Spirit
- Spirit coming on people

All these terms describe the exact same experience. Only the observation and the description happen from different perspectives. In 10 of the mentioned conversions in the book of Acts the following is being described – they:

- believed
 - repented and turned to God
 - were baptized
 - and what kind of different experiences they made when the Holy Spirit entered their life for the first time:
- Acts 2:4 and they started to speak in foreign languages
 - Acts 2:11 we hear them declaring the wonders of God in our own languages!
 - Acts 9:17-20 immediately he preached in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of God.
 - Acts 10:44-46 they heard them speaking in other languages and lifting up God
 - Acts 19:1-6 and they spoke in tongues and prophesied.
 - Gal 4:6 God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, who cries out: “Abba, father!”

Task: Receiving the Holy Spirit

Before you pray to receive the Holy Spirit, ask the Lord for help to prove your heart:

Make sure that **faith** in Jesus and **faith** to receive the Holy Spirit are in your heart.

Test your heart to see...

- A) If there is still sin left and if repentance must happen – if YES, take your time to repent. You can take a look at the following verses as a guidance and ask the Lord if repentance must take place.

Matthew 22:37-38

Jesus replied: "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment."

John 16:8-9

When he comes, he will prove the world to be in the wrong about sin and righteousness and judgment, because people do not believe in me.

Exodus 20:1-20

God spoke these words:

- 1) *"I am the Lord your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery. You shall have no other gods before me."*
- 2) *"You shall not make for yourself an image in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the parents to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments."*
- 3) *"You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God, for the Lord will not hold anyone guiltless who misuses his name."*
- 4) *"Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a sabbath to the Lord your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your male or female servant, nor your animals, nor any foreigner residing in your towns. For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy."*
- 5) *"Honor your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the Lord your God is giving you."*
- 6) *"You shall not murder."*
- 7) *"You shall not commit adultery."*
- 8) *"You shall not steal."*
- 9) *"You shall not give false testimony against your neighbor."*
- 10) *"You shall not covet your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his male or female servant, his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor."*

When the people saw the thunder and lightning and heard the trumpet and saw the mountain in smoke, they trembled with fear. They stayed at a distance and said to Moses, "Speak to us yourself and we will listen. But do not have God speak to us or we will die." Moses said to the people, "Do not be afraid. God has come to test you, so that the fear of God will be with you to keep you from sinning."

- B) Are you baptized? If not, be baptized before you ask to receive the Holy Spirit.

Conditions for receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit

1. Faith

- a) In Jesus: Trust, that he is the Saviour and Lord of all my life.
- b) For receiving the Holy Spirit: Faith is the crucial factor to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. Full of trust I hold on to the promise that I am a candidate for receiving all of the Holy Spirit and I believe the fact that Jesus keeps his promise to me, meaning that when Holy Spirit comes,
 - he will fill me and
 - he will let me overflow with the power of the Holy Spirit

2. Repentance

Understanding, confession, breaking with sin, practicing the ways of Jesus (turning around)

3. Baptism

The book of Acts clearly shows us that normally repentance, faith and water baptism lead to a unique and unmistakable reception of the Holy Spirit.

If faith in Jesus as Lord and Saviour comes from hearing healthy preaching over a certain period of time, then oftentimes repentance, water baptism and the receiving of the Holy Spirit will happen all in one 'moment'. The process of the 3 steps (**repentance, water baptism and the receiving of the Holy Spirit**) should not be interrupted by a sinner's prayer. In the New Testament there are no such things as sinner's prayers. In the New Testament conversion happened as soon as faith rose within the heart by these three steps.

4. Thirst

We need a longing, an inward desire.

Jesus says: "...whoever is thirsty, come to me ..."

- In the New Testament there are no sinner's prayers

5. Prayer including the laying on of hands

Additionally, sometimes special (on going) **prayer including the laying on of hands** are helpful and necessary to receive the Holy Spirit.

Example from Acts 19:

In this passage we read of how Paul meets 12 disciples of John who hadn't received the gift of the Holy Spirit, even though they had already believed and repented. Paul baptized them and laid hands on them and they started to pray in tongues.

Paul completed the conversion/new birth

- A) First, baptized them "the right way" in water in the name of Jesus Christ
- B) Then laid hands on them and they received the Spirit

Acts 19:1-7

While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul took the road through the interior and arrived at Ephesus. There he found some disciples and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?" They answered, "No, we have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." So Paul asked, "Then what baptism did you receive?" "John's baptism," they replied. Paul said, "John's baptism was a baptism of repentance. He told the people to believe in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus." On hearing this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied. There were about twelve men in all.

- Jesus is the one who baptizes with the Holy Spirit... nobody else
- Everyone who wants to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit has to look to Jesus and trust that he freely gives the gift of the Holy Spirit
- As a support of this process we can lay hands on people
- Pray in great faith for the gift of the Holy Spirit

Luke 11:10-13

"For everyone who asks receives; the one who seeks finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

Matthew 7:9-11

"Which of you, if your son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!"

Example: A set table

The author of this manual, Florian was a child, he got up in the morning and realized that he was alone at home. He was really hungry and it was time for breakfast. So he went into the kitchen and there he saw a table generously set with a lot of sweets, milk, bread, butter and cheese – but he thought that can't be for him, it must be for a guest. Even though he was starving, he only smelled the food but didn't eat from the table.

Florian sat down in front of their home and started to cry because he was so hungry. A lady approached him and asked him why he was crying. Florian responded that he was starving but had nothing to eat. The lady had compassion on him and gave him three thin slices of meat. So, he kept waiting for hours in front of the house. When his mother finally arrived, she asked him why he was crying so terribly. He replied that he was starving, which totally astonished her because she had prepared an extra generous breakfast for him alone.

So Florian saw this set table – and yet took nothing because he thought it couldn't possibly be for him! Is this not the way we sometimes deal with the Holy Spirit? The Lord wants to give us the fullness of the Holy Spirit! We must receive these gifts and not only "smell" without taking them.

Task: Receive the Holy Spirit

- a) As a group, come before Jesus and ask him to give you the gift of the Holy Spirit.
- b) Pray for one another (laying on hands). Those among you who have already received the Holy Spirit, pray for those who haven't yet.
- c) After a while, practice overflowing with the Spirit (if you've received) by taking a community time to:
 - Praise God and his mighty works
 - Speak in tongues together
 - Call God, our Father in Heaven, lovingly "Abba Father"
 - Listen, to see or to receive - meaning to receive prophetic words and then declare them
 - Practice the fifth sign of overflowing with the Holy Spirit – the joyful and spontaneous witnessing that Jesus is Christ the Messiah
 - The overflow of the Holy Spirit doesn't really work practically "inside a room", but we need to "go out" to the unreached!

Notes:



Training Unit 4

The conditions for sending: The power of the Holy Spirit II

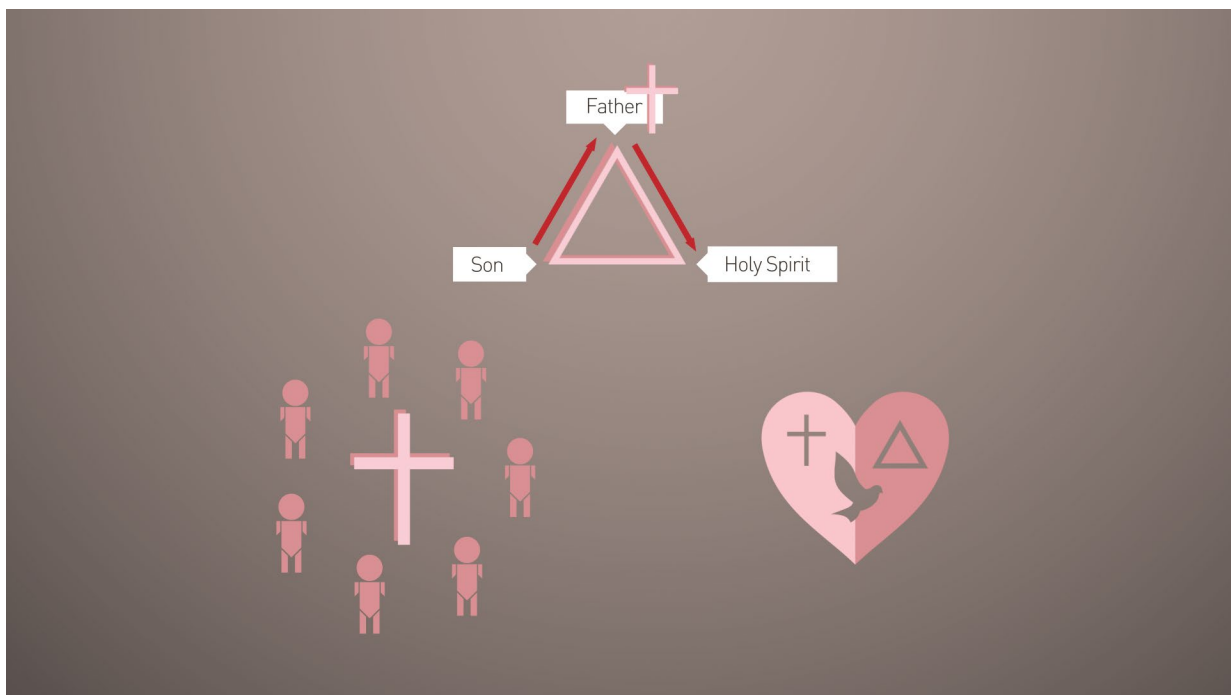
In the last training unit, we saw that four steps are required for a genuine biblical conversion:

1. Faith
2. Repentance
3. Water baptism
 - If these conditions are met, we can trust that...
4. ...we will receive the Holy Spirit, if I ask God in faith
 - As soon as faith is in the heart, the further three steps can happen together:

When the Holy Spirit comes into our life, he does not come calmly or unnoticed, but very specific experiences occur:

- A) Speaking in other tongues
- B) Lifting and praising of God and his great works
- C) Preaching that Jesus is the Son of God
- C) Prophecy
- D) Crying out in the heart: Abba, Father!

The exchange of persons



Jesus spent three years of ministry together with his disciples. After His death on the cross and His resurrection Jesus returned to the Father. The Father and the Son sent the Holy Spirit that He would be within us, remain with us and be sealed with us. He will both help us in following Christ and in the ministry of sending. When the Holy Spirit comes, he brings Jesus into our heart in a spiritual form. Even the father comes, to make home in our heart. Together with the Holy Spirit the whole triune God comes into our heart.

Anyone who loves me will obey my teaching. My father will love them, and we will come to them and make our home with them. (John 14:23)

The three levels of the coming of the Holy Spirit

1. Coming of the Holy Spirit

Galatians 4:6

Because you are his sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

Ezekiel 36:26-27

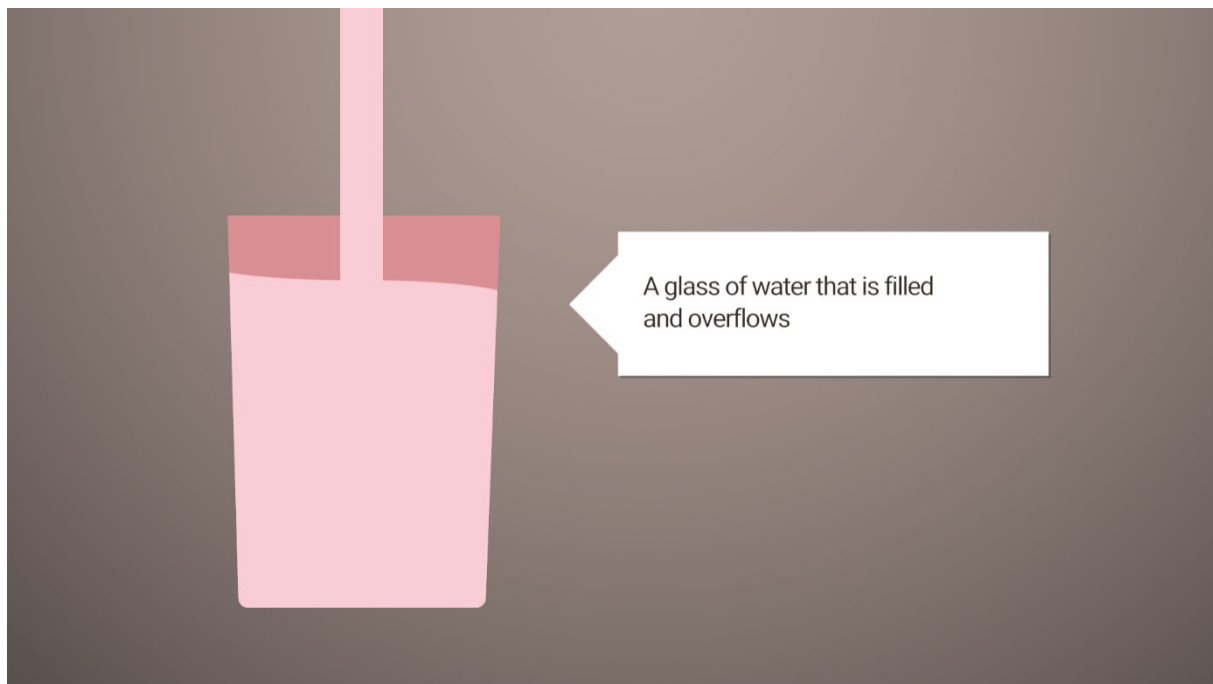
I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit in you; I will remove from you your heart of stone and give you a heart of flesh. And I will put my Spirit in you and move you to follow my decrees and be careful to keep my laws.

1. Being filled with the Holy Spirit

- The Holy Spirit takes as much space as we offer him!
- The question for born-again believers is not, "how much Holy Spirit can we have?" (we have him fully!), "but how much does he has of us?"

Example of the dirty glass

Firstly, you need to pour out the dirty water, then rinse and clean the glass. Finally, the glass is filled with fresh water. Water is a symbol for the Holy Spirit. Water doesn't only come to just fill the glass but to fill it until it eventually overflows!



Ephesians 5:18-20

Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit. Sing and make music from your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Example: Comparison to an alcoholic

Alcoholics have the constant desire to drink alcohol. In the morning, at lunch, in the evening until they lose consciousness and fall asleep. Alcohol influences their whole mindset.

- Paul uses that illustration; We are not supposed to be alcoholics – but we should be “Holy Ghost alcoholics”! We are supposed to keep reaching out for more and more of the Holy Spirit.

2. Filling**John 7:37-39**

On the last and greatest day of the festival, Jesus stood and said in a loud voice, “Let anyone who is thirsty come to me and drink. Whoever believes in me, as Scripture has said, rivers of living water will flow from within them.” By this he meant the Spirit, whom those who believed in him were later to receive. Up to that time the Spirit had not been given, since Jesus had not yet been glorified.

John 4:14

But whoever drinks the water I give them will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give them will become in them a spring of water welling up to eternal life.”

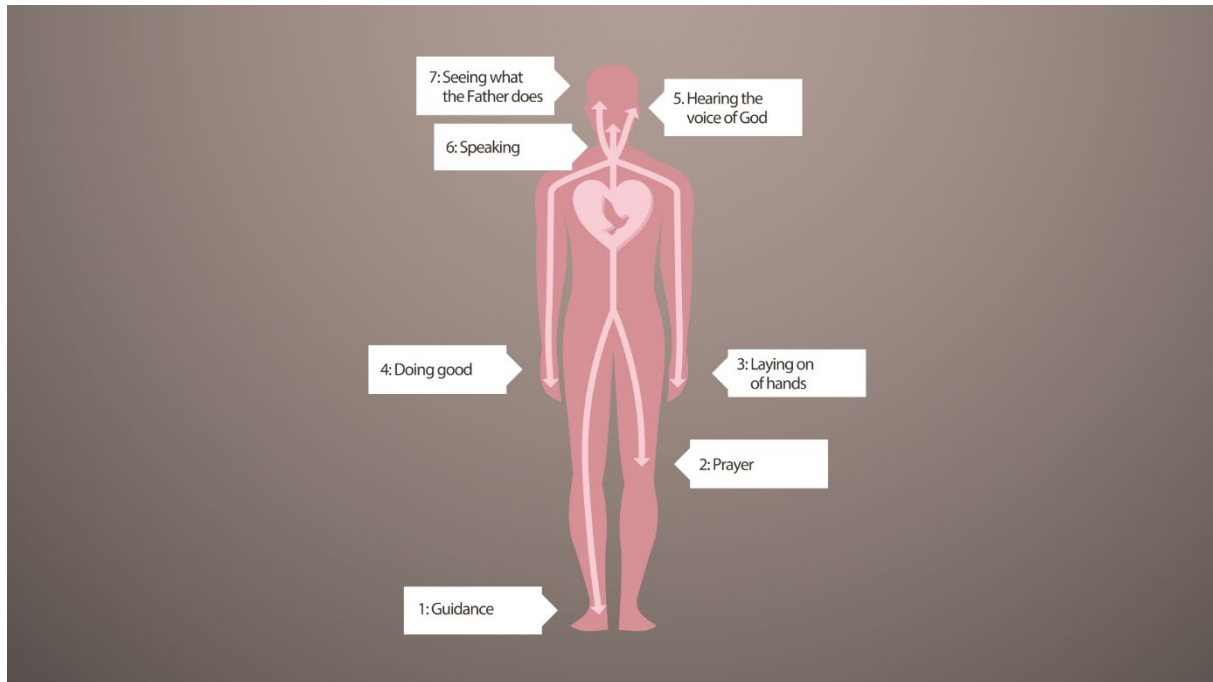
- Powerful illustration for The Holy Spirit
- We “drink” the Holy Spirit – this living water - and it becomes the spring within us
- From our body, from that source, streams of living water flow

So we can measure the Spirit – how much Holy Spirit flows from us to other people?



3. Overflow

He brings eternal life and the power of Jesus into our life/heart



1. Being filled with the Holy Spirit means:

- A) The growing of the fruits of the Spirit **IN** us and the transforming move of the Spirit **ON** us
- B) The impact of the gifts and generally the impact of the Spirit **THROUGH** us

Galatians 5:22-23

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, forbearance, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law.

1 Corinthians 12:7-10

Now to each one the manifestation of the Spirit is given for the common good. To one there is given through the Spirit a message of wisdom, to another a message of knowledge by means of the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healing by that one Spirit, to another miraculous powers, to another prophecy, to another distinguishing between spirits, to another speaking in different kinds of tongues,¹ and to still another the interpretation of tongues.

The Spirit wants to overflow within us to move through us into the world

“The seven-fold overflow of the Holy Spirit“ for anyone that is ready to be sent:

1. Guidance

John 16:13-14

But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come. He will glorify me because it is from me that he will receive what he will make known to you.

Acts 8:26+29

Now an angel of the Lord said to Philip, “Go south to the road—the desert road—that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza.” The Spirit told Philip, “Go to that chariot and stay near it.”

Example: Andy and Matthew find a man of peace

Andy and Matthew went to the city and asked God where they could preach the Gospel. The Holy Spirit led them to a house and they took pictures of the name tags of the inhabitants. With the picture's help they prayed regularly for these people. 1.5 months later, Andy and Matthew met a man from another city who was very open for the Gospel. The man asked, if they could come to his house and share the Gospel with his wife and his kids to teach them the same! When they asked him for his address, he gave them the exact same address Andy & Matthew had been praying for 1.5 months. They showed him the photo with the names and told him they had been praying for them for a while now. Max (this man) was so deeply touched by the fact that God himself had sent him the good news, that he burst into tears.

2. Prayer

Ephesians 3:14

For this reason I kneel before the Father,

Colossians 4:2-3

Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful. And pray for us, too, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains.

Example: Prayer for the harvest

We prayed intensively together for the harvest with the help of an unfolded map. Then God spoke: “20 km, measured from your doorstep, there is a village that starts with the letter “R”. You will go into that village. 20 km from our house there was a village called “Reinach”. So we went there, and it was unbelievable how the harvest was prepared – people were really open and we could immediately start a community of faith.

3. Laying on of hands, to receive the Holy Spirit and healing

Acts 19:6

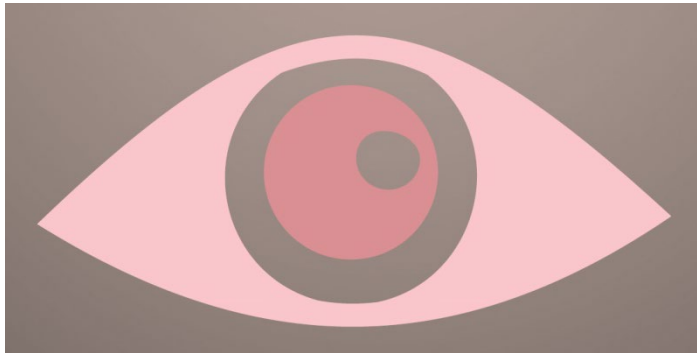
When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied.

Acts 28:8

His father was sick in bed, suffering from fever and dysentery. Paul went in to see him and, after prayer, placed his hands on him and healed him.

Example: Laying on of hands on a boy with an eye disease

This child suffered from an incurable disease (until today, there is no proven healing of this disease apart from the following, neither through medical treatment nor through prayer). So they laid hands on him and prayed. The next day, his mum came back and told the story: She went to the doctor this morning he checked the boy and said that in **65 years** he had never seen such a healing! He stated that he would spend all his money to fly in all kids with that disease to let people lay hands on and pray for them, so they would all be healed – like this boy!

**4. Doing good****Matthew 5:16**

In the same way, let your light shine before others, that they may see your good deeds and glorify your Father in heaven.

Example: Trainee from Nepal – Bhakta

Bhakta was really excited about the discipleship training and began to share the Gospel. One time, when the disciples were gathered together praising God, a terrible earthquake happened and destroyed many homes – but these trainees were not hurt because they were praising God outside, not at home. Immediately, Bhakta started to help people rebuilding the destroyed homes from the people of the village. He didn't only help believers but also non-believers and did them a lot of good. Then a woman came to him and asked for prayer, he laid hands on her and she was healed, baptized and became a follower of Christ.

5. Talking from inspiration**Luke 12:12**

For the Holy Spirit will teach you at that time what you should say.

Matthew 10:20

For it will not be you speaking, but the Spirit of your Father speaking through you.

Example: Talking from inspiration

Florian the author had prepared to speak in front of 2'300 youth approximately. When he went to the event, he saw a white piece of paper with a really powerful sermon in a vision. The Holy Spirit instructed him to skip the words he had prepared and to only preach exactly what he had seen on the piece of paper in the vision. So Florian, word for word, copied the words from the vision and wrote it on a piece of paper. The message he gave that night was so incredibly anointed that in the end, almost all the young people were on their knees repenting and turning to God.

- The Holy Spirit wants to speak/flow through us and touch other people's hearts.

6. Listening to the voice of the shepherd

John 10:27

My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me.

John 10:16

I have other sheep that are not of this sheep pen. I must bring them also. They too will listen to my voice, and there shall be one flock and one shepherd.

Example: God's voice heard very clearly

The author Florian and his wife Anni had fasted for three weeks. After these three weeks Florian went for a prayer walk and suddenly heard the voice of God very clearly that said he should quit his job and move somewhere else to build the Kingdom of God there – which eventually turned into a movement.

7. Seeing what the Father does

John 5:19

Jesus gave them this answer: "Very truly I tell you, the Son can do nothing by himself; he can do only what he sees his Father doing, because whatever the Father does the Son also does."

Example: Trainee Mahesh

This trainee went into an isolated region with his family after God had shown him in a vision. He built a house there, then the Lord supernaturally revealed him different people's faces, their stories and secrets.

So, he went into the village, where he met these men that he had seen in the vision. He told them everything the Lord had shown him about them and they immediately repented, wanted to be baptized and each of one of them started a community of faith.

Task: spiritual life/spiritual ministry

- Examine your spiritual life and your ministry. Examine whether you have experienced breakthrough in the 7 named areas and where you still need more breakthrough.
- Ask the Lord in a prayer of faith that he would release his Spirit into the areas which are still blocked.
- Then take **specific** steps of faith in the areas you had hardly any or no breakthrough.
- Take a powerful time of worship and with that, pray to be completely filled with the Holy Spirit... "(...) instead be filled with the Spirit by speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit. Sing and make music from your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Ephesians 5:19-20)

Notes:



Training Unit 4b

Sending team

In the first four training sessions, we have looked at the following areas so far:

- Introduction to the ministry of sending.
- Jesus as the messenger of the Father, is the model for all areas in the ministry of sending.
- The "Ten Commandments of Sending" as a summary of the sending instructions of Jesus.
- Being filled with the Holy Spirit as the primary requirement for the ministry of sending.

Before dealing with the harvest prayer and before going and preaching, there is an important aspect of the ministry of sending. The ministry of sending is never done by a single person in the New Testament, but by a team.

The model of Jesus

How did Jesus live out the ministry of sending as a team? He left his home, heaven, and went (came) to the lost on earth. He called twelve men with two goals:

Luke 6:13

When morning came, he called his disciples to him and chose twelve of them, whom he also designated apostles:

Jesus called the twelve disciples, in a **discipleship community**, but also in his **sending team**, that is his team of apostles. The 12 Apostles were the spiritual community for Jesus but also the team of Jesus (13 people), which he had to train first, before he could send them two by two to do "outreach".

Teams in the ministry of Peter and Paul

The book of Acts describes how the apostles worked in teams. Peter and John went to Samaria together.

Acts 8:14

When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to Samaria.

Another example in Peter's ministry of sending with a team: He went to Cornelius with a few brothers.

Acts 10:23

Then Peter invited the men into the house to be his guests. The next day Peter started out with them, and some of the believers from Joppa went along.

Also in Paul's ministry, the pattern of the team is obvious. He worked on the first trip with Barnabas and John Mark. On his second trip he called Silas, Luke, Timothy and possibly Titus into his team. The pattern in the New Testament is therefore clear: Sent ones (apostles) are never alone in the New Testament, but at least as a couple or working together as a larger team.

Form a Team

If we want to do the ministry of sending intensely and long term, we have to put together or call and form a sending team at this point in time. How did Jesus do that? He prayed one night for his disciples to hear from the Father whom he should call.

Luke 6:12-13

One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God. When morning came, he called his disciples to him and chose twelve of them, whom he also designated apostles:

Therefore, we should pray for our future team members too and then call them. Jesus called his disciples to be with him and later to send them out. The group of disciples called by Jesus were also Apostles (sent ones). They formed both at the same time: a spiritual family (community of faith) of disciples and a sending team. In the same way as Jesus clearly called his disciples, we should also clearly call our team members.

When calling people to a sending team, there are several criteria that should be considered. Of course, we want people in the team who are suitable for a sending team and have appropriate gifting. They should have the same calling and the same vision. But these are all heart criteria that only God can show. At the same time it is important to call people who have a good character and live a morally clean life.

Calling practically

The call to a sending team is a radical spiritual act. When you call, you should clearly clarify to what purpose you call them. It must be easy to understand what the team's goal and vision is, how the team lives out their spiritual life, and how they live out the ministry of sending practically.

- It may be, that you only have insufficiently capable or immature people. It could also be that nobody lets themselves be called. If this is the case, you have to train some people first, before you can call them and work together as a team.
- Are there no people you can call or first train and then call? If so, you will have to lead people to Jesus, train them and then call them. Then you will be able to work as a team.
- Jesus was also alone in the beginning and had to train his disciples first, before he could call them. When Paul arrived in Corinth (Acts 18) he was temporarily without a team. So, he worked with Priscilla and Aquila as a tent maker. He probably led them to faith in Jesus first, trained them and made them team members of his team.

Basics about the forming and functions of a sending teams

20 points are listed here, which should first be clarified in the process of forming a team.

1. Team functions and team role models for a sending team

- The sending team is the spiritual home (community of faith) for the sent ones. Next to the fellowship (koinonia) that happens there the team is spiritually nurtured, mutually support & sharpen each other. Spiritual growth occurs.
- The sending team is one of the most important and effective tools in order to do the ministry of sending, long term, effectively and in a healthy manner.
- Sending teams can do two main steps at the same time:
 - Train and bring forth other teams by which a movement of sending teams starts.
 - At the same time the team is doing the ministry of sending (making disciples, who make disciples, who make disciples...)
- The sending teams are also spiritual communities, communities of faith. That's why each mission team is modelling the forthcoming communities of faith, which we will start with our future disciples. A group wins a group.
- A team needs role models for orientation as well as basic values and heart values of the Kingdom of God on which a healthy team life is based.
 - The trinity (Father, Son, Holy Spirit)
 - Marriage (husband & wife)
 - Team of Jesus
 - The teams of Paul

2. Core values in a team

A team must find and live out its core values. This certainly includes values such as:

- Love one another
- Honour one another
- Consider the other higher than oneself
- Serve one another
- Compliment each other

3. The size of the team

Team members can be men and women, younger and older. The team usually sends teams of two by two into the outreach, but the team itself is bigger. It should, according to our experience, ideally contain 7 people and consist of at least three units. We understand a unit as a couple or a single person.

4. Giftings in the team

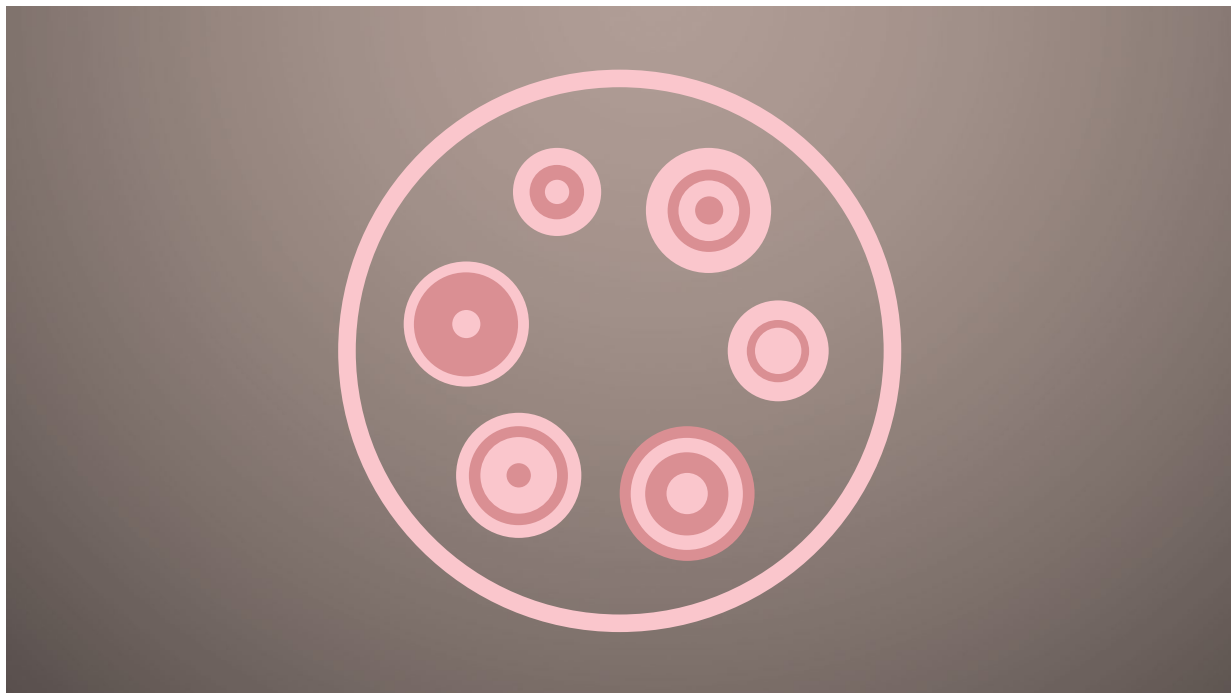
In Ephesians 4:11 the so-called fivefold ministry is described:

Ephesians 4:11

So, Christ himself gave the apostles, the prophets, the evangelists, the pastors and teachers, (...)

Team members in a sending team have different gifting profiles. It is important that the team members know who has which gifting and who works according to the given gifting. They then should complement each other. All team members have a first gifting, second gifting and possibly even third gifting. For Paul and Silas it might have been like this:

- | | | | |
|----------|------------|------------|---------------|
| • Paul: | 1. Apostle | 2. Teacher | 3. Evangelist |
| • Silas: | 1. Prophet | 2. Apostle | 3. Teacher |



As shown in the image, all team members can have a different first gifting (apostle, prophet, evangelist, shepherd, teacher). All team members ought to have an apostolic second or third gifting, otherwise they cannot stay in a sending team in the long run. Without having any apostolic gifting, our experience shows, that the sending ministry is very challenging. On the other side to ensure the team's clear focus, at least two people (men or women) should have the apostolic gifting as first gift.

In the ministry of sending, we will go through the five steps.



1. Requirement and preparation and training for the ministry of sending



2. Go to the unreached and the lost and bring them the gospel of the Kingdom of God (JESUS)



3. Stay with them, baptize and make disciples

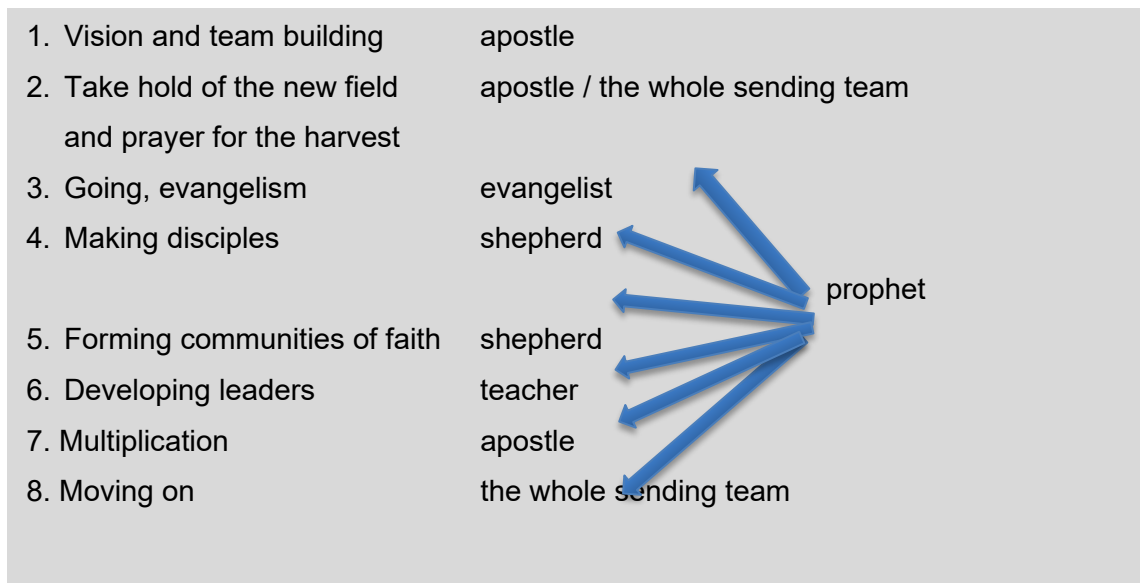


4. Form discipleship groups, spiritual families and communities of faith



5. Multiplication of the discipleship and the communities and starting of movements, so-called DMM (Disciple Multiplication Movements)

When passing through the 5 areas of the ministry of sending there are phases or intermediate sections with special emphasis. In the church planting cycle, there are 8 phases, which you go through as a sending team. As the illustration shows, all of the five giftings are involved in a different intensity in the different phases. In at least one of the sections, they are particularly important and fruitful. A good team operates according to their gifting. For example, in the phase of "making disciples", the team members with a stronger shepherd gifting take on the lead. The diagram also shows that prophetically gifted people are an exception here, as they can and should be involved in all phases.



5. Roles in the teams

In addition to the spiritual gifts in the team, there are various organizational and administrative roles, functions and tasks to be delegated in a team.

Team coordinator

He/she coordinates team life and service. That's the technical leadership of the team. This person does not manage everything, but leads the team in these areas.

Team communicator

He/she ensures that the communication in the team is guaranteed.

Peacemaker

He/she has the official mandate to stop conflicts. In conflict, he / she leads.

Team administrator

He/she takes care of the administrative tasks (finances, planning, organization) that arise in a team.

Team-counsellor

Who is strong in the transformational ministry? Who takes care of most of the 1-1 team discipleship?

Two special roles

Helper

Some teams have practical helpers in special areas. For example, some teams in Africa or Asia have a driver due to the size of the area. Other teams have someone to disciple the children of the team members. The helpers are not actual members of the core team, but are assigned to the team in a helper status.

Trainees

The team always has trainees on the team who will get trained by them. The trainees do not yet belong to the actual core team as full members but they are assigned a training status and are therefore associated to the core team.

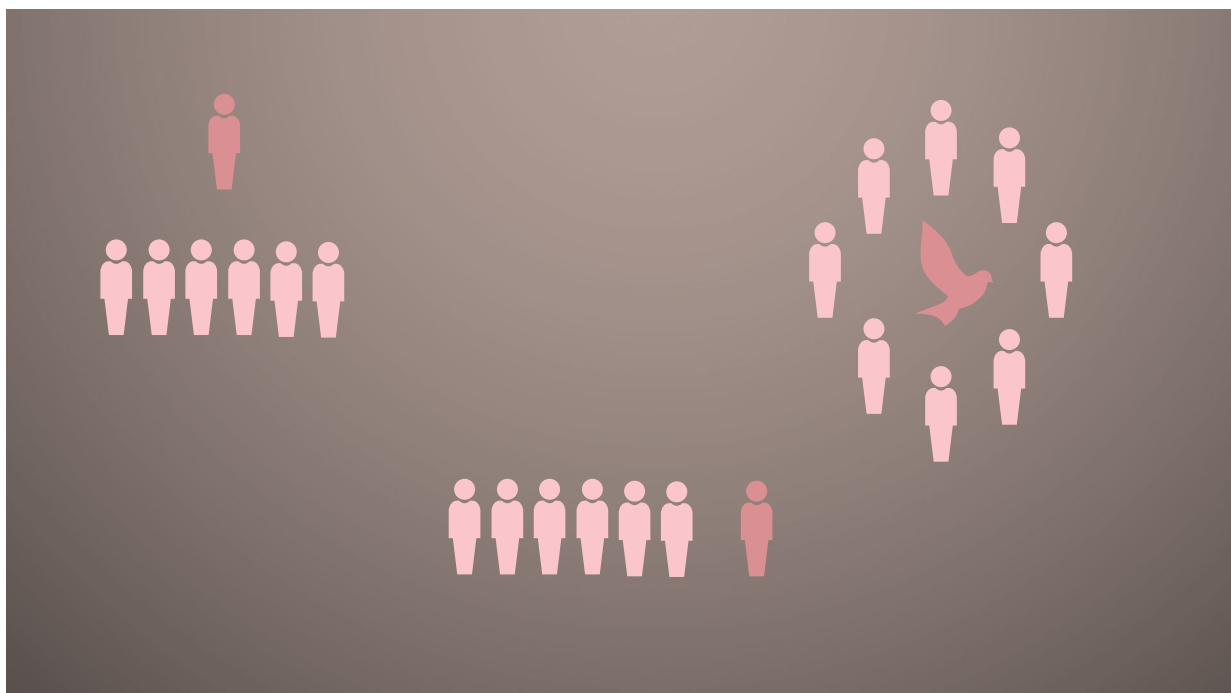
6. Strength of a team

In addition to the spiritual gifts and the roles that the individual brings into the team, each team member also has individual strengths. Some are strategically good, some are empathetic and others are talented in organizing. It is good to know the individual strengths of each other. Some teams do a personality test with all team members.

7. Team Leadership

There are different leadership models for a team.

- Model 1 (left): This is the hierarchical model in which the team leader decides everything.
- Model 2 (middle): The "Primus inter pares" model means the first among equals. In fact, in the event of a tie, the chairman shall have the deciding vote.
- Model 3 (right): The biblical model is team leadership. The Holy Spirit speaks, guides, gives individual impulses. Sometimes one member of the team will get an impulse of the Holy Spirit and sometimes another. The team then decides together, according to these impulses. In fact the Holy Spirit guides.



8. Team phases

Many teams go through the following four group dynamic phases in their development.

1. Forming
2. Storming
3. Norming
4. Performing

9. Character qualifications

What are good character qualifications for team members of a sending team? The following text shows the character qualifications for elders and deacons. This should also be the benchmark for the sending team.

1 Timothy 3:2-7

Now the overseer is to be above reproach, faithful to his wife, temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not given to drunkenness, not violent but gentle, not quarrelsome, not a lover of money. He must manage his own family well and see that his children obey him, and he must do so in a manner worthy of full respect. (If anyone does not know how to manage his own family, how can he take care of God's church?) He must not be a recent convert, or he may become conceited and fall under the same judgment as the devil. He must also have a good reputation with outsiders, so that he will not fall into disgrace and into the devil's trap.

10. How do you become a team member and how do you leave the team?

The team needs to clarify how to train team members and how they join the team. Likewise, one should define a testing period for the new members. In addition, it must be clarified under what circumstances one can leave the team in good terms.

11. General team vision and sending sphere

- Each sending team needs a basic vision, ideally the vision is to start a DMM.
- Each sending team needs a defined sphere, an area where the vision is implemented.
- Each sending team should oblige to a commitment. In this commitment, the team describes what values it will have towards God, the ministry, the team, and the world. Each team is a committed community.

12. Concrete, present vision and strategy for medium term goals

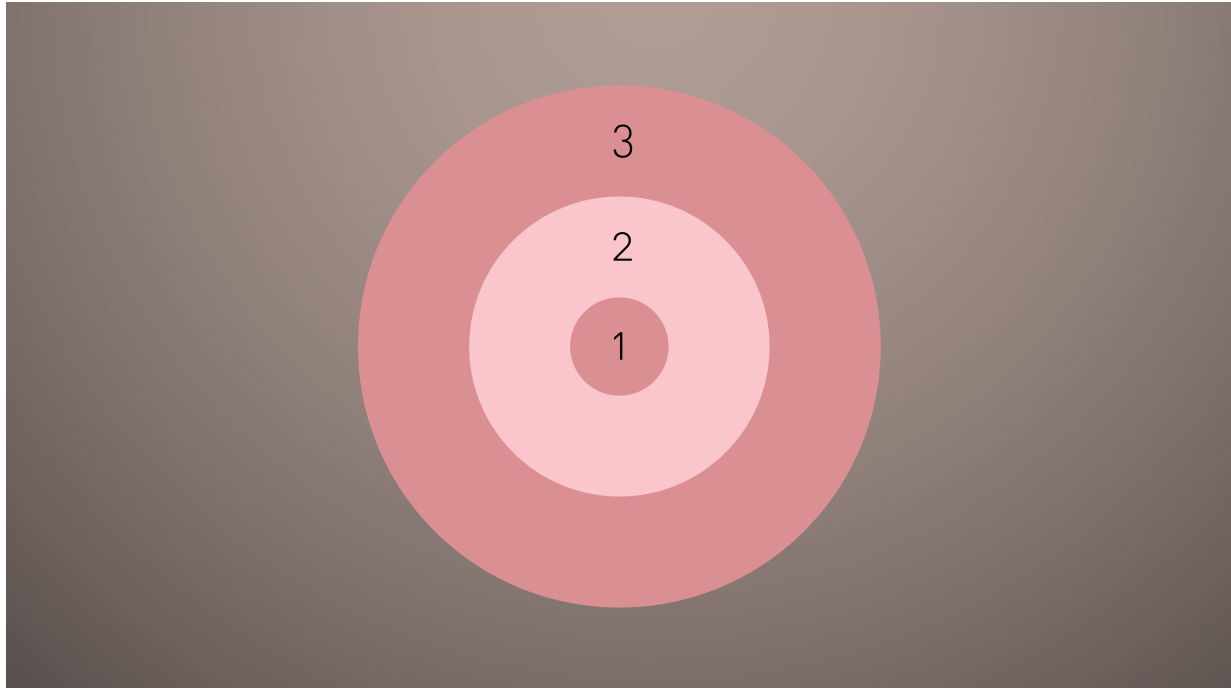
The team needs a momentary strategy on how to achieve the short and medium term goals. An example of such a goal is to start two new house churches within a year. Such goals are set in faith, but should be carried out with practical strategies.

13. Team: Time and engagement commitment

Each team needs a timeframe that the team members commit to and a commitment that includes the overall engagement of the sending team.

14. Team life

The team has to find ways how to live out the spiritual and practical team life. It lives like a mobile house church. The core team (1) consists of 3-7 active units. In the second, outer circle (2) consists of the trainees and helpers. They are not present at all the strategic meetings. In the third, outermost circle (3) is the community of the team. Team Community contains the partners and children of the team who are not fully active team members but have their spiritual home in community meetings and prayer meetings with the team.



15. Transformational Ministry

This value is about sharpening the mutual character in the team. It is about being transformed into the image of Christ.

16. Team training / continuing education

The team is responsible for personal development and education and should plan and organize it.

17. Team finances

Each team organizes their own finances.

- Is there a team fund?
- Does the team put tithing in the team fund?
- How does the team handle finances?

18. Competence

The team defines which decisions are made by the individual and which by the team.

19. Send the team

Sending is an important spiritual act that legitimizes a sending team before God and man.

Acts 13:1-3

Now in the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen (who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch) and Saul. While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

- The sending of a team "to the work to which the Lord has called them" is normally done by the church.
- A sending team does not need to be funded by the church. The New Testament shows that Paul's team both worked in tent making and received support time to time from churches like Philippi and Thessalonica.
- A sending team is autonomous and subordinated directly to the Lord and not to the sending church.
- The good relationship with the sending church remains. The team comes back every now and then to report.
- On the first mission trip, Paul and Barnabas were sent by the church in Antioch (Acts 13). Maybe Titus was already part of the team (Galatians 3:1).
On the second mission trip, Paul called the prophet Silas (Acts 15:40) and in Lystra Timothy (Acts 16:1-2). In Troas, Luke probably joined the team (from there on it's written "we" not "they". See: Acts 16:10).
On Paul's third mission trip, Silas may not have been there, as he is no longer mentioned. The team in Ephesus included Priscilla and Aquila, whom Paul added to the Corinthian team, Timothy, Erastus (Acts 19:22), Luke, Aristarch, and Gaius (Acts 19:29).
- If there is no sending church to be sent from or a church doesn't send teams, one can be recognized and sent by another sending team.
- The mutual recognition of the sending teams is expressed through handshake.

Galatians 2:9

James, Cephas and John, those esteemed as pillars, gave me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship when they recognized the grace given to me. They agreed that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the circumcised.

20. Team mentor

In newly formed teams without a lot of team experience, it is advisable to seek a team mentor from outside that helps with development and conflict.

In training sessions 43 and 45, the subject team will be further discussed.

Application

Task:

Do you want to do the work as a sending team? Then start forming a team. Work with the trainees through the next steps of the training.

If you want to do the program of sending at a general level, then search for a partner (two by two) and continue with the lessons.

a) Summary: Someone from the group repeats this teaching in their own words. Others in the group fill in whatever is forgotten.

b) Group discussion.

c) Write down personal insight from the teaching.

d) Write down which things you want to put into practice. Be specific and concrete (who, when, where, how).

e) Each group present, what they have learned as well what they will implement.



Training Unit 5

Prayer for the harvest (Prayer walk)

From now on we **go out** to practice what we just learned among the lost.

The BEsent training is different than other trainings. It is a field training. This means you can only learn it by putting it into practice **out there**.

Summary of the first four training units

Training Unit 1

1. What is the ministry of sending?

- The most important ministry to reach the unreached
- The ministry of sending is a ministry that every true follower of Christ should live out
- Sending is a different ministry than evangelizing

Sending consists of 5 steps

1. Conditions and preparation/ training for the ministry of sending
2. Reach out to the unreached and lost and bring them JESUS
3. Stay with them, baptize them and make them disciples
4. Build discipleship groups, communities of faith
5. Multiplication of discipleship, communities and movements, (DMM: Disciple Multiplication Movement)

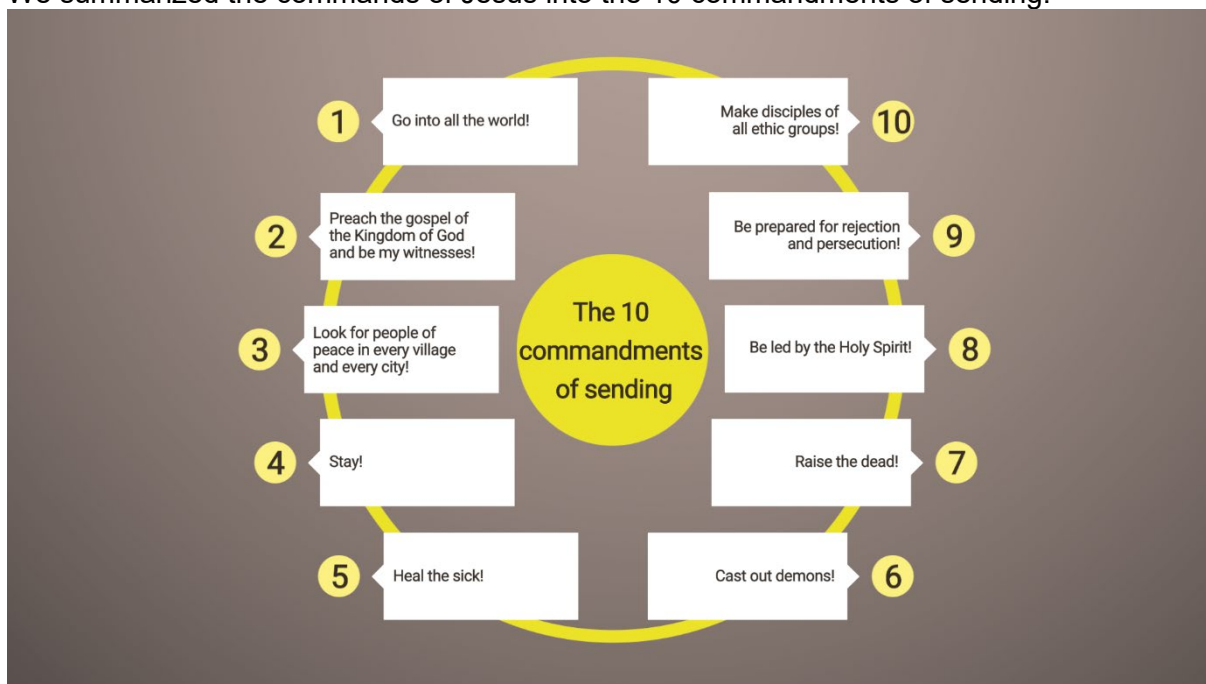
Training Unit 2

1. Jesus put into practice the ministry of sending in 173 villages of North Israel and two cities of Galilee and thereby demonstrated to his disciples how to live.
2. All three steps were included:
 - A) Most of his earthly ministry time he spent with the ministry of sending.
 - B) He intensively trained his disciples in this ministry of sending
 - C) He sent out his disciples to practice this ministry out into the harvest fields of Israel and the whole world.

Jesus gave specific instructions how we can best put this ministry of sending into practice.

Training Unit 3

We summarized the commands of Jesus into the 10 commandments of sending.



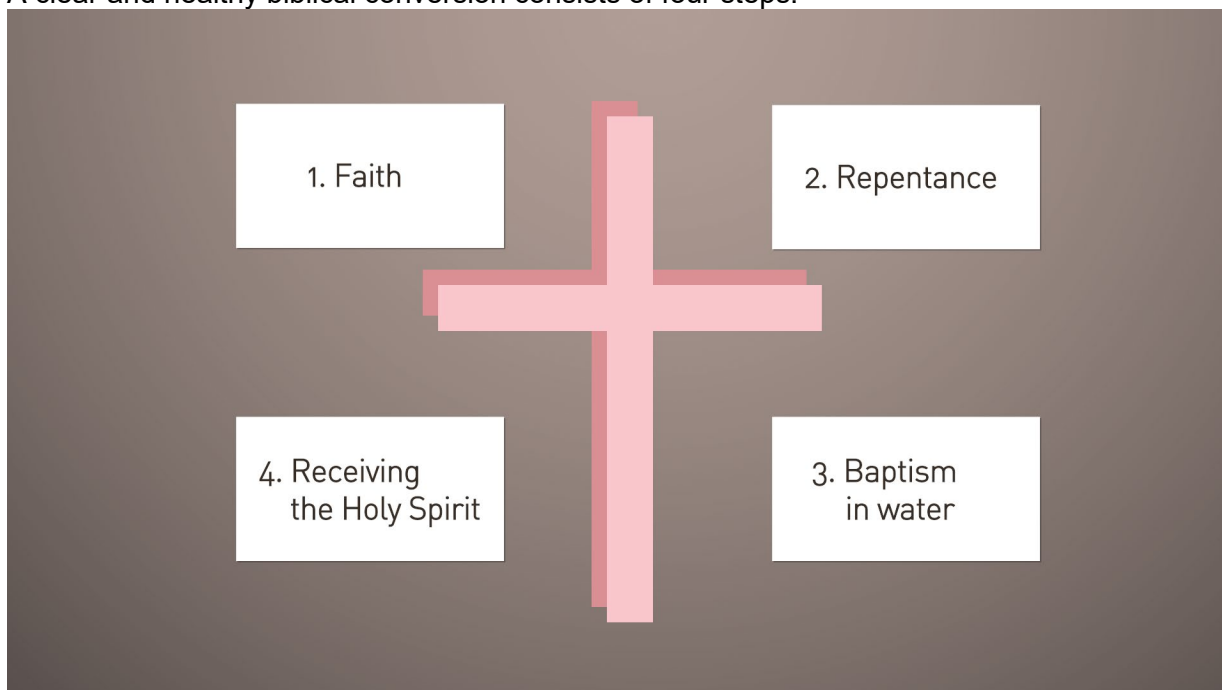
In his instructions for the sending Jesus clearly mentioned two conditions that need to be fulfilled for us to practice the ministry of sending.

- We need to be **filled with the Holy Spirit** or we need to first **receive the power of the Holy Spirit**
- We need to **pray** for the harvest and that the Lord would send more harvest workers into the fields

If it comes to the Holy Spirit in our lives and our ministry, we need to differentiate between two things:

- **Receiving** the Holy Spirit for **the first time** at our conversion and new birth
- Being **continually filled** and moved by the Holy Spirit in the ministry of sending

A clear and healthy biblical conversion consists of four steps:



And normally in that order:

1. Faith
2. Repentance
3. Water baptism
4. Baptism in the Holy Spirit or receiving the Holy Spirit

1. Faith

a) Trust Jesus, that He is the Saviour and Lord of my entire life and

b) Faith in receiving the Holy Spirit

- Faith is also the crucial factor to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit
- I believe that I am a candidate for receiving all of the Holy Spirit and hold on to Jesus' promises...
 - that the Holy Spirit will come
 - that he fills me
 - and that Jesus will let the power of the Holy Spirit overflow in me

2. Repentance (realization, confession, turning away)

3. Water baptism

The book of Acts clearly shows us that normally...

a) Faith

b) Repentance

c) and water baptism lead to a clear, unmistakable and tangible receiving of the Holy Spirit. You could also mention "thirst" as a "condition" for the Holy Spirit.

4. Thirst (longing, desire): "Whoever thirsts, come to me"

5. Laying on of hands Additionally, sometimes the laying on of hands and longer prayer are required and helpful in order to receive the Holy Spirit

What are some of the practical manifestations when we first receive the Holy Spirit in our lives/hearts?

- | | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| 1. Acts 2:4 | speaking in other tongues |
| 2. Acts 2:11
Acts 10:44-46 | declaring the wonders of God in our own tongues!
praised God and his mighty works |
| 3. Acts 9:17-20 | immediately preach that Jesus is the son of God |
| 4. Acts 19:1-6 | prophecy/make prophetic declarations/
speak out what God tells us |
| 5. Galatians 4:6 | the Spirit of the Son in our hearts calls out: Abba: Abba, Father! |

Question: Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became a Christian?

Question: Was there a manifestation that happened when you received the Holy Spirit for the first time?

Questions: In case it didn't happen at your conversion or your new birth, did it happen now – after the prayer within the 3rd training unit?

What should we do if nothing happened?

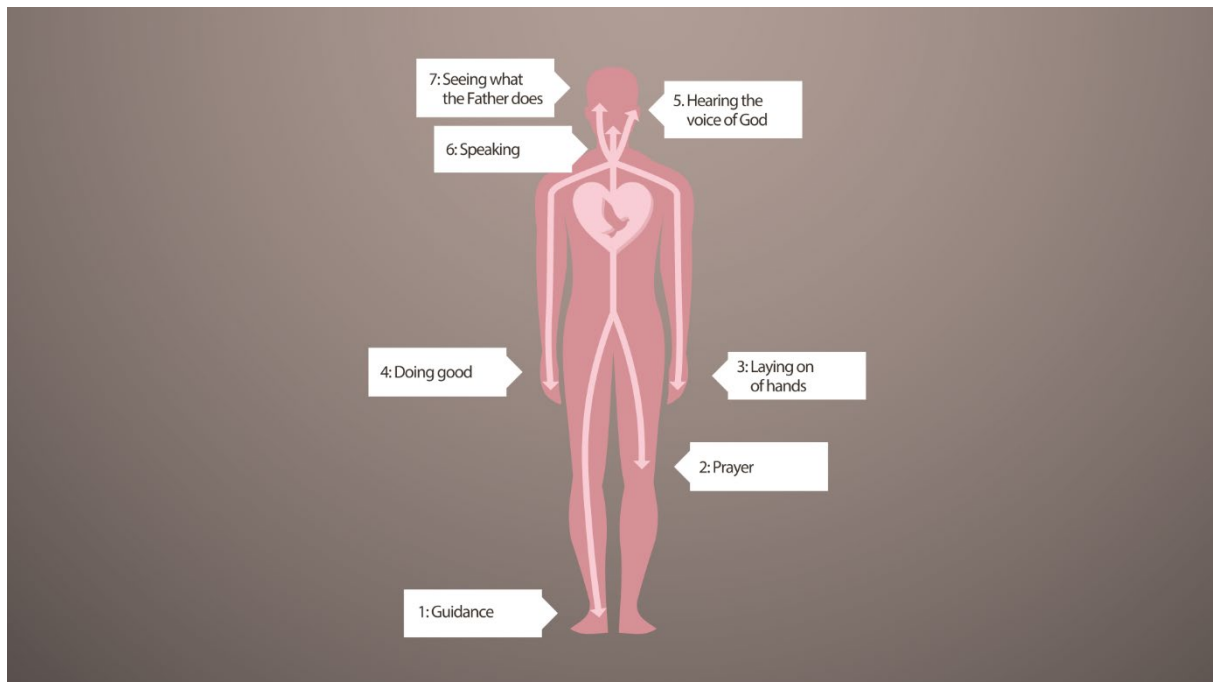
1. First check, if faith, repentance and water baptism happened
2. If those happened, try to find out what still blocks you from receiving the Holy Spirit:
 - sin
 - doubts
 - negative experiences with prayer and the Holy Spirit in the past
 - general/specific questions about the topic that are still unclear
 - false doctrines concerning the Holy Spirit
 - doubts/unbelief concerning the receiving the Holy Spirit
 - strange/wrong ideas about how receiving the Holy Spirit must happen
 - passive attitude
3. Then deal with the possible blockades according to the standard of the word of God
4. Keep praying regularly to be filled with the Holy Spirit until the dry land of your heart is flooded and a breakthrough happens in experiencing the Holy Spirit

Training Unit 4

- This unit is about the fellowship with the Holy Spirit in daily life and in the ministry of sending
- The Holy Spirit takes the space within us we offer him in our lives!
- The question is never how much of the Holy Spirit we possess (we have Him fully!) – but the question is rather, how much of US does he possess!
- It is about how much of the Spirit of God overflows and becomes a blessing to people around us

7-fold overflowing of the Holy Spirit in the lives of those ready to BEsent

1. Guidance
2. Prayer
3. Laying on of hands, to receive the Holy Spirit or healing
4. Doing good
5. Listening to the voice of the Shepherd
6. Speaking from inspiration
7. Seeing what the Father does



Question: In which of the **seven** areas do you experience the Holy Spirit moving on a regular basis?

Question: In which of these seven areas do you want to be moved by the Holy Spirit in faith?

Question: Are you ready, after determining to be moved by the Holy Spirit in prayer and in faith for you and your ministry, to take specific and regular steps of faith?

Prayer for the harvest (prayer walk)

We must look at two conditions that need to be fulfilled first before we practice the ministry of sending.

1. Be filled with the Holy Spirit
2. Pray for the harvest/ harvest workers and look carefully at what Jesus did.
Then there is a third condition:
3. Training: Yes! Training is what we are doing right now!
4. Depending on the form of our sending ministry we gather a sending team or a 2x2-team.

Prayer for the harvest (prayer walk)



Matthew 9:35-38

*Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease and sickness. When he saw the crowds, he had compassion on them, because they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd. Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest is plentiful but the workers are few. **Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field.**"*

There are many ways to pray:

- Prayer of thanksgiving
- Prayer of request
- Prayer of intercession
- Praying in tongues
- And many more

In the context of sending, the Lord commands us to **pray specifically for more harvest workers!**

Jesus goes around into all cities and villages and sees the people. Jesus sees their hearts. Jesus looks deeply into their hearts:

- He sees in what condition the people really are, how they really are:
- What he discovers there, moves his heart deeply...
- It breaks him,...
- He moans,...
- And it hits Jesus...
- The people are harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd.
- Matthew 9:36: "Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."
- So this means for us: Pray for people that are ready to take care of those harassed and helpless people OUT THERE and bring Jesus to them.

Three sources, areas, places where the harvest workers come from

1) Ourselves!

Example: Church planting in central Switzerland

When we moved to an unreached region of Switzerland in 2000 to plant churches there, we began the ministry with a 3-month period of prayer. My “problem” was that I had heard the call of God to go to that region and to start this church planting project very clearly – but the people who lived there didn’t touch my heart at all at first.

- I only had little love for them. The most astonishing fruit of this 3-month period was what happened in my own heart. In prayer, the Holy Spirit began to melt my cold and hard heart for these people.
- He then filled my “broken” heart by putting HIS love for these people there!

Romans 5:5

And hope does not put us to shame, because God’s love has been poured out into our hearts through the Holy Spirit, who has been given to us.

➔ The first answer to prayer for harvest workers is ourselves!

2) The Body of Christ

- Not only locals are involved.
- But also disciples from other places of the Body of Christ will hear the call to go into over-prayed harvest fields.
- The fact that people from different parts of the Body of Christ are hearing the call and joining can also be discovered in the sending teams of the apostle Paul.

3) From the harvest itself

In the recent history of the Kingdom of God, the Holy Spirit keeps starting more and more **movements**:

➔ DMM (Disciple Multiplication Movements)

We define a movement as: 1000 baptized people in at least 100 communities of faith in at least **four** generations of disciples.

In these movements, most of the main resources (harvest workers, finances, leaders) come from within the harvest!

Harvest workers are needed everywhere. It’s the first point of prayer for every people group.

Sending prayer is a mobile prayer, prayer walk, prayer march ... moving prayer!

Prayer influences the spiritual realm of a country, a village, a city, or region and paves the way for the gospel!

Examples in praying for the harvest

- Region 1: Florian, the author, received great love for the people of this region. After some time, God showed us who to approach first. The Holy Spirit told us that we should begin with people involved in the occult – he told us to show them God’s power first, which led to a special kind of evangelism.
- City 1: Florian, the author, didn’t like the city. When his group arrived there and started to pray, he suddenly saw a vision where God hugged and caressed this city and that he had also prepared people in that city. Quickly 20 people came to faith and a community of faith was started.
- City 2: When they came to the city gate and stood under an arch, the Holy Spirit fell on the group and told them: “Here I am going to give you a church.”
- City 3: Anni, the authors wife, was praying and suddenly she started to pray in a foreign language, a language she didn’t know and she prayed for two hours straight! In the evening, the group went to the city and they heard the local people speaking the language Anni had prayed in that afternoon. So they knew that that was the chosen group of unreached people to reach out to. A community of faith started soon after.
- City 4: The Holy Spirit spoke to a team, saying that the exact place where they were now praying would bring fruit. The team was standing in front of a residential block. After this team prayed for a couple of weeks. One day, after they had looked for a room where they could celebrate a birthday. The Lord led them back to the same spot they had been before. There was a youth room with many young people and the Lord opened the door to their hearts.
- Fight 1: In one city while the team was praying, suddenly, they all felt sick and started vomiting. The enemy’s resistance was strong.
- Fight 2: In another city, the team suddenly heard demons who laughed loud at them saying: “You are not going to make it and you will see no breakthrough.” But even there, God moved supernaturally and a whole group came to faith.

- **The prayer for the harvest is extremely precious!**

More examples for prayer for the harvest

- Telephone book survey: A pastor wrote 2 lists with 80 contacts out of a telephone book. The community of faith prayed for 3 months for the first list. Nobody prayed for the second list. After 3 months they called all 160 people. Among the 80 that nobody had previously prayed for, only one person (!) invited the team to tell more about Jesus at their home. Among the 80 they had prayed for, 69 were ready to hear more about the gospel and 45 also were open for receiving prayer.
- Residential block: A team prayed for a residential block and didn’t pray for another one. In the block they had not prayed for, 10% of the people were open for the gospel, 90% were not. In the one they had prayed for, 70% were open to hear the Gospel, only 30% were not!

- **Prayer is absolutely crucial for the ministry of sending!**

Pray for one hour a day! Best is to pray directly **in** the sending area, a city, a quarter, a subculture

Colossians 4:2-4

Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful. And pray for us, too, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains. Pray that I may proclaim it clearly, as I should.

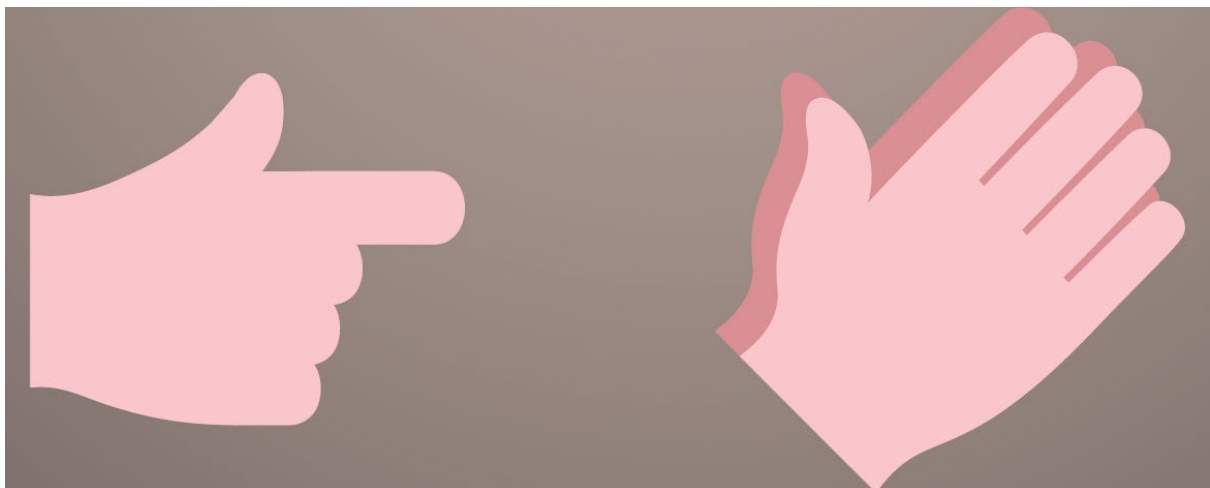
Example football game:

Two teams enter a football field – but one of the teams is invisible. The game is very difficult because you can't see the opponent. Suddenly a ball comes or is passed, without you seeing where it came from or who played it. Paul describes it this way in the following verses:

Ephesians 6:12 and 18-19

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.

And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the Lord's people. Pray also for me, that whenever I speak, words may be given me so that I will fearlessly make known the mystery of the gospel,



Why is it so helpful to pray for the harvest out in the harvest?

Numbers 13:17-20

When Moses sent them to explore Canaan, he said, "Go up through the Negev and on into the hill country. See what the land is like and whether the people who live there are strong or weak, few or many. What kind of land do they live in? Is it good or bad? What kind of towns do they live in? Are they unwalled or fortified? How is the soil? Is it fertile or poor? Are there trees in it or not? Do your best to bring back some of the fruit of the land." (It was the season for the first ripe grapes.)

- Moses gave clear instructions as to what the spies were supposed to observe
- During a prayer walk we pray for what we've observed in that particular region.
- It is a tool of God to bring light and clarity into a dark region.
- The prayer walk is a mighty weapon

2 Corinthians 10:4-5

The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

- **Prayer walking** – It contains divine powers to destroy strongholds
- **Prayer walking** – It destroys arguments and opinions that go against the knowledge of Christ
- **Prayer walking** – It takes captive every wrong thought, so we can obey Christ in all things

If we pray directly within the harvest field, we can complete four spiritual actions/steps at the same time:

1. Research: What does a harvest field and a harvest worker look like?

- How big is the harvest field?
- How many people live there?
- How many families are in that region?
- What tribal culture exists in that region?
- What kind of subculture religions are in that region?
- What work do people have in that region?
- Are there any believers in that region?
- Are there any churches in that region?
- Are there any ministries in that region?

2. Spiritual Mapping I: What is the enemy doing in that region?

- What are the major sins in that region?
- What are the strongholds of the enemy (not only individual sins but general patterns many people are caught in)?
- What are the wrong spiritual or religious powers there?
- What are the main blockades against the real faith?

3. Spiritual Mapping II: What does God do/plan within that region?

Ask the Lord for:

- His plans
- His commands
- His strategies
- His words/promises
- Where the prepared harvest/people of peace are

John 4:35

Don't you have a saying, 'It's still four months until harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest.

→ The harvest fields are prepared! That is the promise of God! Wherever we are!

Prayer proclamations**1) Pray for more harvest workers****Matthew 9:35-38**

Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease and sickness. When he saw the crowds, he had compassion on them, because they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd. Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest is plentiful but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."

2) Pray for OUR inherited land/our promised land**Psalms 2:8**

Ask me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession.

3) Bless the families**Genesis 12:3**

I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you I will curse; and all peoples on earth will be blessed through you."

4) Pray for, seek out and find the person of peace**Matthew 10:11**

Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave.

5) Praise God for the good things he has done for us**Psalms 66:1-5**

Shout for joy to God, all the earth! Sing the glory of his name; make his praise glorious. Say to God, "How awesome are your deeds! So great is your power that your enemies cringe before you. All the earth bows down to you; they sing praise to you, they sing the praises of your name." Come and see what God has done, his awesome deeds for mankind!

6) Pray that powerful miracles, signs and wonders will follow the proclamation of the gospel**Mark 16:17-18**

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

7) Pray that the commandment of making disciples will be fulfilled, movements take place and entire ethnic groups come to Jesus

Matthew 28:19-20

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.

8) In prayer, we come directly against demonic strongholds

Matthew 12:28-29

But if it is by the Spirit of God that I drive out demons, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. "Or again, how can anyone enter a strong man's house and carry off his possessions unless he first ties up the strong man? Then he can plunder his house.

2 Corinthians 10:4-5

The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

1 John 3:8

The one who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.

9) Confession of sins and pray for mercy

Daniel 9:5

We have sinned and done wrong. We have been wicked and have rebelled; we have turned away from your commands and laws.

Nehemiah 1:7

We have acted very wickedly toward you. We have not obeyed the commands, decrees and laws you gave your servant Moses.

10) Praise God for his grace

Psalms 103:8-12

The Lord is compassionate and gracious, slow to anger, abounding in love. He will not always accuse, nor will he harbor his anger forever; he does not treat us as our sins deserve or repay us according to our iniquities. For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us.

Application

a) Someone from the group summarizes this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.

b) Group discussion.

c) Write down personal insights from the teaching:

d) Write down **how** you want to put into practice what you learned, as well as with **whom**, **when** and **where** exactly:

e) Each group present what they learned and the specific goals they want to pursue now:

Outreach

Putting into practice: 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) per week for 1-3 months

Example: Blind girl

A group in the Himalayas went out for their very first prayer walk, when they met a 13-year old blind girl. They prayed for the girl – and immediately she was totally healed and could see! Let's do it!!

Testimonies:



Training Unit 6

GO

1st Commandment of sending: Go I: Go by faith

Mark 16:15

"Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation."



Before we can start with the ministry of sending, 4 conditions must be fulfilled:

- 1) We should be filled with power from on high
- 2) We should pray for the harvest and for the harvest workers
- 3) We should be trained for the ministry of sending
- 4) Depending on the form of our sending ministry we gather a sending team or a 2-2 Team.

Does this calling from the Lord apply for the sending of all believers?

The sending commandments of Jesus are obvious: Sending is a crucial part of the spiritual life of every true follower of Jesus Christ!

John 17:18

As you sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world.

John 20:21

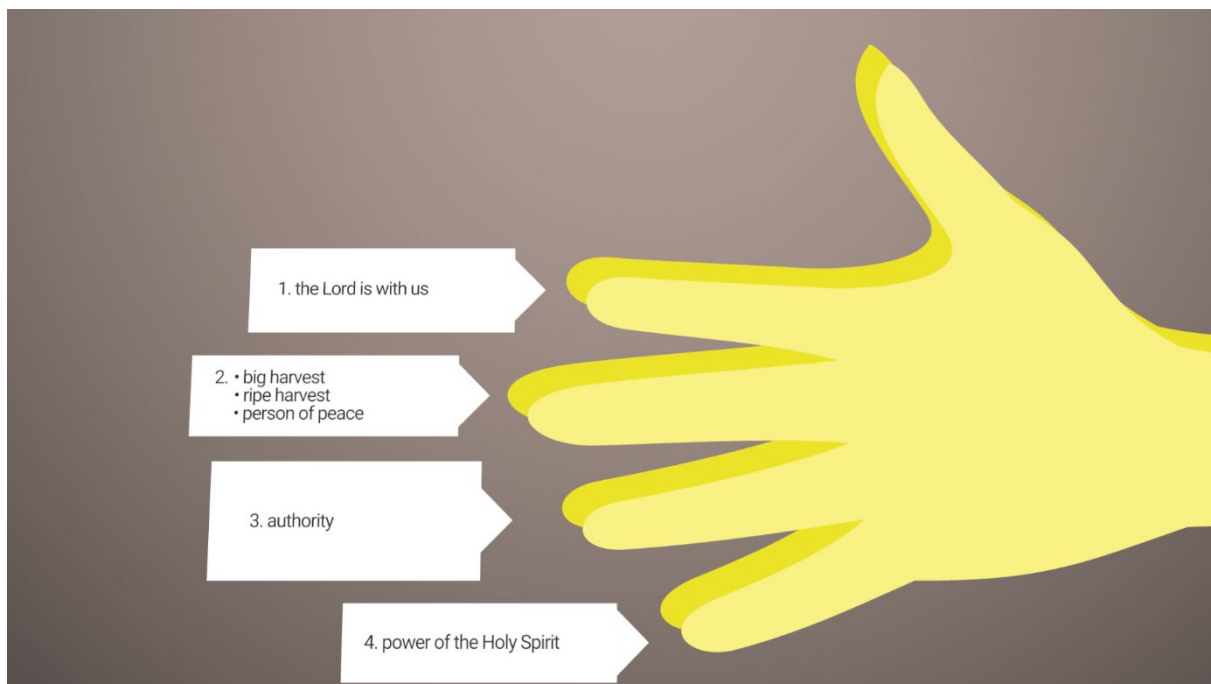
Again Jesus said, "Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, I am sending you."

Sending means

- All believers can/must love the lost
- All believers are sent ones
- All believers can/must reach out to the lost beyond the limits of their church/community
- All believers can/must bring the Gospel of the Kingdom of God to the unreached (preaching, guidance, healing and deliverance)
- All believers can/must start new discipleship groups or communities of faith with new born-again disciples
- All believers can/must train new disciples
- All believers can/must send the trained disciples to do the same as them

Yes, we are all sent ones!!

- Men and women
- Young and old
- Full-time ministers as well as very “normal” church members
- Sending is a universal gift and the general task of every follower of Christ
- We all are sent to the lost and unreached ones!
- We all are supposed to bring the same Gospel of the Kingdom of God to the lost!
- We all have the authority to share and preach the Gospel followed by signs and wonders
- For the ministry of sending there are **4 specific promises** that come along with the sending commandments and its conditions



The four promises for the ministry of sending

1. Promise: The Lord is with us

Matthew 28:18+20

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. (...) And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Jesus says: **"All authority has been given to me (exousia = authority) in heaven and on earth ... and surely I am with you always."**

- With this authority Jesus is with us! To the very end of the age – until the very last moment, he will be with us – in time and space.

Luke 10:2

He told them, "The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."

John 4:35

Don't you have a saying, 'It's still four months until harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest!

Matthew 10:11

Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave.

That's a word of faith: wherever the Lord sends us, he has prepared a harvest for us!

Let's ask the Lord that he would open the eyes of our hearts, so we would be able to see his ripe harvest!

When the Lord asks us to reach out to the lost, there are the following promises:

2. Promise: God prepared

- **The harvest is huge**
- **The harvest is ripe**
- **We will find a person of peace**

Luke 10:18-19

He replied, "I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you."

He who can believe it, do so!

3. Promise: Authority

We will learn more about this in the following training units.

Acts 1:8

But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.”

4. Promise: The Power of the Holy Spirit

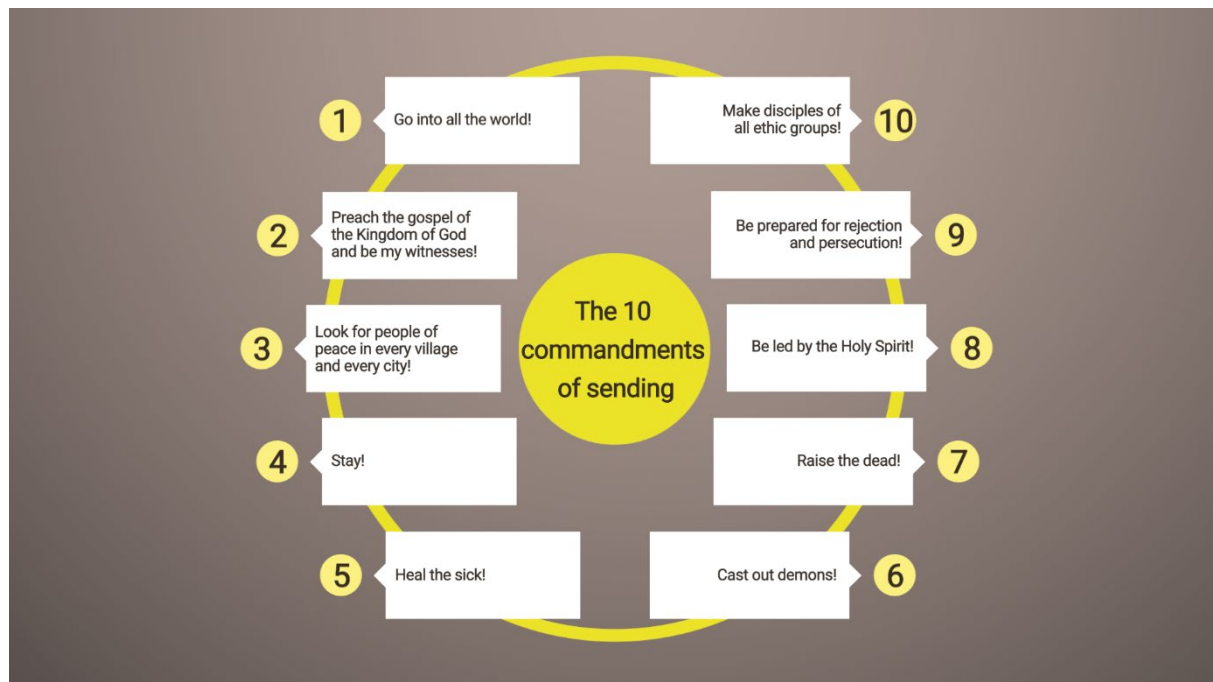
- This is a condition AND a promise at the same time:
 - We don't go alone, we aren't orphans.
 - The Lord has sent us his Holy Spirit. And that can't be surpassed by anything!
 - The Holy Spirit will lead us into all truth.
 - The Spirit of God is a Spirit of courage, power, faith and love.
 - The Holy Spirit sent by the Father can't be stopped.
 - It is the Spirit of God, the Spirit of resurrection.

Romans 8:9-11

You, however, are not in the realm of the flesh but are in the realm of the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, they do not belong to Christ. But if Christ is in you, then even though your body is subject to death because of sin, the Spirit gives life because of righteousness. And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies because of his Spirit who lives in you.

Example Bante – raising the dead!

Pastor Bante, from North East India, has raised several people from the dead by the power of the Holy Spirit. He always prays the passage from Romans 8:11.



1. Commandment of sending: GO

Go...

... go into all the world
 ... go to all ethnic groups
 ... go to all language groups
 ... go into all cultures
 ... go into all sub cultures
 ... go into all youth cultures
 ... go into all environments
 ... go to all the unreached and lost

Go ... Go ... Go ... Go ... Go ... Go ... Go ...

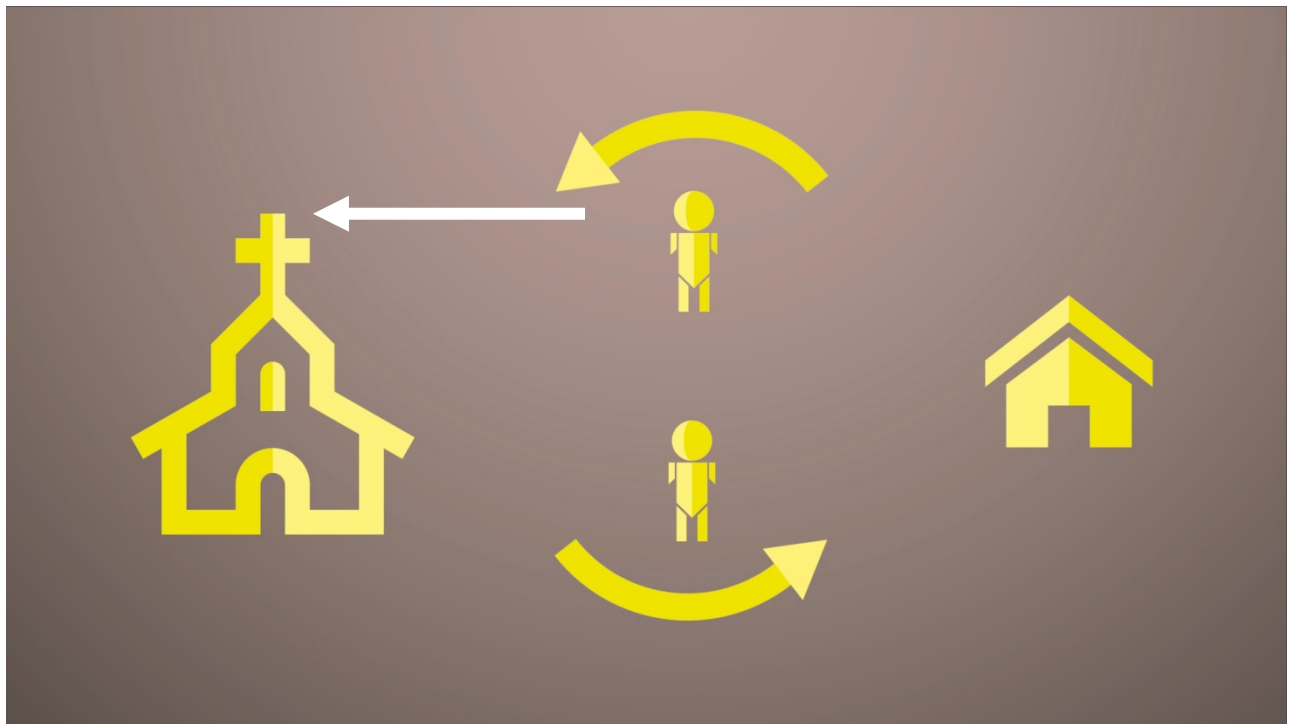
1. Go

Lukas 10:3

Go! I am sending you like lambs among wolves.

→ Since centuries the main strategy of the Church has been:

Come to our churches... instead of: **Go to the unreached!**



Studies from Germany, England and Switzerland show that $\frac{3}{4}$ of all unreached (sub-) cultures don't attend our churches anymore because of social reasons. The step out of their cultural environment into a church is too big for them!

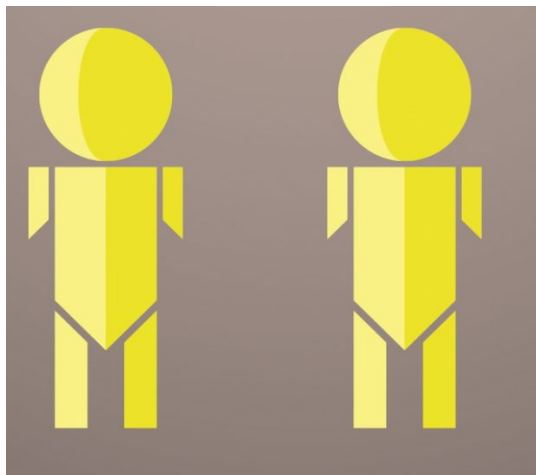
2. Go two by two

Luke 10:1

After this the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent them two by two ahead of him to every town and place where he was about to go.

Mark 6:7

Calling the Twelve to him, he began to send them out two by two and gave them authority over impure spirits.



- The ministry of sending should **never** be done **alone** but at least in teams of two
- Even Paul travelled and ministered mostly in a team
- As we carry out the ministry of sending, we don't only want to win single people but groups, houses - an entire Oikos
- Principle: "a group wins a group"

Task: Seek and call a friend to go into the harvest!

3. Go without money, extra shirts, staff, sandals or bags for the journey

Matthew 10:9-10

Do not get any gold or silver or copper to take with you in your belts—no bag for the journey or extra shirt or sandals or a staff, for the worker is worth his keep.



- Going within the Kingdom of God always means **going by faith**
- Going within the Kingdom of God always means **going and overcoming** the voices that want to cause us to fear and stop us

Example: Overcoming to go

When we heard the calling to go into the ministry of evangelism, a huge battle raged. We lost our apartment, we had three little children and no more money. Our friends simply didn't understand why we didn't have a "normal" job. Even suicidal thoughts came up. So, I (Florian) went into the forest to talk with God and told him: I will go – no matter how high the price is we have to pay. That very moment, I heard sort of an explosion in my spirit and immediately we had breakthrough. The voices disappeared, someone brought us food, we found money in our letter box, we received a bicycle for free, etc.

Task: What are your strongest fights or "voices" that prevent you from going and doing the ministry of sending?

Matthew 6:33

But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.

4. Go ... and don't greet anyone on the road**Luke 10:4**

Do not take a purse or bag or sandals; and do not greet anyone on the road.



This was also a command of Elisha to Gehazi in 2 Kings 4:29. This scripture might suggest that the fulfilment of a commandment of the Lord should not be hindered by greetings.

- Don't be distracted from the actual goal
- Stay focused

Task: What are your strongest distractions that prevent you from going and doing the ministry of sending?

5. Go ... like lambs among wolves

Luke 10:3

Go! I am sending you out like lambs among wolves.



Example: Trainees in Ethiopia

Right after we had sent the trainees out for outreach during a training, they were attacked, hit and even thrown into prison. Fear rose – sheep must experience this feeling when among wolves. Trusting in Jesus, they overcame this fear and the same day, they experienced many breakthroughs and shared testimonies of what God had done that day.

- **Faith that Jesus is also Lord of all wolves and that he is always with us**
- **Humility and dependence ... our weapon is the Lord!**

John 16:33

I have told you these things, so that in me you may have peace. In this world you will have trouble. But take heart! I have overcome the world.

Task: Where do you fear the strongest attacks?

2 Timothy 1:7

For the Spirit God gave us does not make us not timid, but gives us power, love and self-discipline.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down, what things can be put into practice, with whom, when and where exactly you want to **go and reach the unreached**:

Take time to take a look at these questions for you personally:

1. **What are your strongest walls or «voices» that prevent you from going and doing the ministry of sending?**
2. **Task: What are your strongest distractions that prevent you from going and doing the ministry of sending?**
3. **Where do you fear the strongest attacks?**

Lay these spiritual walls/voices down in prayer and pray for each other, so that the Spirit of courage, power and confidence would fill you

- d) Each group presents what they learned and presents the precise goals of how to put it into practice.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3x a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 7

GO

1st Commandment of sending: Go II: Going as a team

Summary Go

1. Go ...

Since centuries the main strategy of churches and communities has been:

Come (unbelievers) to our churches...

BUT Jesus emphasizes: **You believers reach out to the unreached...**

2. Go two by two

The ministry of sending should never be done alone, but at least in teams of two.

Later, when Paul was sent, they went as a team as well. During the sending we don't only want to win single people but entire groups/houses/Oikos.

Each group wins other groups for Jesus.

3. Go without money, extra shirts, staff, sandals, bag for the journey ...

Going within the Kingdom of God is always a GOING in **total TRUST**.

A "going by faith" – "Going with a Kingdom of God mindset" is always a **going and overcoming of voices** that want make us afraid.

4. Go ... and don't greet anybody on the road

- Don't be distracted
- Stay focused

5. Go ... like sheep among wolves

- Faith that he is the Lord over wolves as well and that he is always with us
- Humility and dependence (no other powers/weapons for our defence)

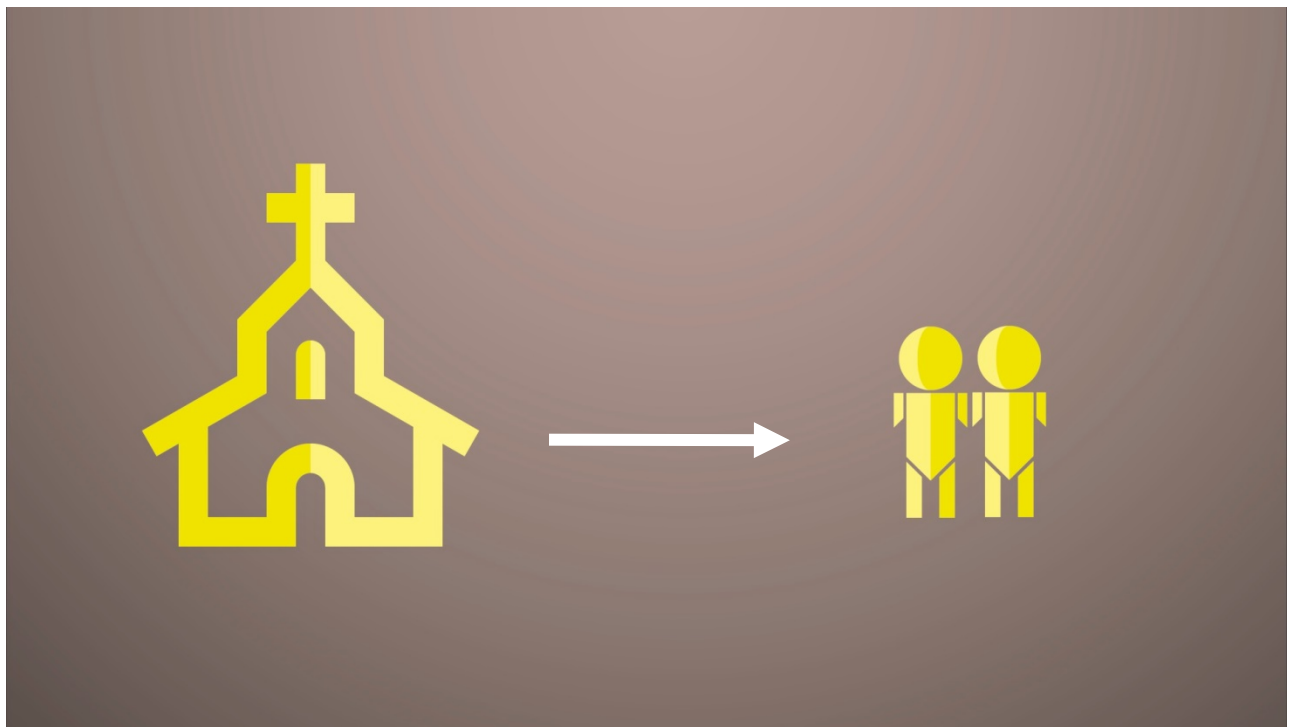
The ministry of evangelism

We bring the good news, to people that don't know Jesus yet, have no real relationship with the Father in Heaven, his Son and fellowship with the Holy Spirit,

- ... that Jesus died on the cross in Calvary for our sins
- ... that he rose from the dead
- ... that he wants to and can forgive our sins
- ... that he wants to reconcile us with the Father
- ... that he wants to enter into our lives to become Lord and King of our lives
 - If someone repents, turns away from his old life and is born again, we then invite him or her to attend Church, where they are trained as disciples and live in community with other followers of Christ.

What is evangelism?

- To go to all those people who don't know Jesus yet and to bring them Jesus
- and then bring them into church, where they are trained as disciples and live in fellowship



Side note

Each ministry - be it the sent one, prophet, evangelist, shepherd, teacher, has at least 2 levels:

- 1) All followers of Christ can and must do it in a general way
- 2) Some followers have special gifts in a certain ministry and therefore have a greater capacity to do this ministry

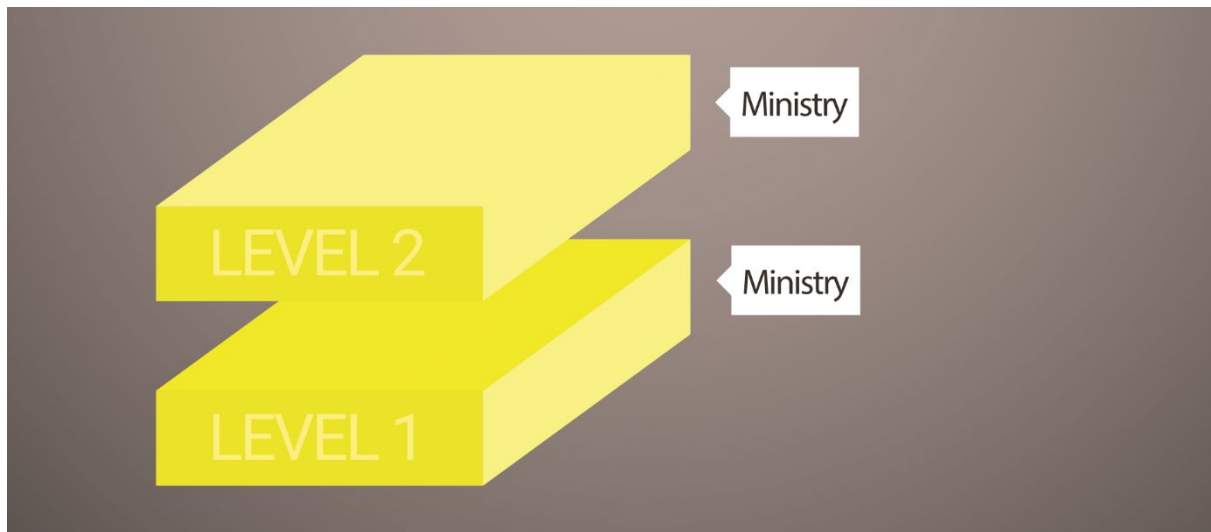
The same is true for evangelism.

Every follower of Jesus can and must do this ministry, but some have special gifts and can do this ministry in a more effective way. And the same is true for the ministry of sending!

Sending in Latin is **missio**, which means missionary. In New Testament Greek it is defined as:

- Apostello = to send
- Apostolos = sent one

The ministry of sending, therefore, is a missionary or apostolic ministry



The ministry of sending has two levels:

Level 1: The ministry of all followers of Christ within their **unreached** environment

Level 2: The ministry of especially gifted sent ones who carry it out in a very fruitful way within their environment. For example, they leave their social or cultural environment and go into a new sociological environment, culture, country or religious environment and bring Jesus to its people.

The sent one goes to the unreached people:

Example of Jesus:

- From Heaven to a lost world
- Into the cities, villages and courtyards of Galilee
- To the lost sheep of Israel

Example of Paul:

- To the Gentiles
- On three mission trips he ministers in Asia Minor and Europe
- He mostly ministered in unreached cities (Ephesus, Philippi, Thessalonica, Corinth)

Today, where are the worldwide unreached we are supposed to reach out to?

Revelation 7:9-10

After this I looked, and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. And they cried out in a loud voice: "Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb."

- Unreached language groups or ethnic groups
- Unreached geographical regions

Among the approximately 17,000 ethnic groups existing worldwide, 6,600 are unreached and 2,650 of them are Islamic groups.

“Unreached” means:

1. That there are less than 2% evangelical Christians within that ethnic group
2. That there is no opportunity to hear the Gospel. Someone is born, lives his life, gets old and dies without hearing the Gospel ever because there are neither Christians, Bibles nor Churches nearby.

“Entirely unreached”, “most unreached” or “least reached” means:

- No community of faith we know of that could independently share the Gospel within their region

Where are the unreached tribes, ethnic groups, languages and cultures around us that we should reach out to?**Example: Eagle above the city**

An eagle flies high above a modern city. When he looks down, he sees the city as one. If the eagle flies lower and looks more sharply, he can see that within the city different groups and cultures there are, e.g. Portuguese, heavy-metal fans, business people, squatters, carnival associations, etc. If the eagle flies very low, he sees that the city consists of numerous units and interest groups.



Besides the unreached regions, places and cities there are unreached people everywhere within the reached regions, especially within cities:

1. Unreached neighbourhoods
2. Unreached ethnic groups (foreigners)
3. Unreached religious groups, groups of other worldviews (spiritual groups, communities of values)
4. Unreached subcultural milieus (e.g. youth cultures)
5. Unreached interest groups (LGBT, environmental activists, alternative groups, squatters)
6. Unreached segments of society (within sports, politics, wealthy people)
7. Unreached groups at the workplace
8. Unreached people in our families or among our remote relatives
9. Unreached apartment blocks

Sociologists suggest that many of those sub groups and sub cultures are actually **new ethnic groups** with their own culture, language and values.

Matthew 28:19-20

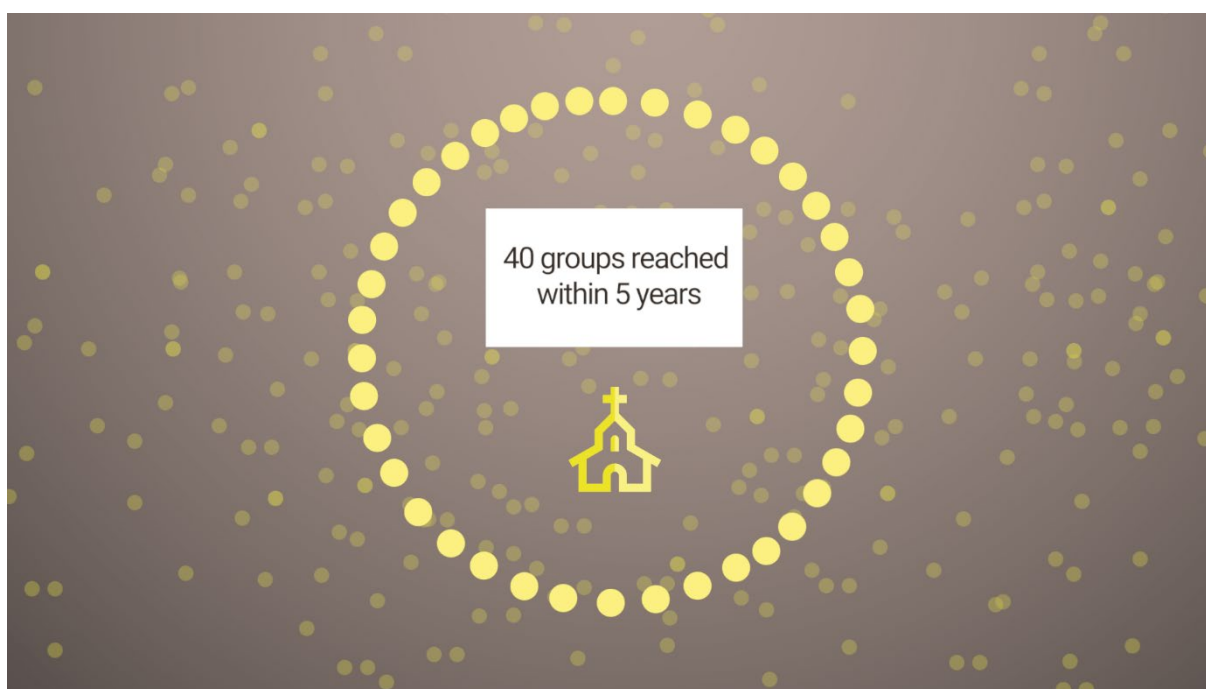
Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Matthew 24:14

And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.

The difference between the ministry of evangelism and the ministry of sending

Ministry of evangelism	Ministry of sending
1. By themselves many times	1. Two by two or as a team
2. Bring the good news of Jesus, that he is the Saviour of all people around the world, to people around them (single people or groups) that are open to the Gospel.	2. Primarily seek people of peace or key people , who are open to the Gospel and are also open to involve their family, friends and their social network.
3. If someone then believes, repents, is born again and baptized in water and Holy Spirit...	3. Ideally, it's not only the person of peace who believes, repents, is born again, baptized in water and Holy Spirit, but the person of peace along with an entire community - like Cornelius and his friends or Lydia and her entire household
4. ... then we invite him or her to come to Church.	4. If a person of peace or a group have turned to Jesus and were baptized, we let them within their sub culture.
5. There he/she are trained as a disciple and lives in community with other followers of Christ	5. There, in his/her environment, we build discipleship groups, spiritual families, communities of faith and train them as disciples
	6. Then we train and «send» them to pass on what they received (new life in Jesus and what has been taught them) - so that a discipleship movement can start.



Example: All Saints Church Peckham, London

Survey: How many unreached groups were there within 2 miles around their church building? They found 340 unreached groups. So, they tried to reach those groups with the Gospel and they reached 40 groups within 5 years and could plant the Kingdom of God.

Main goals of the ministry of sending

- The goal is not a single new birth, but the new birth of an entire group of disciples.
- The goal is not to take the new born believers out of their environment and bring them into church,
 1. But to leave them in their environment
 2. And to encourage them to plant a discipleship group, a spiritual family, a community of faith.
- The goal is that the new disciples pass on what they have been taught within their environment.
- The goal is that a **movement** of disciples evolves from this unreached group.
- The goal is that the Kingdom of God advances and the former unreached territory turns into reached territory.

For this ministry that goes way beyond evangelism, more than one person is required!

A team is required! That's why Jesus never sent his disciples by themselves but at least in pairs. After the principle:

Matthew 18:20

For where two or three gather in my name, there am I with them."

Especially when the unreached group we want to reach lives in another culture, another region or another country, we definitely need a team! In the New Testament sent ones are never by themselves but always at least in pairs or as a team. We can observe that well if we look at Paul and this team.

➔ When we practice the ministry of sending: A group wins groups.

Example of Jesus as the example of a sent one: Jesus and his disciples were a team of sent ones. They went together to cities, villages and courtyards in Galilee and shared the Gospel of the Kingdom.

Example: Levi, the tax collector, Matthew 9+10

Jesus brings the Gospel and sends them out.

Mark 6:7

Calling the Twelve to him, he began to send them out two by two and gave them authority over impure spirits.

Luke 10:1

After this the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent them two by two ahead of him to every town and place where he was about to go.

- **Peter and his team** reach Cornelius with his household, family and his friends (Acts 10)
- **Paul and his team** reach the prison guard and his household (Acts 16)
- **Paul and his team** reach Lydia and her household (Acts 16)

Why do the sending ministry together?

Ministry of sending always means: Two by two and/or **a team** because...

1. ... humans are created for community
-> **Principle:** It's not good for a man to be alone...

Proverbs 27:17

As iron sharpens iron, so one person sharpens another.

2. ... it is an addition.
3. ... it is a help.
4. ... it is a way setting an example

Matthew 18:20

For where two or three gather in my name, there am I with them."

5. ... it is a community

a ministry community:

- to strengthen each other by reading the Bible together
- to maintain community
- to pray together
- to minister together

Application

Task: In case you haven't found anyone yet, with whom you can go and practice the ministry of sending, it is very important now: seek, find and call a partner to go with you!

Task: In case it is not clear to you where your sending field/preferred group of unreached people is, now is the time to recognize and to define it

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

- d) Write down, what things can be put into practice, with whom, when and where exactly you want to **go and reach the unreached**.

- e) Each group present, what they have learned as well what they will implement.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3x a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

Time Commitment for the ministry of sending:

What	Hours	Hours per activity	Time left each week
Week	$7 \times 24 =$	168	168h
Sleep	$7 \times 7 =$	49	119h
Work	$5 \times 8 =$	40	79h
Travel to work	$5 \times 1 =$	5	74h
Marriage/family	$7 \times 2 =$	14	60h
Meals	$7 \times 1 =$	7	53h
Sports	$2 \times 1.5 =$	3	50h
Media	$7 \times 2 =$	14	36h
			<u>36 hours left!</u>

Let us not be deceived by the enemy concerning our time we have available!

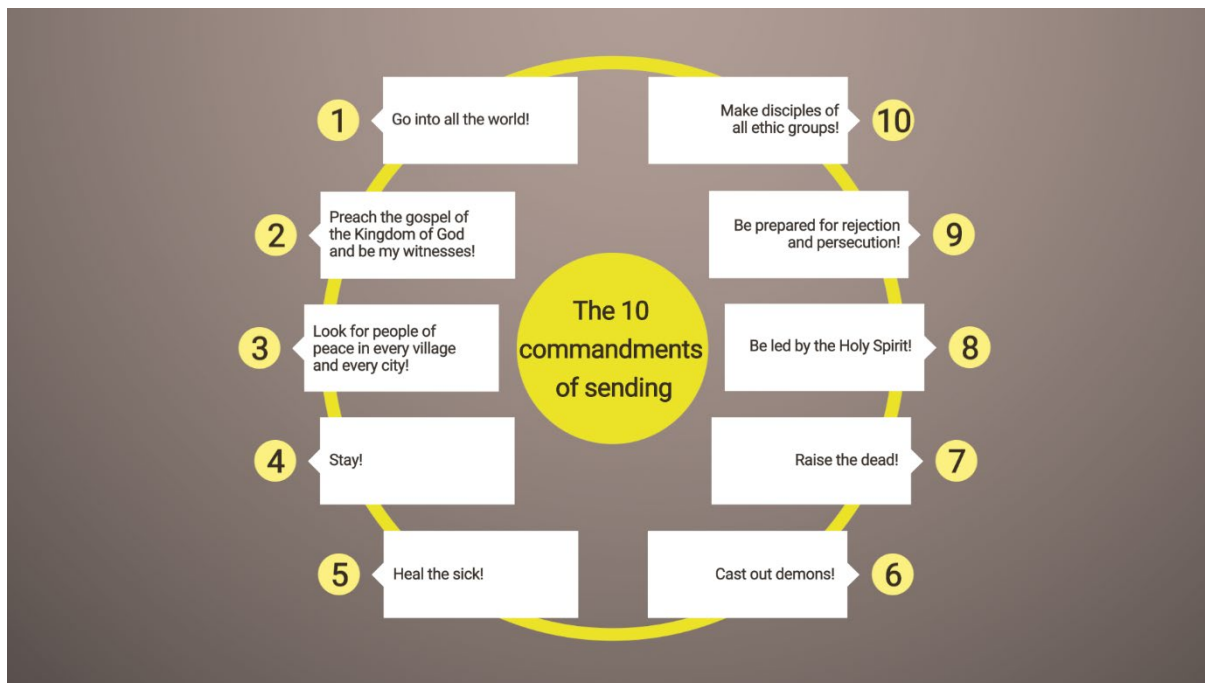
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 8

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending: Preach I: The Gospel of the Kingdom of God: Faith



Preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of God

To preach, declare, share and witness the Gospel of the Kingdom of God is an absolutely crucial part of the entire ministry of sending!

Romans 10:14-17

How, then, can they call on the one they have not believed in? And how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them? And how can anyone preach unless they are sent? As it is written: "How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!" But not all the Israelites accepted the good news. For Isaiah says, "Lord, who has believed our message?" Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ.

Example: Alcoholic

In Russia at -10 degrees Celsius an alcoholic came to an evangelistic meeting. When the preacher approached him, the word of God deeply touched him. Immediately he became sober and the Holy Spirit convicted him in his heart.

Example: A tribe of unreached people:

While reading the 10 commandments, people came to the front crying and shaking because they were totally convicted by the word of God.

There is power in the word of God!

Jeremiah 23:29

"Is not my word like fire," declares the Lord, "and like a hammer that breaks a rock in pieces?"

Psalms 33:9

For he spoke, and it came to be; he commanded, and it stood firm.

When we share the Gospel and it touches people in their hearts – then true **faith** evolves in their hearts. The word of God creates trust and faith in Jesus Christ. This faith saves us humans from eternal death!

Romans 10:10

For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved.

Jesus preached the Gospel of the Kingdom of God**Matthew 4:23**

*Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming **the good news of the kingdom**, and healing every disease and sickness among the people.*

Matthew 9:35

*Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming the **good news of the kingdom** and healing every disease and sickness.*

Mark 1:14

*After John was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the **good news of God**.*

Luke 4:43

*But he said, "I must proclaim the **good news of the kingdom of God** to the other towns also, because that is why I was sent."*

Luke 8:1

*After this, Jesus traveled about from one town and village to another, proclaiming the **good news of the kingdom of God**. The Twelve were with him,*

But what exactly is the **Gospel of the Kingdom of God** we are supposed to proclaim?

- Is it some spiritual phrases?
- Is it a certain sermon?
- Is it a guideline with a few steps about how to turn to Jesus?

What does it mean to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of God?

It becomes clear when we take a look at the messages of Jesus' disciples in the book of Acts:

Acts 5:42

*Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the **good news that Jesus is the Messiah**.*

Acts 8:12

*But when they believed Philip as he proclaimed the **good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ**, they were baptized, both men and women.*

Acts 8:35

*Then Philip began with that very passage of Scripture and told him the **good news about Jesus**.*

Acts 11:20

*Some of them, however, men from Cyprus and Cyrene, went to Antioch and began to speak to Greeks also, telling them **the good news about the Lord Jesus**.*

Acts 17:18

*A group of Epicurean and Stoic philosophers began to debate with him. Some of them asked, "What is this babbler trying to say?" Others remarked, "He seems to be advocating foreign gods." They said this because Paul was preaching **the good news about Jesus and the resurrection**.*

Acts 28:23

*They arranged to meet Paul on a certain day, and came in even larger numbers to the place where he was staying. He witnessed to them from morning till evening, explaining about the **kingdom of God**, and from the Law of Moses and from the Prophets he tried to persuade them **about Jesus**.*

Acts 28:31

*He proclaimed the kingdom of God and **taught about the Lord Jesus Christ**—with all boldness and without hindrance!*

The Gospel **doesn't** mean:

- Some spiritual phrases
- a certain sermon
- A guideline with a few steps about how to turn to Jesus

The Gospel is not a text – but the Gospel is one word: it's a person.

THE GOSPEL IS A PERSON: JESUS!

To proclaim the Gospel of the Kingdom of God means to introduce **Jesus** to people

Introduce Jesus who:

- Loves us
- Does good
- Is our friend, for sinners as well
- Is interested in us and did everything to save us
- Therefore died for us
- Rose from the dead and is alive now
- Frees us from evil spirits
- Heals diseases and infirmities
- Heals the broken hearted
- etc.

The best way to explain is to simply **share what we have experienced** with him.

Acts 4:20

As for us, we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard."

The Greek word **Euangelion / Gospel** literally means "good news".

The first Christians who used this word for the first time, talked about

- **The description of the act of salvation and redemption of God through Jesus in short and precise words, mentioning the most important contents**
- It was probably Mark, who is the author of one of the Gospels, that was the first to write an extensive report on the life of Jesus as the "**Gospel**" / "**Good news**".

Mark 1:1

The beginning of the good news about Jesus the Messiah, the Son of God,

Gospel means: Jesus is the Saviour of the world through his death on the cross

Evangelism is very easy!

- Because each person who knows Jesus personally ...
- And trusted him as a Saviour ...
- Can simply share what Jesus has done in his life

Paul says it like this:

1 Corinthians 2:1-2

And so it was with me, brothers and sisters. When I came to you, I did not come with eloquence or human wisdom as I proclaimed to you the testimony about God. For I resolved to know nothing while I was with you except Jesus Christ and him crucified.

Gospel of the Kingdom (Basileia) of God or of the royal dominion of God.

The Kingdom of God means:

- Where God reigns as King and where his royal dominion is accepted
- Where his will is done
- Where his commandments are done

God, the Father, passed on the royal dominion to Jesus:

Revelation 17:14

They will wage war against the Lamb, but the Lamb will triumph over them because he is Lord of lords and King of kings—and with him will be his called, chosen and faithful followers."

- Jesus is Lord and King
- Jesus is the Lord of Lords and King of Kings

Summary:

- Gospel means Jesus as **Saviour** and redeemer
- Kingdom of God means Jesus as **Lord and King**

Gospel of the Kingdom of God means to proclaim that Jesus is **Saviour** and **Lord/King**

To Evangelize therefore means to introduce Jesus so that people around can get to know Jesus personally and trust in him so they can believe in him.

John 17:3

Now this is eternal life: that they know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.

If we introduce Jesus, we really should introduce him as he truly is; not only in a shortened form or only “parts” of Jesus. But Jesus as

A) Saviour and

B) Lord/King.

Peter introduces Jesus perfectly:

Acts 10:36-48

You know the message God sent to the people of Israel, announcing the good news of peace through Jesus Christ, who is Lord of all. You know what has happened throughout the province of Judea, beginning in Galilee after the baptism that John preached—how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him. “We are witnesses of everything he did in the country of the Jews and in Jerusalem. They killed him by hanging him on a cross, but God raised him from the dead on the third day and caused him to be seen. He was not seen by all the people, but by witnesses whom God had already chosen—by us who ate and drank with him after he rose from the dead. He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that he is the one whom God appointed as judge of the living and the dead. All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name.” While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit came on all who heard the message. The circumcised believers who had come with Peter were astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out even on Gentiles. For they heard them speaking in tongues and praising God. Then Peter said, “Surely no one can stand in the way of their being baptized with water. They have received the Holy Spirit just as we have.” So he ordered that they be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they asked Peter to stay with them for a few days.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

- d) Write down, what things can be put into practice, with whom, when and where exactly you want to **go and reach the unreached**.

- e) Introduce Jesus to someone of your group.

- f) Each group present, what they have learned as well what they will implement.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3x a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

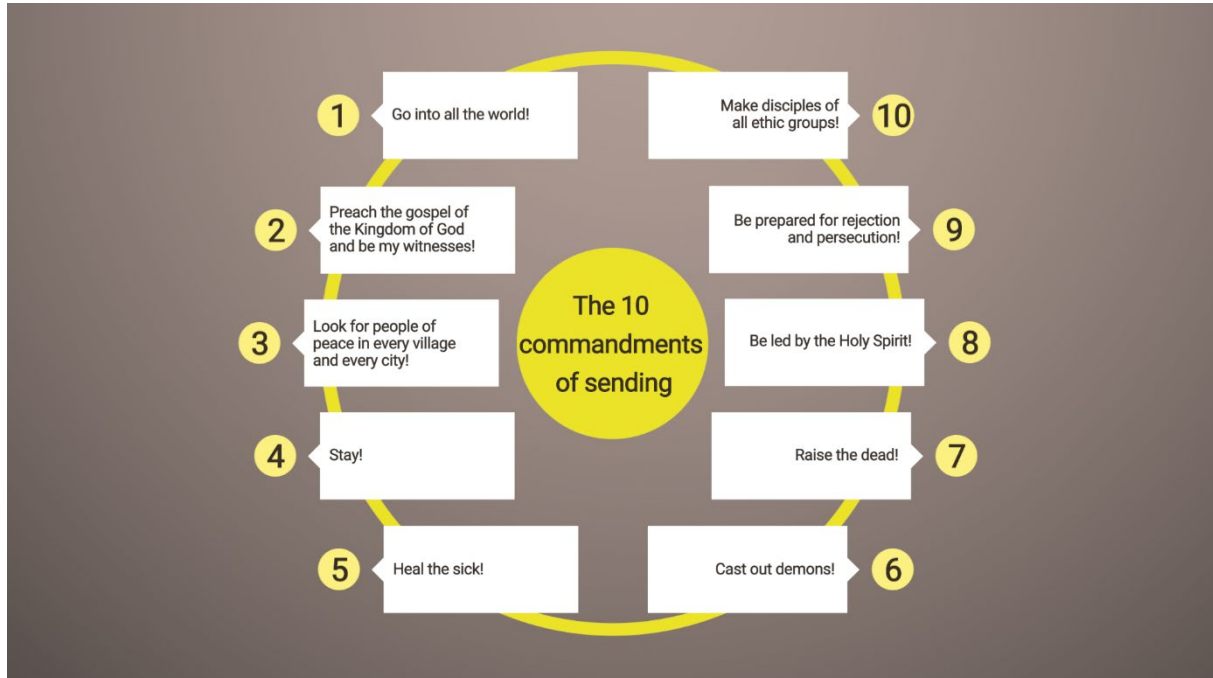


Training Unit 9

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending:

Preach II: 'from creation to salvation'



Summary: Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God Part I

1. The proclaimed Gospel contains power: The power to create faith in our hearts

Romans 10:17

"Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ."

2. **The Gospel** means: Jesus is the Saviour of the world through his death on the cross
3. Gospel of the **Kingdom of God** means:
 - Where Jesus reigns as King and where his royal dominion is accepted
 - Where his will is done
 - Where his commandments (the law of Christ) are obeyed

The Gospel of the Kingdom means:

To proclaim Jesus as

- Saviour
- Lord and King

To evangelize means to introduce Jesus, so people can get to know him personally and are eventually ready to trust in him, they **believe** in him.

Important: To introduce Jesus **entirely**, not only a “shortened“ Jesus or parts of Jesus

Jesus as:

- Saviour
- Lord

Peter introduced Jesus perfectly in Acts 10,36-47

Jesus' introduction – 10 central characteristics of Jesus from Acts 10:36-47

1. Jesus Christ **brings peace and reconciliation with God**
2. Jesus Christ **is LORD above all things**
3. Jesus of Nazareth **had the Holy Spirit and moved in the Holy Spirit**
4. Jesus of Nazareth **had and moved in supernatural divine power**
5. Jesus **does good works**
6. Jesus **can heal everyone/healed everyone and delivered all that were captives**
7. Jesus **died on the cross for our sins**
8. Jesus **is alive and is active among us today**
9. Jesus is appointed by God and chosen to **judge**
10. In Jesus **we should trust and will experience forgiveness and salvation**

The reaction to this message is not surprising:

Acts 10:44-48

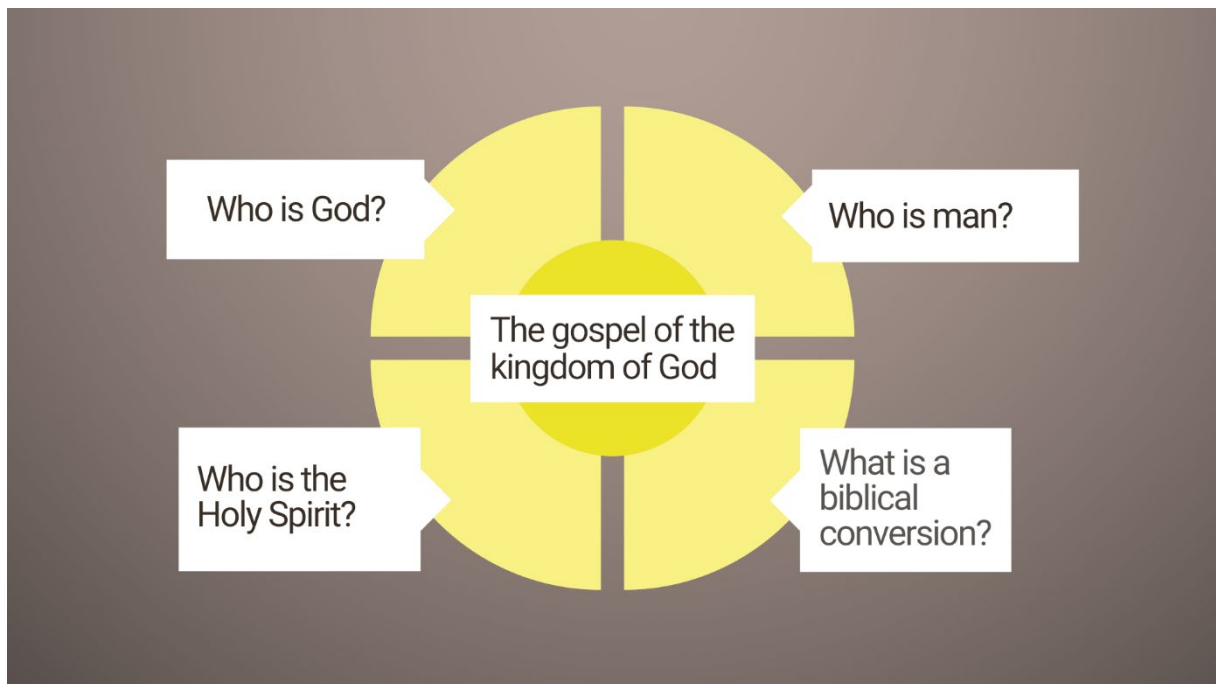
“While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit came on all who heard the message. The circumcised believers who had come with Peter were astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out even on Gentiles. For they heard them speaking in tongues and praising God. Then Peter said, “Surely no one can stand in the way of their being baptized with water. They have received the Holy Spirit just as we have.” So he ordered that they be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they asked Peter to stay with them for a few days.”

Summary:

To proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God means to introduce and testify Jesus to people until they get to know him and trust him – and are saved by faith.

Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God Part II

- The heart in preaching the gospel of the Kingdom of God is to introduce Jesus as Saviour and Lord
- In order to have true biblical new births, we must take four other important parts into account of how to **proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God**
 1. Who is God the Father?
 2. Who are we people?
 3. Who is the Holy Spirit?
 4. How does a true biblical new birth happen?



To **proclaim** these 5 areas of the gospel of the Kingdom of God shortly and clearly, we tell seeking people the history of salvation throughout human history.

Way of salvation: “From Creation to Salvation”

Introduction: The highest God



1 Chronicles 16:25-26

“For great is the Lord and most worthy of praise; he is to be feared above all gods. For all the gods of the nations are idols, but the Lord made the heavens.”

Example:

I would like to tell you a story. This story is from a book called the Bible. People did not invent the Bible. The Bible is the word of the most high God. Its stories are true and trustworthy because they are God's words. There is only one God and he truly is the highest among all gods. He is mightier than all ancestors, every human being, every government and every idol that is worshipped by people. This story is true and trustworthy because it is the word of the most high God.

Summary:

- 1 Chronicles 16:25-28
- It is a true story
- There is only one God
- He is mightier than anyone

1. Creation



Genesis 1:26-27

“Then God said, “Let us make mankind in our image, in our likeness, so that they may rule over the fish in the sea and the birds in the sky, over the livestock and all the wild animals, and over all the creatures that move along the ground.” So God created mankind in his own image, in the image of God he created them; male and female he created them.”

The most high God is the creator. He existed before all things. He created everything that is in Heaven and on earth and is almighty in all things. God created all things only by his spoken word. He spoke and everything came into existence. He created angels to worship him and to serve him. He also created everything we see – the sky, earth, sun, moon and stars, water, oceans, mountains, plants, animals and in the end humans in His image. God created man to enjoy everything he had created. God created everything and he saw that it was very good.

Summary:

- God spoke and created everything
- God created man
- Everything he created was very good

2. God and man together



Genesis 2:16-17

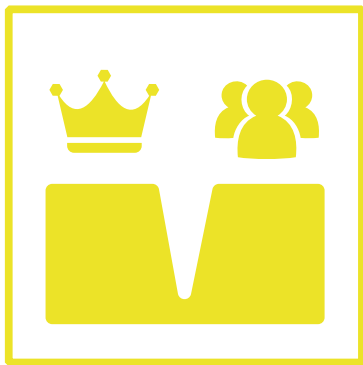
“And the Lord God commanded the man, “You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat from it you will certainly die.”

God placed the man and his wife in a beautiful garden to live there. They had an extraordinary relationship with God and one another. He instructed them to cultivate and to enjoy the garden. He gave them this specific instruction: they could eat from all trees and plants except from the one. If they ate from this one, they would be punished and die. So, at first the man and his wife obeyed God and had an intimate relationship with Him in the garden.

Summary:

- The man and his wife were in one garden
- There was one single rule to be obeyed
- They had an amazing intimate relationship with God

3. Sin and separation



Genesis 3:1-8

"Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the Lord God had made. He said to the woman, 'Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden'?' The woman said to the serpent, 'We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.''" "You will not certainly die," the serpent said to the woman. "For God knows that when you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves. Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the Lord God as he was walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and they hid from the Lord God among the trees of the garden."

Isaiah 59:1-2

"Surely the arm of the Lord is not too short to save, nor his ear too dull to hear. But your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden his face from you, so that he will not hear."

One of the angels God had created was very beautiful and smart. This angel became proud. He wanted to be like God and wanted the other angels to worship him instead of God. Only the most high God deserves all honour and praise. That's why God cast out this angel, now called Satan, with the other angels that had started to follow him (now called demons), from Heaven. One day, Satan deceived the woman to eat a fruit from the forbidden tree. The woman listened to the voice, ate from it and gave her husband to eat from it as well.

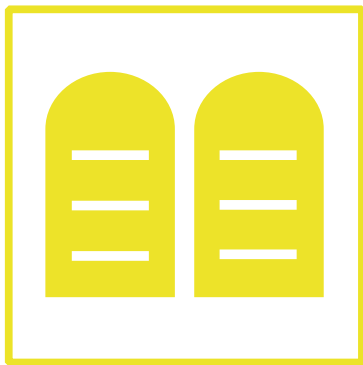
Both disobeyed God's command - this is called sin. God is holy and just. He must punish sin. God had to expel humans from the garden and their relationship to God was broken apart. Humans and God now were separated forever. They had sinned by disobeying God's instructions.

The effect of sin is eternal separation from God – Hell. Humans were created to have an eternal relationship with God but because of this decision against God, eternal life was lost.

Summary:

- Fall of Satan
- Temptation/deception
- The man and his wife were disobedient towards God
- Broken relationship and eternal punishment

4. Commandments



Exodus 20:1-20

“And God spoke all these words:

I am the Lord your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery.

You shall have no other gods before me.

You shall not make for yourself an image in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below.

You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the parents to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.

You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God, for the Lord will not hold anyone guiltless who misuses his name.

Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy.

Six days you shall labour and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the Lord your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your male or female servant, nor your animals, nor any foreigner residing in your towns.

For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy. Honour your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the Lord your God is giving you.

You shall not murder.

You shall not commit adultery.

You shall not steal.

You shall not give false testimony against your neighbour.

You shall not covet your neighbour’s house. You shall not covet your neighbour’s wife, or his male or female servant, his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbour.”

When the people saw the thunder and lightning and heard the trumpet and saw the mountain in smoke, they trembled with fear. They stayed at a distance and said to Moses, “Speak to us yourself and we will listen. But do not have God speak to us or we will die.”

Moses said to the people, Do not be afraid. God has come to test you, so that the fear of God will be with you to keep you from sinning.”

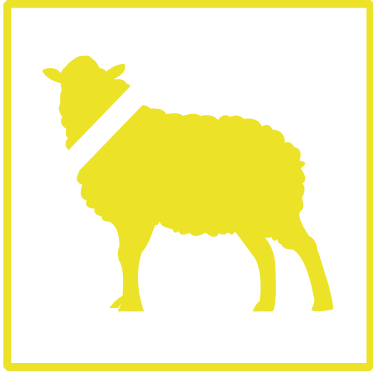
1. I am the Lord your God...you shall have no other gods before me.
2. You shall not make yourself an image...Do not worship them and do not serve them
3. You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God
4. Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy
5. You shall honour your father and your mother
6. You shall not murder
7. You shall not commit adultery
8. You shall not steal
9. You shall not give false testimony against your neighbour
10. You shall not covet your neighbour's house

After a while, people multiplied on the earth. Still God loved them dearly and wanted a relationship with them. He gave them 10 commandments they were to obey. Remember: God is perfect and holy – that's why in order to live with him, we are supposed to be perfect and holy as well. The 10 commandments teach us humans how we can live a good relationship with God and other people. They were instructions like: don't worship and serve other gods, honour your parents, don't lie, don't steal, don't murder and don't commit adultery. But nobody was able to obey to all these commands.

Summary:

- People multiplied on the earth
- God still loved them
- He gave them the 10 commandments
- Nobody was completely obedient

5. Sacrifice



Hebrews 9:22

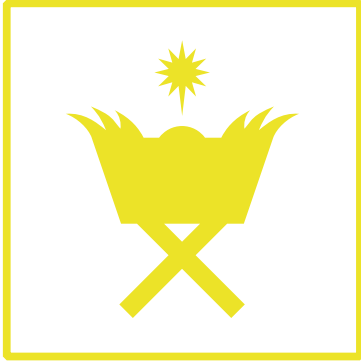
"In fact, the law requires that nearly everything be cleansed with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness."

After they had sinned, God made a way for them to deal with their offense. He required them to bring Him a blood sacrifice to carry their sins away. This sacrifice meant to shed the blood of a perfect animal, e.g. of a lamb. When they turned away from their sins and brought the sacrifice, God would forgive his people by letting the animal die in their place. Only by the shedding of blood can people's sins can be forgiven. But God's people continued to sin and the sin offering turned into a ritual instead of a matter of the heart. God became tired of their insincere actions and so people were still separated from God. We can never come to God out of our own strength – no matter what we do.

Summary:

- God prepared a way for repentance, the turning away from our sins to God
- Sacrifice must be made for the forgiveness of sins.
- Blood offerings quickly turned into insincere outward rituals

6. God sends Jesus



John 3:16

“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”

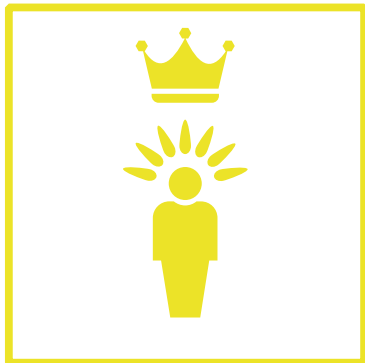
God loves people and seeks a relationship of love and trust with them. So, God decided to send them the perfect way for them to enter back into relationship with him. God sent Jesus to show us the way back to him.

Who is Jesus? Jesus is the Son of God, his only true Son. He became human like us: God of flesh and blood. Jesus, the Son of God.

Summary:

- God loves people
- A perfect way was necessary
- Jesus was God in flesh and blood

7. Jesus, the Son of God



Acts 10:36-43

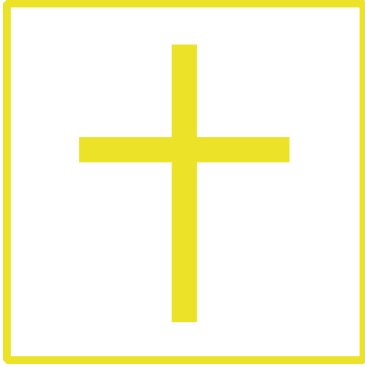
1. Jesus Christ brings peace and reconciliation with God
2. Jesus Christ is LORD
3. Jesus of Nazareth had the Holy Spirit and moved in the Holy Spirit
4. Jesus of Nazareth had and moved in supernatural divine power
5. Jesus does good works
6. Jesus can heal/healed all and released all that were captive
7. Jesus died on the cross for our sins
8. Jesus is alive and works today
9. Jesus is chosen by God as our judge
10. We must trust Jesus in order to receive forgiveness and salvation

Even though Jesus lived as a human, he resisted all temptation. He didn't sin and remained obedient to God at all times. Jesus had a great compassion for all people, especially for the ones that didn't have hope. He was a wise teacher. He performed many miracles that proved that he was the Son of God. Jesus had authority over natural powers, diseases, evil spirits and even death.

Summary:

- Jesus:
 - never sinned
 - did miracles
 - had authority over all things

8. Jesus, the sacrifice



Acts 2:22-23

"Fellow Israelites, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth was a man accredited by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know. This man was handed over to you by God's deliberate plan and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, put him to death by nailing him to the cross."

John 1:29

"The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, "Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!"

Many people loved Jesus. They believed and followed him. But some religious leaders hated Jesus and were jealous, so they made plans to kill him. Jesus was ready to be arrested and to be sentenced to death. He was beaten and mocked. Soldiers nailed him to the cross.

A cross consists of two bars of wood that are built together. They took his hands and feet and nailed him there. Blood flowed out of his hands and feet down his body. He suffered great pain and died on the cross.

Because Jesus never sinned, He was a perfect blood sacrifice. He didn't deserve to die, but God sent him to die on the cross for the sin of all people. Only through his blood offering God was ready to forgive all our sins.

Summary:

- Jesus:
 - was treated wrongfully
 - suffered willingly
 - died on the cross
 - was the perfect sacrifice, once for all

9. Resurrection



Luke 24:46-47

"He told them, 'This is what is written: The Messiah will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, and repentance for the forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.'"

The death of Jesus shows God's great love for us. But his story doesn't end there! After Jesus died, he was put into a safe tomb. On the third day after his death, he rose from the dead and showed himself to his followers. He proved his power over death. He returned to his Father in Heaven. Jesus took all our deserved punishment upon himself. He created a way back to a relationship with the Father.

Summary:

- Jesus:
 - died and was put into a tomb
 - has power over death
 - restored the way back to the Father

10. Jesus sends the Holy Spirit



John 15:26

"When the Advocate comes, whom I will send to you from the Father—the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father—he will testify about me."

Romans 8:9-11

"You, however, are not in the realm of the flesh but are in the realm of the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, they do not belong to Christ. But if Christ is in you, then even though your body is subject to death because of sin, the Spirit gives life because of righteousness. And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies because of his Spirit who lives in you."

Acts 1:8

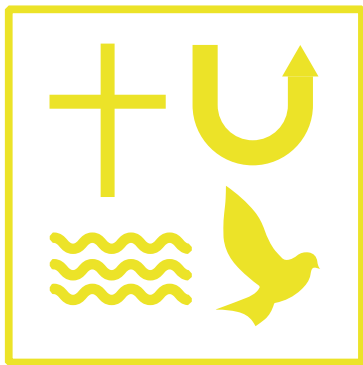
"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

There's an exchange of people. Jesus returned to the Father after his death and resurrection. Then Jesus and his Father sent the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit brings Jesus in his spiritual form back into our hearts. Very practically, the Holy Spirit brings the life and the power of Jesus into our lives.

Summary:

- After Jesus had gone back to the Father, they sent the Holy Spirit to us
- The Holy Spirit brings the life of Jesus to us -> Romans 8:9-11
- The Holy Spirit brings the power of Jesus to us -> Acts 1:8

11. Faith, repentance, baptism in water and Holy Spirit



Acts 2:37-38

"When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, 'Brothers, what shall we do?' Peter replied, 'Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.'"

Acts 16:30-31

"He then brought them out and asked, 'Sirs, what must I do to be saved?' They replied, 'Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household.'"

To experience a true new birth, we need 4 things:

1. **Faith:** God wants you and your family to turn to God. Jesus is the perfect offering and the only way to restore our lost relationship to the only God. Jesus said: "I am the way, the truth and the life. No one can come to the Father but through me." You must "go through Jesus", in order to return into a relationship with God. You must believe that Jesus died instead of you. You put your trust 100% in Jesus that he will bring you to God to give you an eternal life as his son or daughter. From this moment on you, let God be your Master and obey to his word.
2. **Repentance:** How can you go **to** Jesus? You must give up and admit that you have sinned against God and you must repent (recognize sin and sins, confess, leave them and live a new, righteous, holy life).
3. **Baptism in water:** If you really believe that Jesus is alive and trust him, then you will bring all your sin to him. Then you want to be baptized in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit for the remission of your sins. Repentance can happen directly before baptism or at the same time.
4. **Baptism of the Holy Spirit:** When faith, repentance and baptism have happened, then the baptism of the Holy Spirit is a simple last step. As soon as faith arises, repentance, baptism and the baptism of the Holy Spirit can happen directly after another or even all at the same time. This step empowers you to live a holy, righteous life and operate in the power of the Spirit, not just working by the flesh to attain righteousness.

12. His Kingdom



Matthew 28:18-20

“Then Jesus came to them and said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

2 Corinthians 5:10

“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each of us may receive what is due us for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.”

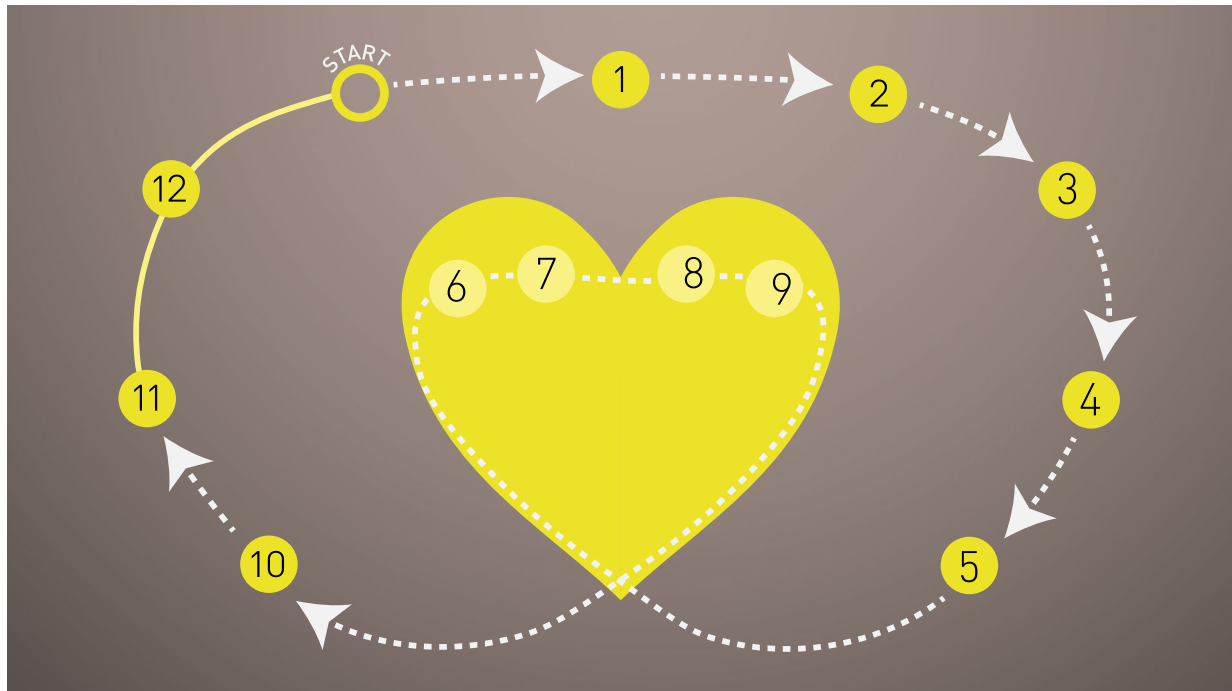
Jesus continues his work around the world today through his Spirit and his followers. God has chosen one day, when Jesus will return in all his glory to the earth to judge all people righteously. He will welcome all his followers and will turn away from the ones who rejected him. His kingdom will have no end. Until that time, it's his followers' job description to pray and to play a part in God's plan, so that his Kingdom can advance and his will be done on earth as it is in Heaven. We are called to carry the good news of Jesus to everyone around us and to serve him in all we think, say and do.

Summary:

- Matthew 28:18-20/ 2 Corinthians 5:10
- Jesus works in and through us
- Jesus will return as King and Lord
- We can share Jesus with others

Note:

If we preach to Muslims, it's important not to start preaching from the middle (Jesus), but with creation, like here in this version of creation to salvation. For Muslims, Jesus is just a prophet and not the lamb of God. In the context of sacrifice, it's more understandable who Jesus is.



Start: the most high God

1. Creation
2. God and man together
3. Sin and separation
4. Commandments
5. Sacrifice
6. God sends Jesus
7. Jesus, the Son of God
8. Jesus, the sacrifice
9. Resurrection
10. Jesus sends the Holy Spirit
11. Faith, Repentance, Baptism in water, Receiving the Holy Spirit
12. His Kingdom

Application

- Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- Group discussion.
- Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

Task: Learn the introduction (the most high God) and the 12 steps “from creation to salvation” by heart and Bible verses.

- d) Write down and present the way of salvation from creation to salvation by heart to your ministry partner or your group.

[illegible]

- e) Each group present, what they have learned as well what they will implement.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

- | | | |
|----|--|--------------------------|
| 1. | PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 2. | GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 3. | PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 4. | SHARE – the way of salvation | <input type="checkbox"/> |

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

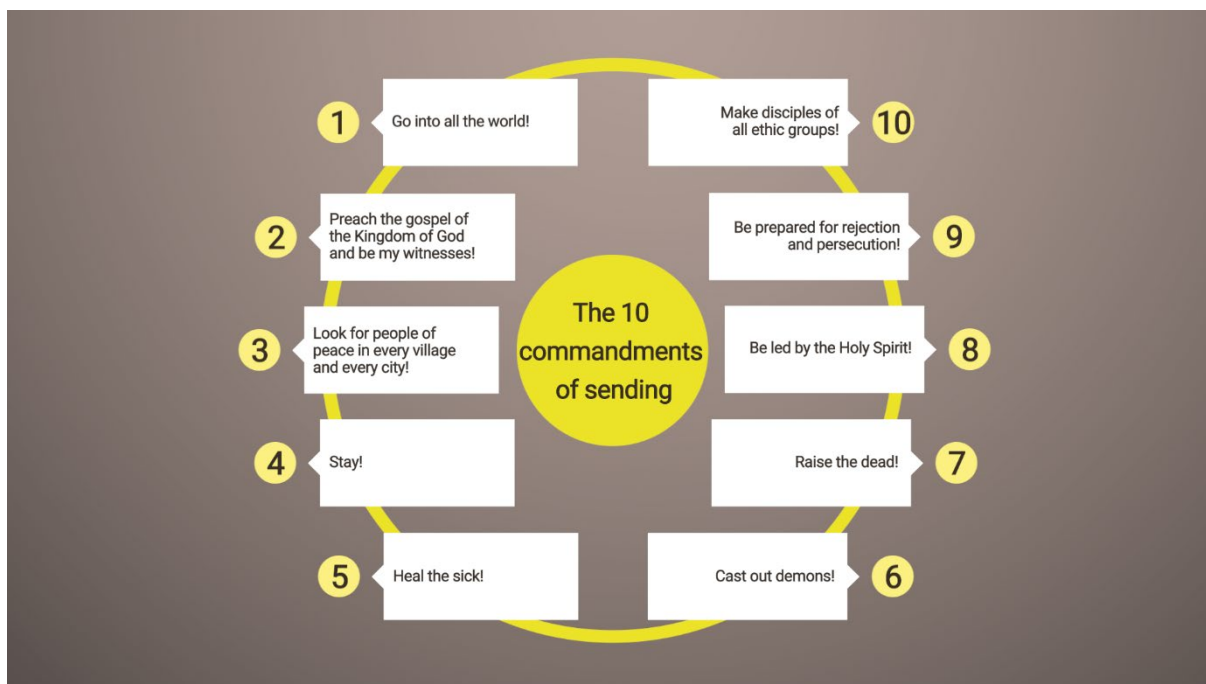


Training Unit 10

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending: Preach III: Repentance, Baptism: In water and Holy Spirit

We went through the whole process of a the four main steps within a biblical new birth in lesson 3. The topic is so essential that's why we go through it again in this lesson.



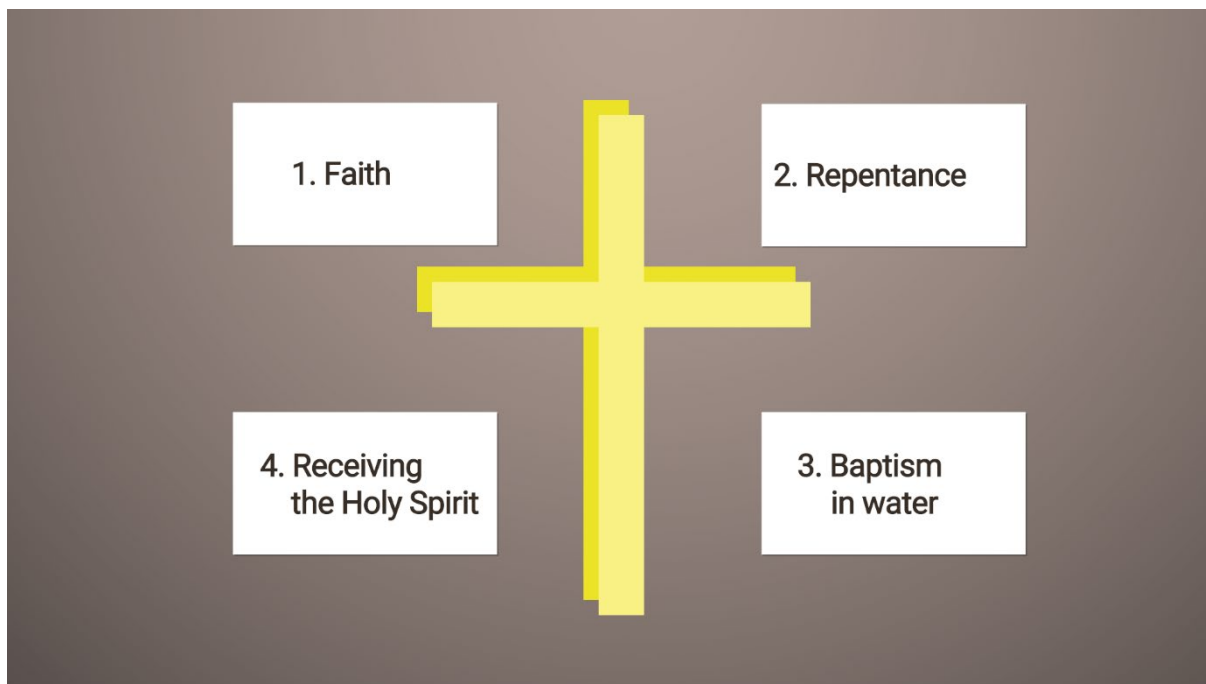
Faith, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit are practical steps.

The process from unbelief to belief is the most central experience a person can ever go through in his/her life. In the New Testament, this experience is described in different ways:

Different terms on the way from unbelief to belief

1. **Turn to God:** Turning away from sin – repentance and entering the way of following Jesus
2. **Go from the Kingdom of darkness** and enter the Kingdom of his beloved Son Jesus
3. **Made righteous:** We are guilty and should be punished, but through the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross, our guilt was cancelled
4. **Renewal of our minds**
5. **Salvation:** HE saved us from the power of darkness into his marvellous light
6. **Become a new creature** = The old has passed away, everything has become new
7. **Become a follower of Christ**
8. **Put on Christ**, which means to receive him
9. **Become children of God**, which means to believe in him and receive the right to be called his children
10. **Be born again:** an entirely new life begins within us.

4 main steps within a biblical new birth



4 main steps of a biblical new birth compared with a natural human birth:

1. **Spiritually: Faith** → **Naturally:** Human seed creates after nine months → Life.
2. **Spiritually: Repentance** → **Naturally:** When the time is ripe, birth takes place → During birth washing takes place.
3. **Spiritually: Baptism** → Water → **Naturally:** Wash away.
4. **Spiritually: Baptism/Receiving the Holy Spirit** → **Naturally:** Change of the respiratory system, the child breathes on its own and cries → Life now runs independently.

Very important: This process of a new birth must happen thoroughly and deeply!

1. Faith

Faith is a mystery → assurance in the heart

It's like in human relationships – for example, you are on a train and talk to a stranger and suddenly you feel familiar with the person, as though you've known each other for years.

- **It's an assurance of the heart, a trust**
- **We must hear the Gospel and faith will be established in our hearts.**

Development of faith

Miracles can't create a faith in salvation but only a faith in miracle but they can create an openness.

Example: New birth of a former atheist in Russia

Three days after her wedding, this atheist person had a car accident in which her leg was crushed. In the hospital, they stiffened her leg, because otherwise they would have had to remove it. Then this atheist with a stiffened leg came to an evangelistic meeting, where she heard the Gospel. She protested aloud against the Gospel. As she stood up and was cursing, suddenly the healing power of God touched her leg and she was totally healed. Immediately, she gave her life to Jesus.

Faith – PISTIS – has two parts:

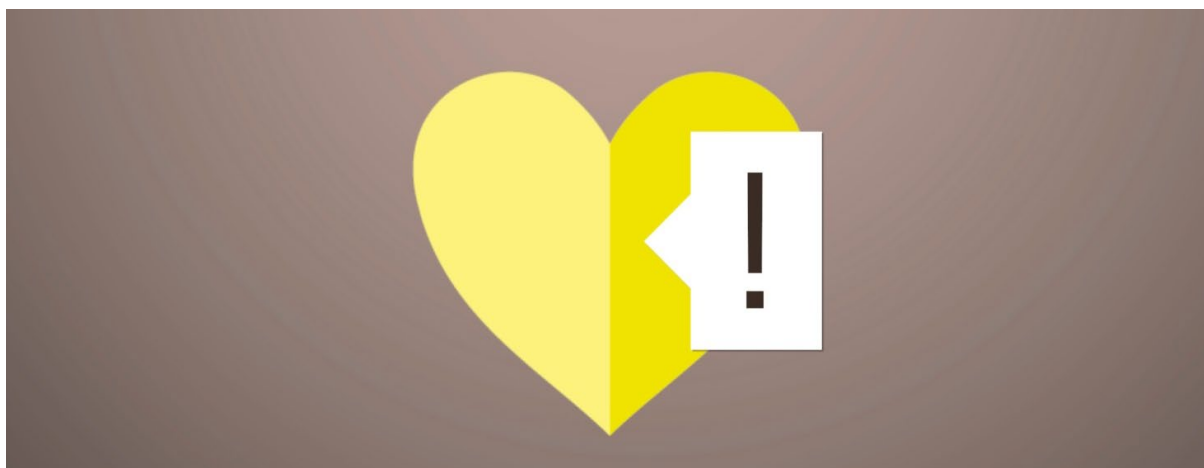
1. **Trust** → Jesus as Saviour, healer, and deliverer
2. **Obedience** → To Jesus as Lord and King

Practically: Proclaim the God's word as long as necessary, until people have faith in their hearts.

Faith comes by hearing the word of God! Experiences with the power of the Holy Spirit are or can be a huge catalyst for people to make a decision for Jesus.

→ When faith is there, the second step comes:

2. Repentance



Repentance is a matter of the heart and should not happen in a religious or mechanical way, but through faith. This means that we have to preach repentance. Through this we have certainty (faith) and therefore know in our hearts, that we are lost, need to and want to repent. When preaching "from Creation to Salvation" we speak about the topic of repentance for the first time. We explain how sin came into the world and the consequences of sin (3. sin and separation). In the next point (4. the commandments) we explain the moral sins. We also speak about the worst sin that we all committed "that they do not believe in me" John 16:8. The process of preaching goes step by step. It can vary in duration. We preach until faith in Jesus arises in the hearts of people. Sometimes giving testimony only once is enough, sometimes we preach 20-30 times over weeks. When faith is in the hearts, the other three steps (repentance, baptism, receiving the Holy Spirit) happen quickly within 24 hours. When faith is in the hearts, we speak deeply about repentance again until the people repent through faith. We go through the process of conversion step by step. Each step by faith until the conversion is complete.

In our hearts we recognize that we are sinners:

1. The sin of not trusting in God
2. The sins of breaking his commandments

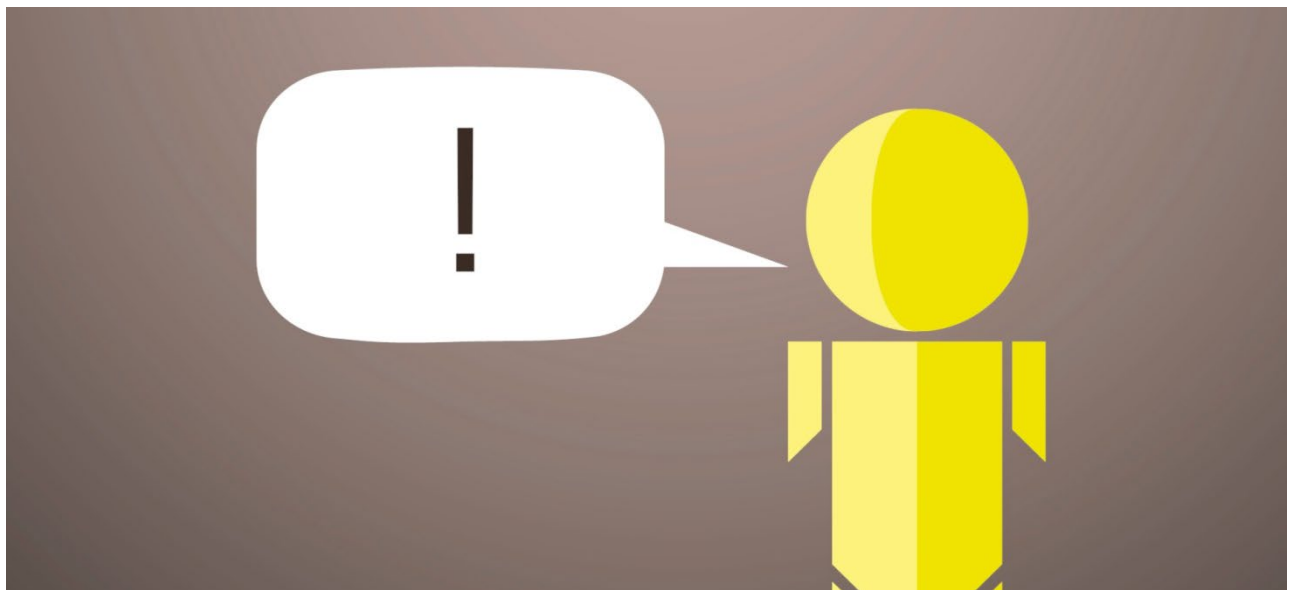
Questions: Do we trust in Jesus and are ready to willingly and joyfully repent and turn away from the old life?

Thought: Not the recognition of all sin but at least recognition of some sin must exist. At least: *the* sin that we didn't trust Jesus as our Lord and Saviour and some recognition of our moral sins must exist. Besides the original sin of mistrust/unbelief against God (John 16:9), there are more than 100 named moral sins in the bible. Many among them are listed in so called "sin lists".

Bible passages with sin lists

- Matthew 22:38 (the greatest Commandment)
- Exodus 20:1-17 (10 Commandments)
- Matthew 15:19
- Romans 1:24-31
- 1 Corinthians 6:9-10
- Galatians 5:17-21
- Revelation 21:8

Repentance: With the mouth



- If faith exists
- Give time to prove the heart

The process of repentance includes at least three areas:

1. Recognizing, confessing and laying down our sins (*the* sin (unbelief) and moral sins).
2. Deliverance from addictions and demonic ties.
3. Forgiveness

1 John 1:8-9

If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

Psalms 139:23-24

Search me, God, and know my heart; test me and know my anxious thoughts. See if there is any offensive way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

- ⇒ We must recognize sin in our own hearts.
- ⇒ Confess the sins to the Lord, by yourself or together with the person leading you.
- ⇒ Ask Jesus and the Father in heaven for forgiveness and to cleanse you from all sin: take time to really turn away from the old life and repent for what you've done wrong.
 - ➔ What is clarified here properly won't be a topic later in discipleship.
- ⇒ When we really declare the sins we recognized in our hearts with our mouth and ask for forgiveness,
- ⇒ Then the Lord promises that he will forgive all our sins. But not only the sins we can remember and declared with our mouths – but he cleanses us from **all unrighteousness!**
- ⇒ So, our sin is gone forever and the Lord will never think of it again

Jeremiah 31:34

...No longer will they teach their neighbour, or say to one another, 'Know the Lord,' because they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest," declares the Lord. "For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more."

Fruit of repentance



Acts 26:20

First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and then to the Gentiles, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and demonstrate their repentance by their deeds.

To repent means:

- To recognize sin in our hearts.
- To confess the sin to the Lord, possibly together with someone else.
- Compensate, where necessary.

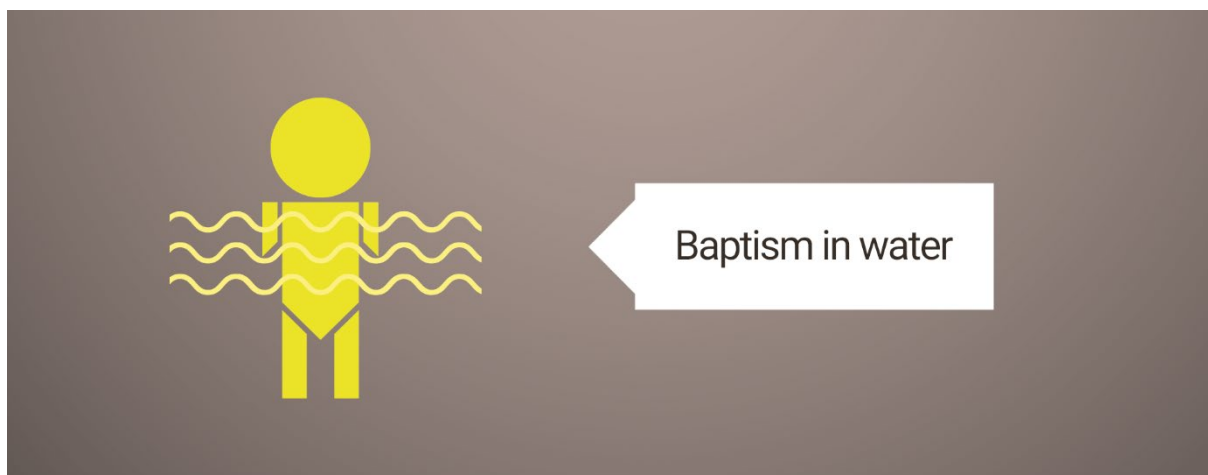
Luke 19:8

But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord, "Look, Lord! Here and now I give half of my possessions to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody out of anything, I will pay back four times the amount."

- Stop sinning and begin walking the ways of the Lord and obeying his commandments.

3. Water baptism

Immediately after repentance, the next step of the conversion follows: baptism. The principle is the same "by grace through faith". We preach baptism and the commandment of Jesus to baptize until there is faith for baptism in the hearts of the people. Then we baptize immediately. Faith and repentance are the two requirements for baptism. Nothing should hinder us from baptizing now. In the 10 biblical reports about baptism, the maximum time between repentance and baptism is 24 hours.

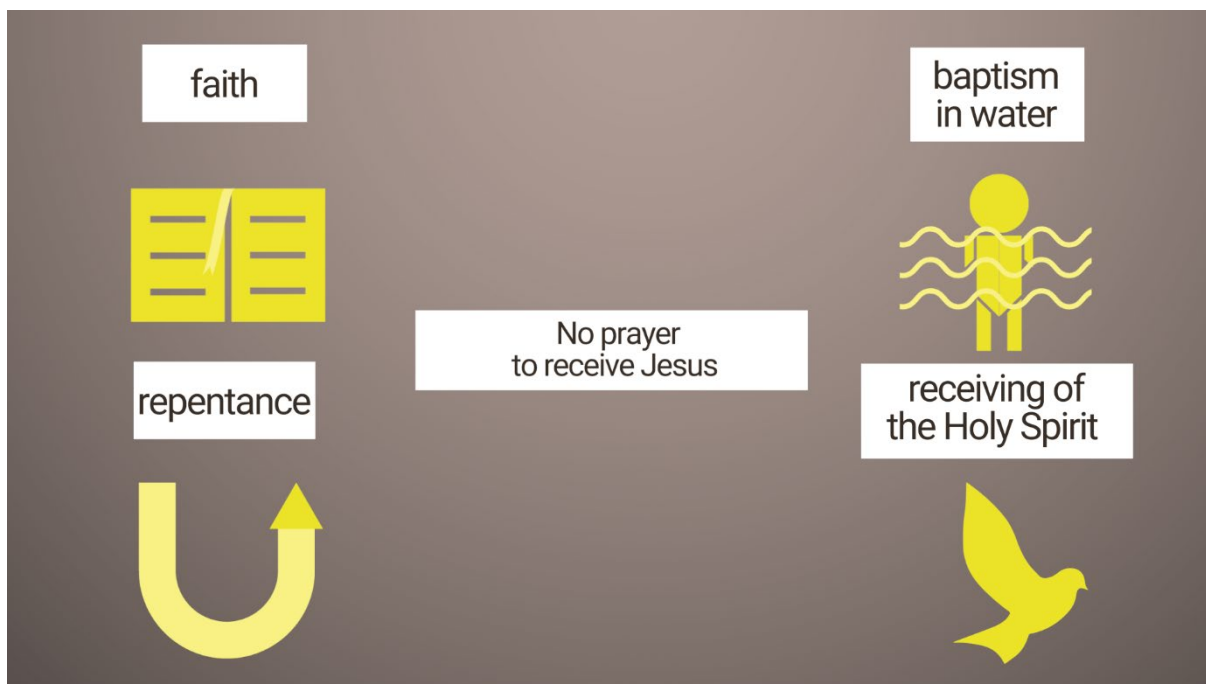
**Matthew 28:18-20**

*Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, **baptizing** them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."*

The sent ones baptize the disciples:

Baptism is an execution of the new birth and a clear sign of decision – **not** a sign of maturity. Baptism is an expression of our willingness to have a change of government within our lives.

In the New Testament, there is no such a thing as a sinner's prayer → the reception of salvation (faith, repentance and obedience) was not declared by a salvation prayer but through baptism.



1. Faith
2. Repentance
3. Baptism
4. Receiving the Holy Spirit

Baptism is the execution

Baptism is the external expression of what happens inside.
Compare with the prescription of a property.

- 1) Of repentance
- 2) Of the death to the old nature/life without Jesus as Lord and Saviour
- 3) Of the resurrection of the new man to a new eternal life freely given by Jesus under the government of King Jesus and as a part of his worldwide body

Or in other words: by being baptized, repentance and faith (as a trust in Jesus as Saviour and obedience to Jesus as Lord and King) are exercised/carried out.

These three aspects (named above) are also exercised within baptism:

- 1) In the same way the water covers us and cleanses us, we are covered by the blood of Jesus

Acts 2:38

Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

Ephesians 5:26

...to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word

1 Peter 3:21

and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also—not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a clear conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ,

- 2) Just as the body is submersed into the water backwards, the old nature is buried with Jesus Christ.

Romans 6:3-4

Or don't you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.

- 3) Just as the body rises up from the water, we will rise up as a part of his worldwide body to a new eternal life freely given under the government of King Jesus.

Colossians 2:12

Having been buried with him in baptism, in which you were also raised with him through your faith in the working of God, who raised him from the dead.

In all of the 10 extensively described new births in the book of Acts, people were immediately baptized. The new births were always executed with water baptism.

The practice of baptism shall be described here in the form of Q & A catalogue:

1. Who can be baptized?

New believers: As soon someone hears the Gospel and has faith in his heart to be saved, he/she shall repent and be baptized, as a sign of the remission of the sins.

2. Who should baptize?

Normally, the one who led the person to faith. This could be a pastor, an evangelist or a follower of Christ without a specific ministry. It could be a man or a woman, a younger or older person, a new believer or a follower of Christ for years.

3. When should someone be baptized?

Every person in the book of acts except for Paul was baptized in water the same day they were saved. The shorter the time between when someone comes to faith and the baptism, the better. Baptism strengthens the decision to follow Jesus passionately.

4. Where should the baptism take place?

Wherever there's water!

5. How can someone be baptized?

By submerging the person under water.

6. What spiritual conditions need to be met, for someone to be baptized?

Faith and repentance.

7. How can we prove if these conditions – faith and repentance – are met?

By asking the person who wants to be baptized. He/she will make a declaration.

Romans 10:9-10

If you declare with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved.

Questioning for the baptism:

- Do you have decided to follow Jesus and him alone?
- Do you know in your heart that Jesus forgave you of all your sins?
- Do you declare that you want to follow Jesus and that you won't turn away from him?
- Do you want to follow Jesus – even if you are mocked, persecuted or killed?

Questioning for the baptism:

“Do you declare through your baptism that Jesus Christ forgave all your sins and do you also declare that through baptism you want to bury your old life and rise to your new life with Christ as your Saviour?” **“YES!”**

“According to YOUR declaration, I baptize you in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit!”

8. Should a person that was baptized as a little baby be re-baptized?

Yes, because the so-called children's baptism is not a biblical baptism but rather a blessing or a proclamation.

9. Is there a minimum age to be baptized?

No. As soon as there is real faith and repentance in the heart someone can be baptized.

10. Should “backsliders” be re-baptized after a new beginning in following Jesus?

No. In that case one could possibly do a renewal-ceremony. “One” Lord, “one” faith, “one” baptism! (Ephesians 4:5)

11. How do you practically baptize someone?

- It's easier when two people baptize together.
- The person to be baptized stands, kneels or sits in the water and is submerged backwards under water (symbol of burying someone). The person can hold his/her nose.
- The person to be baptized stands in the water and is baptized by being submerged under water.
- If there is little water or there are no creeks, lakes or rivers, the person can be baptized in a bath tub, barrel or a pot, etc.
- If you are in the water together with the person to be baptized, you can remain silent for a while to give time for the person to focus and to prove his/her heart again. The person either repented before or now is the time to repent from his/her old life.
- After that, the baptism questioning follows: “Do you declare through your baptism that Jesus Christ forgave all your sins and do you also declare that through baptism you want to bury your old life and rise to your new life with Christ as your Saviour, Lord and King?” **“YES!”**

“According to YOUR declaration, I baptize you in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit!”

12. Must the baptism happen in public, semi-public or in secret?

Baptism is not primarily an act of a public testimony, but rather an execution of the new birth and a sign for the decision to follow Christ, as well as the expression of the change of spiritual government in life. So, it's possible to use baptism in public as a testimony, but sometimes it's wise to execute a baptism semi-public or in secret.

What happens directly after the baptism?

If the three steps of a biblical conversion (faith, repentance baptism) happened, the conditions are fulfilled to receive the Holy Spirit through faith.

4. Receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit

The fourth and last step happens like all others, by grace through faith. This means that while we preach about the receiving of the Holy Spirit, faith is arising in the receiver's heart that he/she will receive everything Jesus promised, including the Holy Spirit.

Acts 2:38

Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

Galatians 3:14b

...so that by faith we might receive the promise of the Spirit.

Acts 19:1-7

While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul took the road through the interior and arrived at Ephesus. There he found some disciples and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?" They answered, "No, we have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." So Paul asked, "Then what baptism did you receive?" "John's baptism," they replied. Paul said, "John's baptism was a baptism of repentance. He told the people to believe in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus." On hearing this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied. There were about twelve men in all.

- ⇒ Jesus is the one that baptizes with the Holy Spirit – nobody else!
- ⇒ Every person who wants to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit, must look to Jesus and trust him that he/she will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit **now**.
- ⇒ To support the reception, we lay hands on the baptized people.
- ⇒ Pray in great faith for the reception/baptism of the Holy Spirit.

Luke 11:10-13

For everyone who asks receives; the one who seeks finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. "Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

Matthew 7:9-11

"Which of you, if your son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!"

We give space and expect that receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit will be an unmistakable experience for our freshly baptized person.

Verbal manifestations upon baptism in the spirit seen in scripture:

- Praise God and His great marvellous works
- Pray in tongues
- Call God our beloved "Abba", our beloved father: proclamation that God himself is my father
- Give testimony for the Lord Jesus Christ
- Receive and declare prophetic messages

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

Task:

In a role play you lead your partner to faith:

- A) Share who Jesus is**
- B) Explain the way of salvation**
- C) Then, prove if faith exists**
- D) Lead the act of repentance**
- E) Carry out a baptism**
- F) Prayer for the reception/baptism of the Holy Spirit. Give space, so the gift of the Holy Spirit can be an unmistakable experience for the person – in other words a manifestation of the tongue.**

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner ☐
2. GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart ☐
3. PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
4. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐

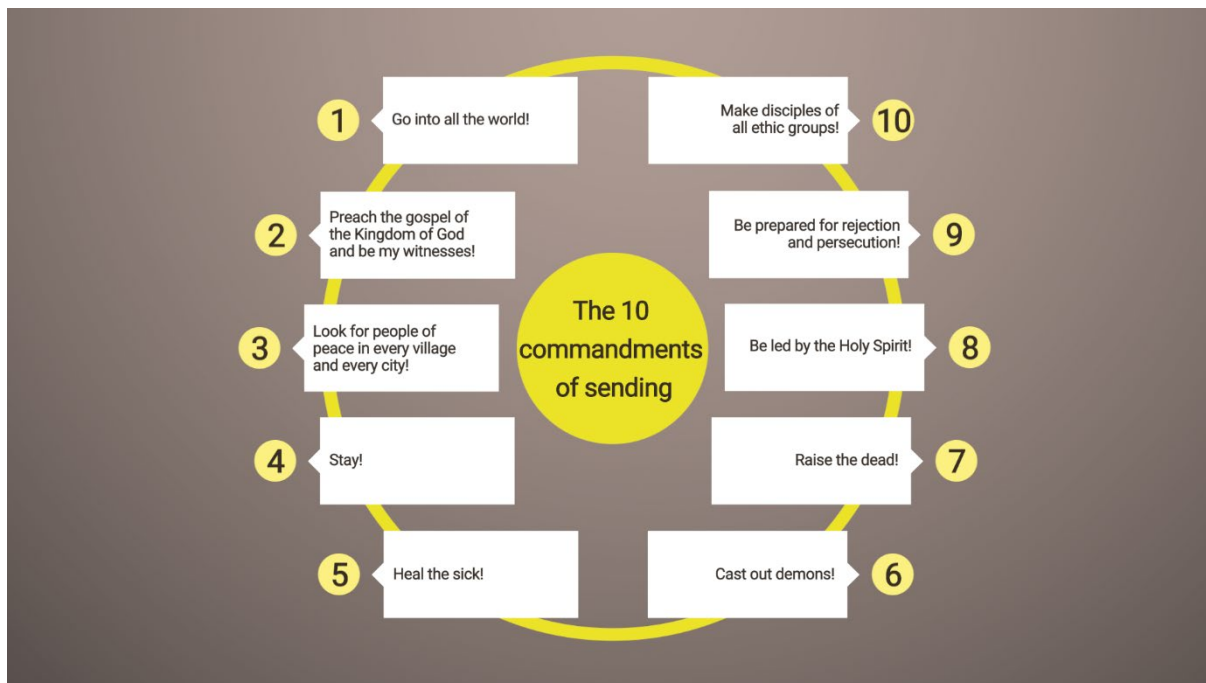
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 11

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending: Preach IV: The call to repentance into following Jesus Christ



The call to repentance and into following Jesus Christ

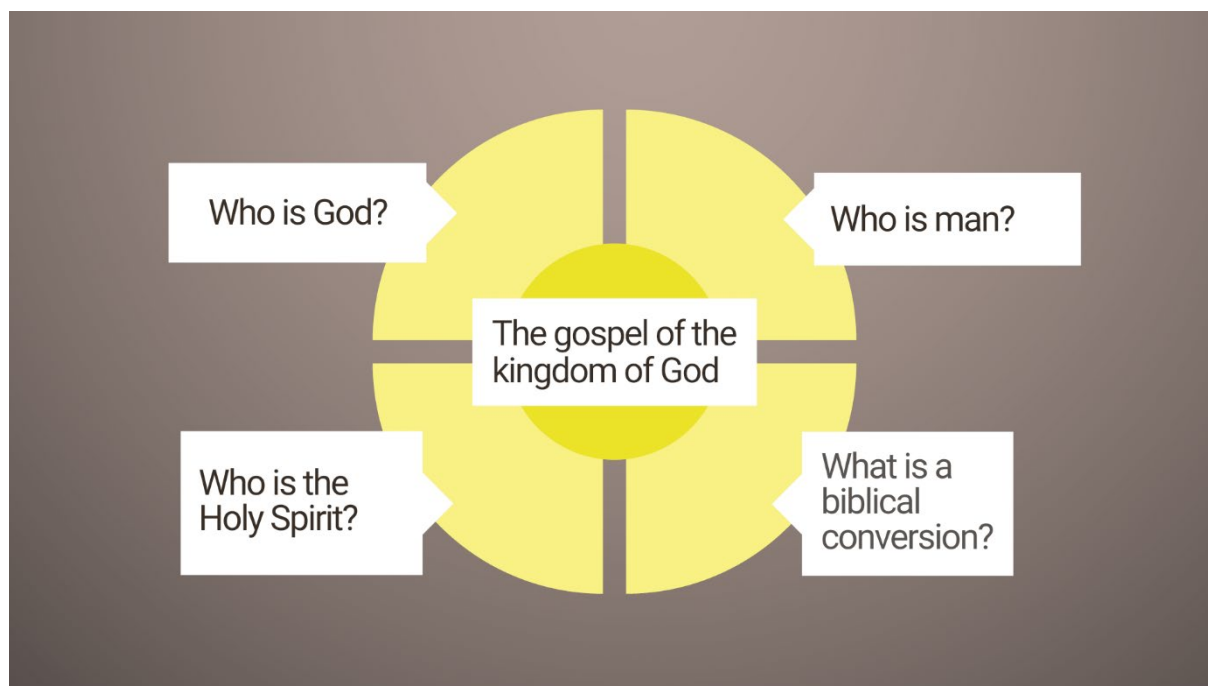
Within the entire ministry of sending the proclamation of the gospel of the Kingdom of God is central and probably the most important part.

- Because only a clear proclamation of the gospel of the Kingdom of God creates **faith**.
- Because only the clear proclamation of the gospel of the Kingdom of God produces **clear decisions** for Christ.
- Because only a **clear decision** for Christ builds a solid foundation to make a person a **healthy disciple of Jesus**.

Summary proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God

The gospel of the Kingdom of God

- The **Gospel** means: Through his death on the cross, Jesus is the Savior of the world



- **Gospel of the Kingdom of God** means:
 - Jesus reigns as King
 - His royal dominion is accepted
 - His will is done
 - His commandments (new commandments of Jesus) are obeyed and lived out

➔ **Gospel of the Kingdom of God therefore means to proclaim:**

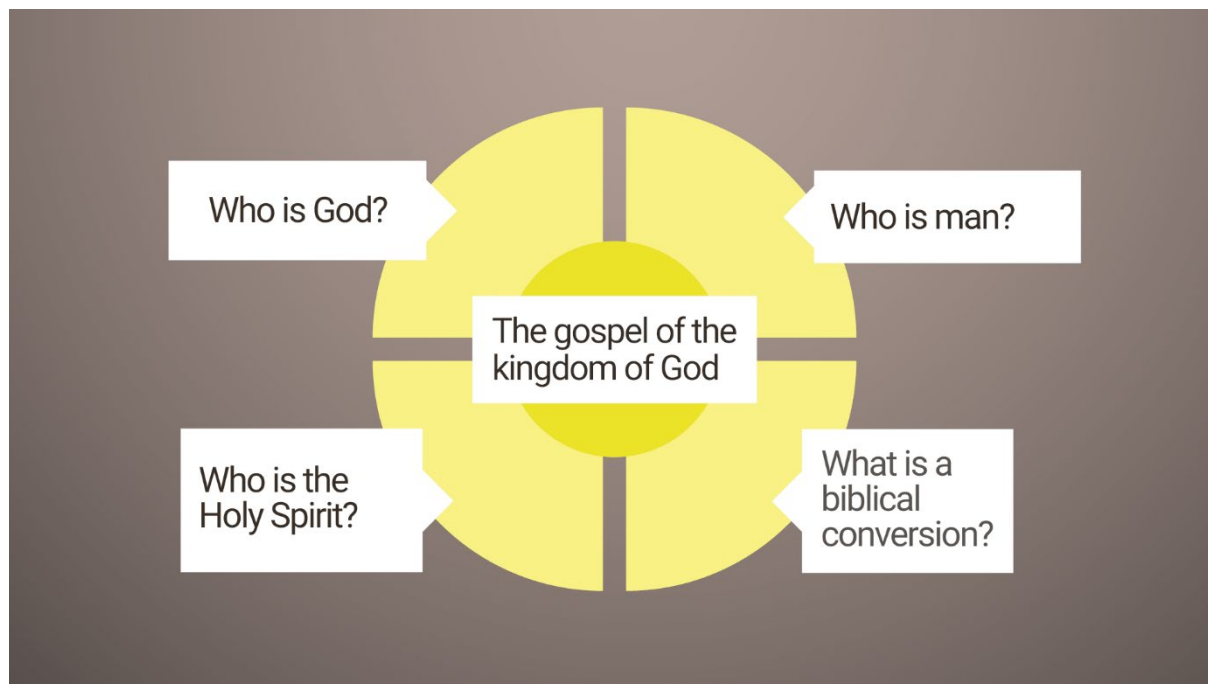
- Jesus as Saviour and
- Jesus as Lord and King

Summary part II: Proclaim From Creation to Salvation

The core part of the proclamation of the gospel of the Kingdom of God is to introduce JESUS as Saviour and Lord. To have true biblical new births, we must take four other important parts into account of how to **proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God**

- A) Who is God?
- B) Who are we humans?
- C) Who is the Holy Spirit?
- D) What does a biblical new birth mean?

The five areas of the Gospel



In order to proclaim these five areas of the gospel of the Kingdom of God shortly and clearly, we tell seeking people the story of salvation throughout human history. From Creation to Salvation.

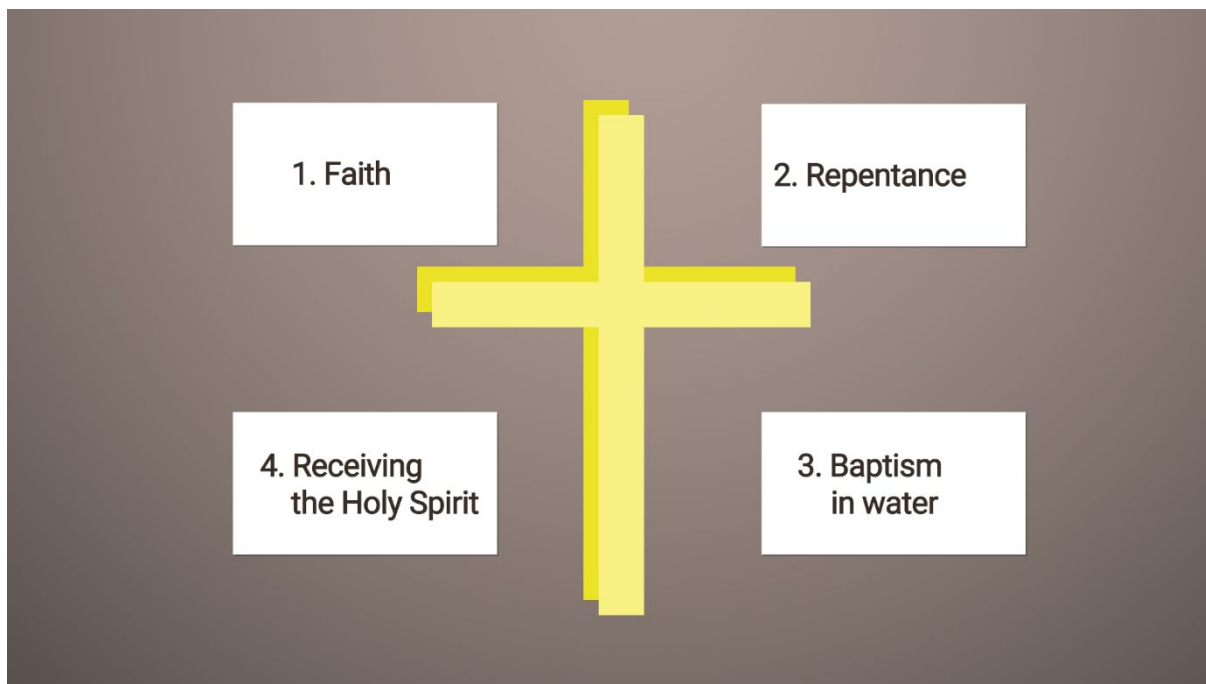
Summary Part III: Faith, repentance, baptism, receiving of the Holy Spirit

The process from unbelief to belief is the most central experience a person can ever go through in his/her life. In the New Testament, this experience is described in different ways

Different terms during and after the change of spiritual government

1. Turn to God, away from old nature
2. Go from the Kingdom of darkness and enter the Kingdom of His Son Jesus Christ
3. Made righteous
4. Renewal of the mind
5. Salvation
6. Become a new creature
7. Become a follower of Christ
8. Put on Christ, which means to receive Him entirely
9. Become children of God
10. Be born again (new birth)

4 main steps of a true biblical new birth



The call to repentance and into following Christ

The call for repentance and into following Christ belongs to a **true proclamation of the gospel of God's Kingdom**. The call into following Christ is also a call into discipleship (make disciples of all ethnic groups).

Disciples in the New Testament:

- ⇒ **The twelve** who are constantly around Jesus
- ⇒ Furthermore, another circle of his followers: **the seventy-two**
- ⇒ And all who were honestly and thoroughly open to the teaching, life and ministry of Jesus
- ⇒ The book of Acts chapter 11 says that in Antioch the disciples were called "Christians" for the very first time
- ⇒ In the book of Acts and later, all who believe in Jesus Christ are called **disciples**

When faith arose in people's hearts, they were called to express their faith following specific steps of faith:

How and why were they “called”?

This call is a very important truth. For this reason, this truth is expressed in several different pictures and words throughout the Bible:

- **Call** into following Christ: Mark 10: Come and follow me...
- **Invitation to a (wedding) celebration:** Wedding celebration in Matthew 22: Everything is ready; come to the wedding! Or in Luke 15: The story of the return of the prodigal son. There his father went out and asked the elder son to also participate in the celebration of the younger son's return.
- **Invitation for a guest banquet:** Luke 14: Come! Everything is ready – come in so my house would be filled!
- **DIRECT invitation to Jesus:** Matthew 11: Come to me, you who are weary and burdened and I will give you rest!
- **Request to choose between life and death** in Deuteronomy 30: Heaven and earth are my witnesses that I gave you the choice between life and death, between blessing and curse. Choose life so you and your children will not perish.
- Call to choose **the right path** in Matthew 7: Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it.
- **Receive JESUS into his/her house** in Luke 19: Zacchaeus come down fast, I need to be your guest in your house tonight.
- **Receive JESUS into the heart** in John 1: How many among them who received him, he gave them the right to be called children of God.
- **Call or demand to become born again** in John 3: You must be born again.
- **Call of a shepherd to his sheep** in John 10: My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me. I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one will snatch them out of my hand.

How and for what purpose were people called, invited or demanded through the disciples and the Apostles in the book of Acts?

- Peter in Acts 2, at Pentecost, when he saw that people started to believe in Jesus, whom he had preached about: **repent** and be **baptized** for the forgiveness of your sins, so you will receive the **gift of the Holy Spirit**.
- Peter in Acts 3: So now **Repent**.
- Philipp in Acts 8: When they **believed**, they were **baptized**
- Paul in Acts 9: **Baptism**
- Peter in Acts 10: **Baptism**
- Paul in Acts 13 in Pisidian Antioch: **Faith and the forgiveness of sins**
- Paul in Acts 16 in Philippi with Lydia: **Baptism**
- Paul in Acts 16 in Philippi with the prison officer: **Faith – Baptism**
- Paul in Acts 17 in Athens: But now he commands people everywhere to **repent**
- Paul in Acts 18 in Corinth with Krispus: **Faith and Baptism**
- Paul in Acts 19: Ephesus with the disciples of John the Baptist: **Baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit**
- Paul in Acts 26: Paul speaks in front of King Agrippa and the governor Festus: ... but preached to those in ... the nations that they should **repent and turn to God and demonstrate their repentance by their deeds**.

When people had faith, they were called and demanded to express this by taking specific steps of faith.

How – For what purpose were they called?

In the book of Acts, we clearly see that people were called to do four specific things

- A) Faith
- B) Repentance
- C) Baptism
- D) Receiving the Holy Spirit accompanied by an obvious sign

People were not called to a sinner's prayer, but when faith was created in Jesus as Saviour through the proclamation of the Gospel, the following steps (repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit) followed directly after another or even at the same time. Again: When people in the New Testament had faith, they were called/demanded to express this by following specific steps of faith.

How and to what purpose did Jesus himself call?

Mark 1:12-14

*After John was put in prison, Jesus went into Galilee, proclaiming the good news of God. "The time has come," he said. "The kingdom of God has come near. **Repent and believe the good news!**"*

- Also, Jesus called to repent and to believe! It goes on:
- Namely the **irresistible call** to follow him:

Markus 1:16-20

*As Jesus walked beside the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net into the lake, for they were fishermen. "**Come, follow me,**" Jesus said, "and I will send you out to fish for people." **At once they left their nets and followed him.** When he had gone a little farther, he saw James son of Zebedee and his brother John in a boat, preparing their nets. Without delay **he called them, and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired men and followed him.***

Jesus doesn't only call to

- **believe** and to **repent**, but also
- into a **living community** with himself and
- into a **task, a mission or a ministry** that will fulfil our lives in a new way

Very similarly to Peter, Andrew, John and James, Jesus also calls Matthew:

Matthew 9:9

As Jesus went on from there, he saw a man named Matthew sitting at the tax collector's booth. "Follow me," he told him, and Matthew got up and followed him.

- What a sovereignty and authority of Jesus is shown when he calls! It is absolutely clear that Matthew didn't have any doubts when he started following Jesus.
- Jesus is very convinced of what He is doing and says: "Come and follow me!" Matthew, or Levi (how Mark and Luke call him in their Gospels) stands up and follows Jesus.
- Because Jesus calls these men to follow him, these men were called disciples or followers of Christ – it's an old word for apprentice or student.
- Jesus doesn't tell them **why** they should follow Him, but instead **for what purpose**: and I will make you fishermen of men!
- Matthew 9:9 says how Matthew was called and in Matthew 10 we already read:

Matthew 10:1-3

Jesus called his twelve disciples to him and gave them authority to drive out impure spirits and to heal every disease and sickness. These are the names of the twelve apostles: first, Simon (who is called Peter) and his brother Andrew; James son of Zebedee, and his brother John; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax collector; James son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus;

- Jesus called people to follow him, to take them with him on his mission.

Mark 3:13-14

Jesus went up on a mountainside and called to him those he wanted, and they came to him. He appointed twelve¹ that they might be with him and that he might send them out to preach

- Jesus doesn't call only single people but an entire group!
- **Call into following Jesus** doesn't only mean a call to **faith, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit**, but also a call into a learning, living and ministry community with **Jesus and with other disciples**.

But the call to follow Jesus also means:

- **A completely challenging call** – a test case for a serious change to Jesus and true following of Jesus.

In Mark 10 this can be seen:

There we read about a young rich ruler who asks what he should do to inherit eternal life. Jesus tells him to follow the commandments. "Teacher," the young man declared, "all these I have kept since I was a boy." Jesus looked at him and loved him. **"One thing you lack," he said. "Go, sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me."** Here the problem of the young ruler is obvious. He couldn't get rid of his god – money. He walked away sadly because he knew it was too much for him.

In Luke 9:57-62, three situations are described where three men are called into following Jesus or wanted to follow Jesus out of their own motivation:

1. As they were walking along the road, a man said to him, **"I will follow you** wherever you go." Jesus replied, "Foxes have dens and birds have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head." **The price to pay was too high for this man**
2. He said to another man, "Follow me." But he replied, "Lord, first let me go and bury my father." Jesus said to him, "Let the dead bury their own dead, but you go and proclaim the kingdom of God." **The duty held the man back from following Jesus.**
3. Still another said, "I will follow you, Lord; but first let me go back and say goodbye to my family." Jesus replied, "No one who puts a hand to the plow and looks back is fit for service in the kingdom of God. **When Jesus calls to follow Him, there is no compromise: No "YES, BUT".**

Eventually, Jesus also mentions the price we must pay if we really want to follow Him.

Mark 8:34

Then he called the crowd to him along with his disciples and said: "Whoever wants to be my disciple must deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me."

- Jesus calls us to deny ourselves to really follow him. He doesn't mean we are supposed to destroy our own personality but it means that we put his Kingdom as our very first priority and that our desires are secondary.
- Jesus calls us to carry his cross daily. Literally, this means to be ready to die for him every moment. Figuratively, it also means to willingly face and accept disadvantages, rejections and difficulties that evolve from following Jesus completely.

Summary: the call to repentance and into following Jesus

- The call of Jesus is a call to faith, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit.
- **Call into following Jesus** doesn't mean only a call to **faith, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit**, but also a call into a learning, living and ministry community with **Jesus and with other disciples**.
- The call of Jesus is also a call into his Kingdom
 - A Kingdom where Jesus reigns as Lord and King
 - Where the royal dominion of Jesus is accepted
 - Where the will of Jesus is done
 - Where Jesus' (new) commandments are obeyed

The call to repentance and into following him definitely belongs to a clear proclamation of the gospel of God's Kingdom.

The call to repentance and into following Jesus includes three parts:

1. The call to 4 specific steps:
 - faith
 - repentance
 - baptism
 - obvious reception of the Holy Spirit
2. The call to a learning, living and ministry community with Jesus and with other disciples.
3. The call into a Kingdom where Jesus reigns as Lord and King

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

Task: Write down how you want to practically do the 3-fold call to repentance and into following Jesus on a piece of paper. The call includes three parts:

A) The call to four specific steps:

- faith
- repentance
- baptism
- obvious reception of the Holy Spirit

B) The call into a learning, living and ministry community with Jesus and with other disciples

C) The call into a Kingdom where Jesus reigns as Lord and King

Task: In a role play, call your partner to repentance and into following Jesus.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner ☐
2. GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart ☐
3. PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
4. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
5. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
6. FAITH, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit ☐

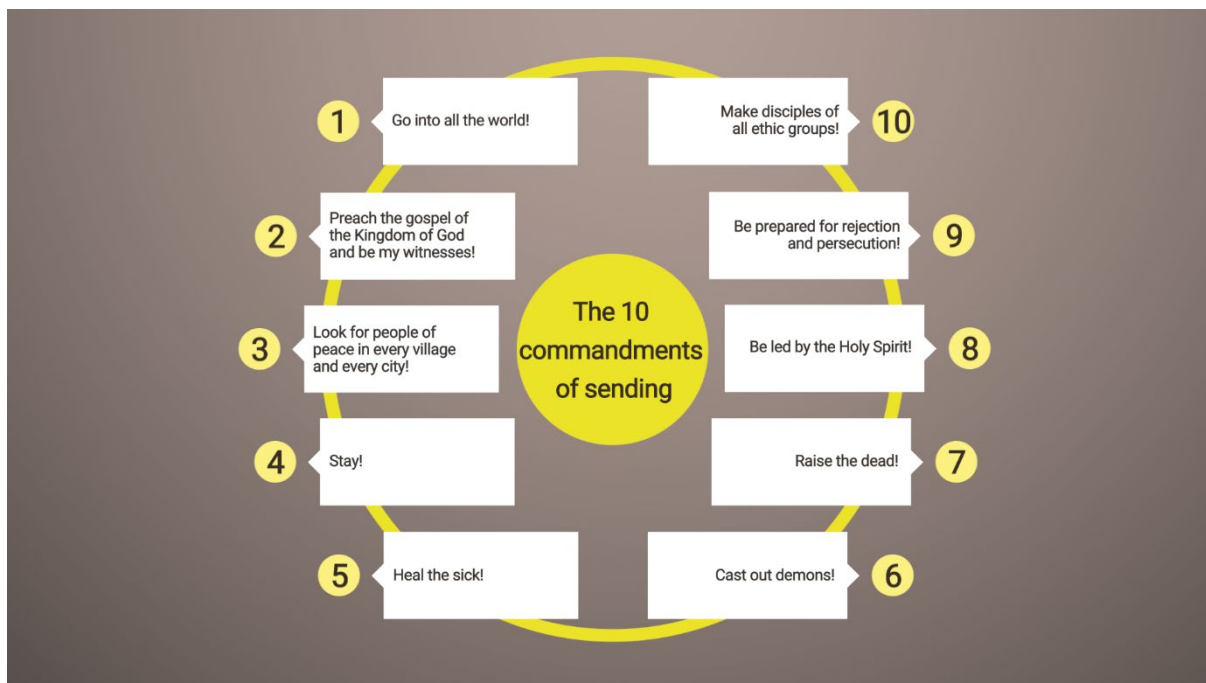
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 12

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending: Preach V: Methods of evangelism (DBS: Discovery Bible Study)



Preach the gospel of God's Kingdom Part V

One of the best methods to proclaim the gospel of God's Kingdom is the evangelistic Bible study method, where people hear or read the Gospel themselves directly from the Bible!

We call this kind of evangelistic Bible study the:

DBS = Discovery Bible Study

To proclaim the gospel of God's Kingdom means:

- To introduce/preach/proclaim Jesus
- To introduce Him thoroughly: A) Jesus as Saviour/healer
- To introduce Him thoroughly: B) Jesus as Lord and King

We do that by...

- Proclaiming the word of God
- Sharing about Jesus
- Testifying about what we've experienced with Jesus

Romans 10:17

Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ.

In the Gospels and in the book of Acts, faith oftentimes took place very quickly (Pentecost, Acts 10). Repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit followed quickly.

People in the New Testament must have had great spiritual authority, because their message moved quickly among people and faith arose in the hearts of the listening people.

But when we bring the word of God to people today, people's hearts are at completely different points:

There are people who

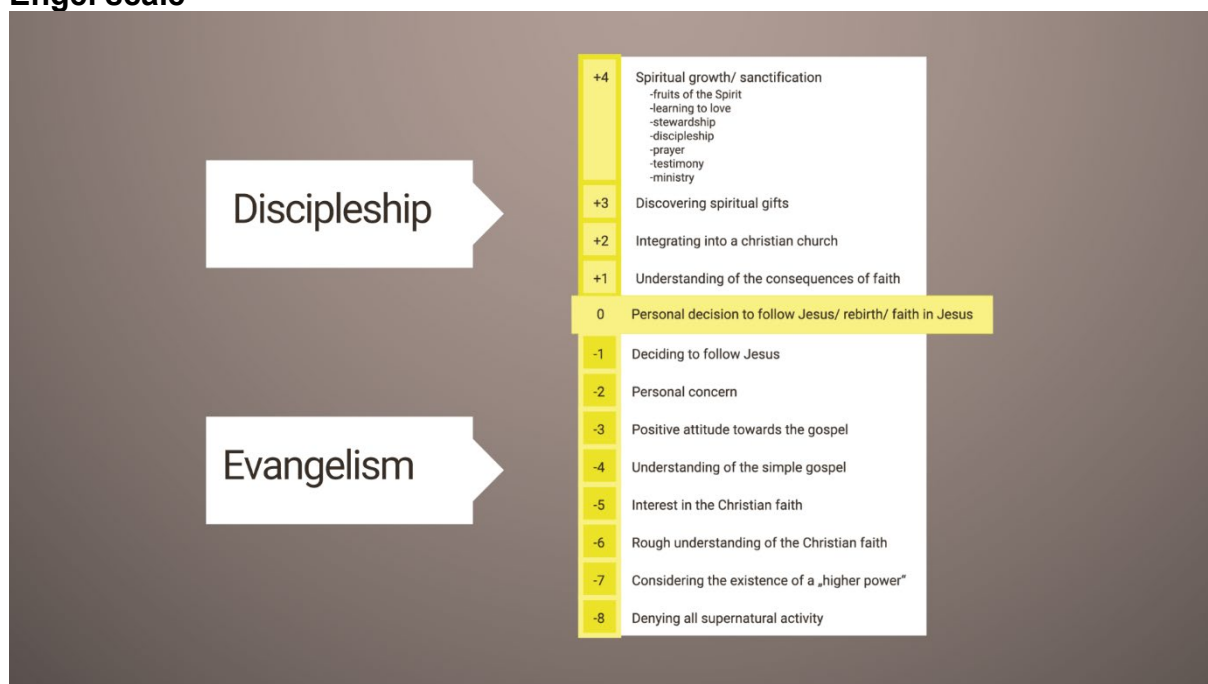
- Heard a lot about Jesus when they were kids
- They also know that they are sinners
- But they've never heard that you can/must repent and turn to God
- As soon as they hear the message of repentance, they turn to God and are born again

→ Some have never even heard that there is a Holy Spirit!

→ Others have never heard about Jesus!

Knowing that, Dr. James Engel developed the "Engel Scale"

Engel scale



He splits people that don't know Jesus yet into 8 categories from -8 until -1. People in the -8 category, are far away from the Kingdom of God and people within -1, are much closer to the Kingdom. As Jesus says "not far from God's Kingdom". If we now meet people that are within -8, **Oftentimes** much more proclamation and time is required for the word of God to break and destroy the walls of unbelief and to create faith in the hearts of people.

Jeremiah 23:29

"Is not my word like fire," declares the Lord, "and like a hammer that breaks a rock in pieces?"

If somebody is within -1, one word can be enough and the person will turn to Jesus, as mentioned in the book of Acts several times. If someone nowadays turns directly to Jesus, he/she has probably heard something about faith, the Bible or Jesus already in a certain context. But many times, a short talk on the streets, at a house door or a 15-30min proclamation on a market square **does not** provide enough time and space to release the word in such a way that “enough” faith for a true and complete new birth can happen.

➔ **Evangelism today is not a specific moment in time anymore but a process.**

The observation that for many people time and several opportunities to hear the word are necessary until true faith arises in the heart, has influence on the way we can and should evangelize today. In that case, evangelism is not so much a specific moment anymore but rather a process. Within that process, we can walk through the Bible together with open people to hear WHAT they see, learn and say about Jesus.

And then after 1-2-3-4-5-6-7-8-9-10 evangelistic Bible studies the Holy Spirit creates faith in the hearts of people!

➔ **True faith comes from hearing the word of God – faith in salvation.**

Acts 16:31

They replied, “Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household.”

When faith arises in Jesus as Saviour AND Lord within the hearts of people, we can lead them to practical steps of repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit.

Acts 2:38

Peter replied, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.”

Faith in salvation versus faith in miracles

This faith in salvation from the hearing of the word of God is not to be confused with the faith in miracles that comes from seeing and experiencing miracles. This kind of “faith in miracles” doesn’t come from hearing the word but only from seeing.

John 2:23-25

Now while he was in Jerusalem at the Passover Festival, many people saw the signs he was performing and believed in his name. But Jesus would not entrust himself to them, for he knew all people. He did not need any testimony about mankind, for he knew what was in each person.

This “faith in miracles”, where people experience the supernatural, will oftentimes break hindrances and doubts towards God. However, it will never replace the faith in salvation and can’t bring salvation, forgiveness of sins or eternal life.

➔ **The true faith in salvation can only be found within our hearts through hearing the word of God.**

We have several descriptions in the book of Acts where **supernatural acts** of God blow away all hindrances against the Gospel.

When people’s hearts are opened by seeing a miracle, they are quickly ready to hear the Gospel, to receive it and to turn to Jesus thoroughly!

Examples:

- at Pentecost, people from the streets heard the disciples speak in their own languages
- in Samaria, many powerful deliverances and healings happened
- Paul was blind and then could see
- the Governor of Cyprus or the prison guard of Philippi

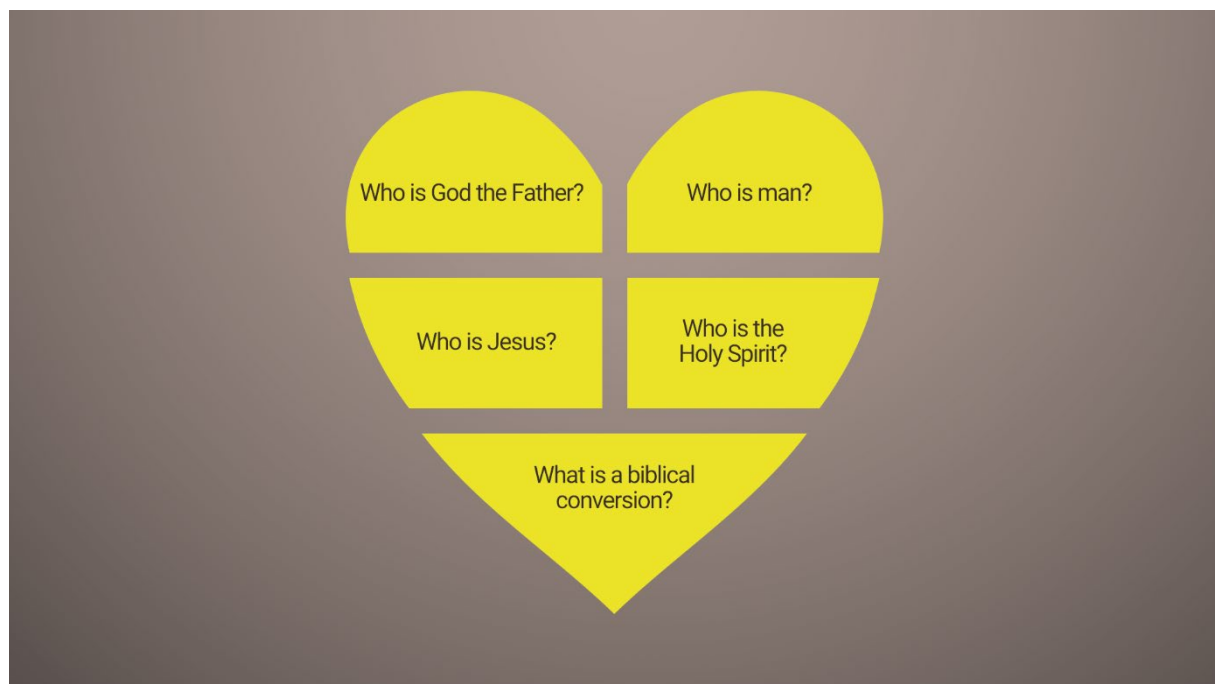
Repeated proclamation of God's word

Experience shows that for many people that don't know God or his word yet, the Gospel sometimes must be preached several times until true faith arises and true spirit led repentance can happen.

Sometimes it's even necessary that the word of God be proclaimed, or testimonies be shared in 5-10 different areas until true faith arises and true spirit-led repentance or a new birth can happen.

What should be read and heard when we evangelize through reading the Bible (DBS)

- The stories from the Bible, from creation to Jesus
- Life and ministry of Jesus
- Who is God?
- Who is man?
- Who is the Holy Spirit?
- What does turning to God and the new birth really mean?



If we ask people to make a feeling or event-based decision for Jesus without true faith in the hearts of people, or even when people experience a miracle or they were touched by the Holy Spirit, unfortunately many times they were not really born again. It's only a religious act or an external (and not internal) new birth. So, in reality, they don't know a new, transformed, living, powerful life with Jesus personally yet.

→ With those people, it's not (yet) possible to practice true discipleship, even if they come on a quite regular basis to some Church meetings and seem to be born again.

2 Timothy 3:5

...having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with such people.

Such people more or less behave like Christians, but spiritually they are dead. That sounds harsh, but Jesus himself had to declare judgment over an entire church:

Revelation 3:1

"To the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead."

Methodology and practice of evangelistic DBS

"Faith comes by hearing the word of God"

➔ We work with DBS

The so-called **DBS (Discovery Bible Study)** became quite popular on many mission fields within the last years. The goal of DBS is that people of peace can discover much of the Bible themselves and that they directly put into practice what they learn in their everyday lives.

The five steps of DBS

1.Step	2. Step	3. Step	4. Step	5. Step
LISTENING	UNDERSTAND	OBEDIENCE	TRANSPARENCY	SHARE
<p>Discussion in the group <i>What can we be thankful for? What can we pray for? What inner fights are we going through? What did we experience with Jesus the last weeks?</i></p> <p>Feedback from the last DBS <i>What were we able to put into practice since last time?</i></p> <p>Read a new passage Read the Bible passage (10-15 verses) each person by themselves and once again together in the group.</p>	<p>Someone summarizes the passage just read in their own words and others add to that (if you do a DBS by yourself, write down a summary in your own words).</p> <p>We ask the following questions:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did something attract your attention in this passage? 2. What do you like about this passage? 3. What provokes you? 4. What does the passage say about God? 5. What does the passage say about us people? 6. What does the passage say about how we can please God and obey him? 	<p>How does the passage challenge us specifically? What can we learn and apply to our lives? If this passage is true, how does this passage change my perspective on God? How does it change the way I treat people and the way I live?</p> <p>I will statement What do you want to specifically put into practice within the next 24-48h?</p>	<p>Who do I want to be accountable to in putting this into practice what I just said?</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> -The DBS-Group -The disciple maker -Another Christian friend 	<p>Do you know somebody that should also know about the passage just read? How would you explain this passage to him/her?</p> <p>Practical help for one another in the group <i>How could you help each other practically within the group?</i></p>

Methodology for an evangelistic DBS with open people

We have basically taken the DBS-Method and adapted it a little bit. After we made sure that the interested person or group received a good Bible translation, we go 6-7x through the evangelistic text with the person or group.

1. Step LISTENING	2. Step UNDERSTAND & INTERPRET	3. Step PERSONAL POSITION FINDING	4. Step UNDERSTOOD OBEY APPLY	5. Step TRANSPARENCY	6. Step SHARE
Interested person reads the text 2 times 1st Time through the text	Interested person summarizes the text in his/her own words 2nd time through the text Interested person reads verse by verse and says what he/she reads there 3rd time through the text Interested person and you can draw the text together 4th time through the text Interested person goes through the text verse by verse and finds out the meaning of the verses and the application for him/herself for each verse We ask the following questions: I) Did something attract your attention in this passage? II) What do you like about this specific passage? III) What provokes you about this passage? IV) What does the passage say generally and spiritually? V) What does the passage say about God? VI) What does the passage say about us people? VII) What does the passage say about how we can please God and obey him better? 5th Time through the passage	Where do YOU (person of peace) discover yourself within the text?	What did you (as an interested person) understand? What can/should you put into practice (obedience)? We ask the following questions: I) What challenges does the text demand from us? II) What can we learn and apply in our lives? III) If this passage is true, how does this passage change my perspective of God? IV) How does it change the way I treat people and the way I live V) I will statement What do you want to specifically put into practice within the next 24-48h?	Who do I (interested person) want to be accountable to in putting this into practice what I just said? -The DBS-Group -The Disciple Maker	Do you (interested person) know somebody that should also know about the passage just read? How would you explain this passage to him/her?

Example of an evangelistic DBS

Topic: **Who is God?** - He is a Father: Luke 15:12-24

1st Step: LISTENING

- Interested person reads the passage 2 times

Luke 15:12-24

The prodigal son

12 Jesus continued: *"There was a man who had two sons.*

The younger one said to his father, 'Father, give me my share of the estate.' So he divided his property between them.

"Not long after that, the younger son got together all he had, set off for a distant country and there squandered his wealth in wild living.

14 *After he had spent everything, there was a severe famine in that whole country, and he began to be in need.*

15 *So he went and hired himself out to a citizen of that country, who sent him to his fields to feed pigs.*

16 *He longed to fill his stomach with the pods that the pigs were eating, but no one gave him anything.*

17 *"When he came to his senses, he said, 'How many of my father's hired servants have food to spare, and here I am starving to death!*

18 *I will set out and go back to my father and say to him: Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you.*

19 *I am no longer worthy to be called your son; make me like one of your hired servants.'*

20 *So he got up and went to his father. "But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was filled with compassion for him; he ran to his son, threw his arms around him and kissed him.*

21 *"The son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son.'*

22 *"But the father said to his servants, 'Quick! Bring the best robe and put it on him. Put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet.*

23 *Bring the fattened calf and kill it. Let's have a feast and celebrate.*

24 *For this son of mine was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found.'* So they began to celebrate.

- **Now we have gone through the text once**

2nd Step: UNDERSAND & INTERPRET

2a) Interested person summarizes the text in his/her own words.

- **Now we have gone through the text a second time.**

2b) Interested person reads verse after verse and says what he/she reads there.

- **Now we have gone through the text a third time.**

2c) Interested person and you can draw the text together.

- **Now we have gone through the text a fourth time.**

Spiritual interpretation

Verse 11: And he spoke: “A man had two sons.”

Man: God or Jesus

Two sons: generally us people

The younger son loves life and the exciting world. The older son is the religious guy.

V12: The younger asked his father to give him his share of the estate. So, the father divided his property between them.

Natural inheritance: according to Deuteronomy 21:17, the elder son inherits 2/3 and the younger son inherits 1/3 of the property.

Spiritual inheritance: the gift of life we have from God. The Father is quiet and gives it to his son (silence as an expression of his pain?). God is very sad that people don't want to live with him in a relationship and want to live their own lives independently. In the Bible, God says: “All day long I have held out my hands to an obstinate people, who walk in ways not good, pursuing their own imaginations” (Isaiah 65:2). Nevertheless, God lets people go and gives them a free will to choose for themselves!

V13: Not long after that, the younger son got together all he had, set off for a distant country and squandered his wealth in wild living there.

Distant country = away from God into a wild life, in squandering and sin. He moves more and more away from the blessings of God.

V14: After he had spent everything, there was a severe famine in that whole country and he began to be in need.

Famine: All celebrations (“Let us go, eat and drink, tomorrow we will be dead” or “wine, girls and singing”) leaves the heart empty. Internal famine. Apart/away from God there is ALWAYS spiritual famine.

V15: So, he went and hired himself out to a citizen of that country, who sent him to his fields to feed pigs.

Pigs = unclean animals (Leviticus 11:7) pig farmer – you couldn't offer any worse job to a Jew ever!

V16: He longed to fill his stomach with the pods that the pigs were eating, but no one gave him anything.

Pods = fruit of the carob tree which is food for very poor people. When he saw the pigs eating these pods, he was jealous.

But then the famine turned out to be a blessing.

V17: When he came to his senses, he said, “How many of my father's hired servants have food to spare, and here I am starving to death.”

He came to his senses: he recognized his sins – regret.

V18: I will set out and go back to my father and say to him: “Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you.”

Desire to repent and to confess his sins to the Father.

V19: I am no longer worthy to be called your son; make me like one of your hired servants!

This is a key passage because it reveals what the son really thinks. Despite true repentance, he doesn't understand the father's heart at all – he never understood it! He has an entirely wrong understanding of the father. Wrong ideas of God are nowadays wide spread among society!

V20: So he got up and went to his father. But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was filled with compassion for him; he ran to his son, threw his arms around him and kissed him.

The first step of a new birth is to turn around and turn back to the Father. A turn around – a new birth with surprises:

1. Surprise – The Father saw him a long way off – He had waited for him.
2. Surprise – The Father had a heart full of compassion and willingness to forgive.
3. Surprise – First the kiss and then the confession of sins. God loved us first!

V21: The son said to him, “Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son.”

The actual confession of sins. But the second part of his son’s phrase “**make me like one of your hired servants**” the father interrupts because this is not what the Father’s heart and His amazing plan for us is about!

V22: But the father said to his servants, “Quick! Bring the best robe and put it on him. Put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet.”

Re-adoption – righteousness:

Robe: re-adoption into community and cleansing

Ring: a seal ring, for the certification of business documents

Sandals: outward sign of free people, slaves don’t wear sandals

V23: “Bring the fattened calf and kill it. Let’s have a feast and celebrate! “

Fattened calf: a young animal for very special feasts, kept ready and fattened.

Celebration: a symbol for the Kingdom of God. The son is in the Kingdom of God. Every celebration in the Kingdom of God is a shadow of the largest celebration yet to come when Jesus returns (Revelation 19:7).

V24: “For this son of mine was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found.” So they began to celebrate.

Re-adoption: righteousness: Spiritually dead and now made alive again: New birth!

Now we have gone through the text a fifth time!

3rd Step PERSONAL POSITION FINDING

→ Where do you (interested person) find/see yourself within the text?

Now we have gone through the text a sixth time!

4th Step UNDERSTAND – OBEDIENCE – APPLY

What did you (interested person) understand? What can/should you put into practice (obedience)?

Matthew 28:20

...And teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

We ask the following questions:

I) What challenges does the text demand from us?

II) What can we learn and apply in our lives?

III) If this passage is true, how does this passage change my perspective towards God?

IV) How does it change the way I treat people and the way I live?

V) I will statement: What do you want to specifically put into practice within the next 24-48h?

5th Step TRANSPARENCY

- Who do I (interested person) want to be accountable to for putting into practice what I just said?
- The DBS-Group
 - The Disciple Maker

6th Step SHARE

- Who do you (person of peace) want to share with what you just learned?

Now we have gone through the text a seventh time!

Overview of 24 especially useful evangelistic texts to use with people of peace

1. Who is God? – HE is a Father
(Luke 15:11-32 The heart of a Father and the two lost sons)
2. Who is God? – HE is a Father
(Ezekiel 16:1-18 The heart of a Father and the lost daughter)
3. Who is God – Who are we people? – HE is Creator and we are made in his perfect image
(Genesis 1:1-2,4 Creation story)
4. Who is God – Who are we people? – HE is Creator, we were made as man and woman and put into paradise
(Genesis 2:5-24 man and woman in paradise)
5. Who are we people? – We fell into sin and therefore we deserve death
(Genesis 3:1-24 – Fall of mankind)
6. Who are we people? – Growth, explosion, sin
(Genesis 4:1-24 Cain and Abel)
7. Who is Jesus? – HE is unique
(John 8:1-10 Jesus and the adulterous woman – grace and forgiveness – another possible text for the uniqueness of Jesus would be the sermon on the mount, found in Matthew 5:1-10 – the beatitudes)
8. Who is Jesus? – HE has authority to forgive sins and to heal all diseases
(Mark 2:1-12; the lame man: faith, forgiveness of sins and a healing miracle)
9. Who is Jesus? – HE is the Savior
(Isaiah 53:6 The Lord put all our sin unto Jesus - Luke 23:32-43 Jesus' death on the cross)
10. Who is Jesus? – HE has risen from the dead and HE is alive
(Luke 24 resurrection, Ascension, Pentecost)
11. Who is the Holy Spirit? – The Holy Spirit brings us the life of Jesus
(John 3:1-11 Nicodemus, born from water and Spirit)
12. Who is the Holy Spirit? – The Holy Spirit brings the power of Jesus
(Acts 1:4-8 and 2,1-41 Waiting on, the coming of and the power of the Holy Spirit, Pentecost)
13. What do I need to do to be saved?
(Acts 16:30-31 Believe in the Lord Jesus; John 3:16-21 God loves the world; John 1:10-12 Receive Jesus)
14. What do I need to do to be saved? – Acts 2:38 Repent
(2 Chronicles 33:1-13 Sin and repentance of King Manasse)
15. What do I need to do to be saved? – Acts 2:38 Be baptized
(Matthew 3:13-17 Baptism of Jesus; Acts 8:26-39 Ethiopian Treasurer/Minister is baptized by Philip)
16. What do I need to do to be saved? – Acts 2:38 And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit
(Acts 19:1-7 12 Men receive the Holy Spirit)
17. Who is God/Jesus? – HE is the judge
(Matthew 25:31-46 The Last Judgment)
18. Who is God/Jesus? – HE is the judge
(Luke 16:19ff The rich man in Hades (=limbo), poor Lazarus in paradise)
19. Who is Jesus? – HE is Lord and King
(Luke 9:57-62 the price of following Jesus; Mark 10:7-27 The rich young ruler)
20. God/Jesus wants you I – HIS heart beats for you and me
(Luke 15:1-7 The lost sheep)
21. God/Jesus wants you II – HIS heart beats for you and me
(Luke 15:8-10 The lost dime)
22. God/Jesus visits you – HE must come and be your guest today in your heart/house
(Luke 19:1-10 Zacchaeus)
23. Are you going to accept the invitation? – Everything is ready, just come
(Matthew 22:1-13 Invitation for the royal wedding and similarly Luke 14:16-24 The great dinner; YOU are invited – Are you going to accept the invitation?)
24. Don't be distracted by the daily business and forget to serve King Jesus
(Luke 12:16-21 The rich grain farmer)

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner ☐
2. GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart ☐
3. PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
4. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
5. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
6. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
7. FAITH, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 13

PREACH

2nd Commandment of sending: Preach VI: You will be my witnesses

Jesus gave us some very specific instructions for the ministry of sending. We summarized these into the 10 commandments of sending:

1st Commandment of sending: GO

- **Go** by faith
- **Go** 2 by 2 or as a team

2nd Commandment: Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom:

- This is a crucial part of sending
- It is very important for discipleship that people experience a clear and healthy biblical new birth

→ That's why we have 6 parts within this important topic

Part I) Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom: proclaim

- Jesus as Saviour (the Gospel)
- Jesus as Lord and King (God's Kingdom)

Part II) Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom

- From Creation to Salvation = 12 steps of the way of salvation

Part III) Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom

- Faith, repentance, baptism, receiving the Holy Spirit

Part IV) Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom

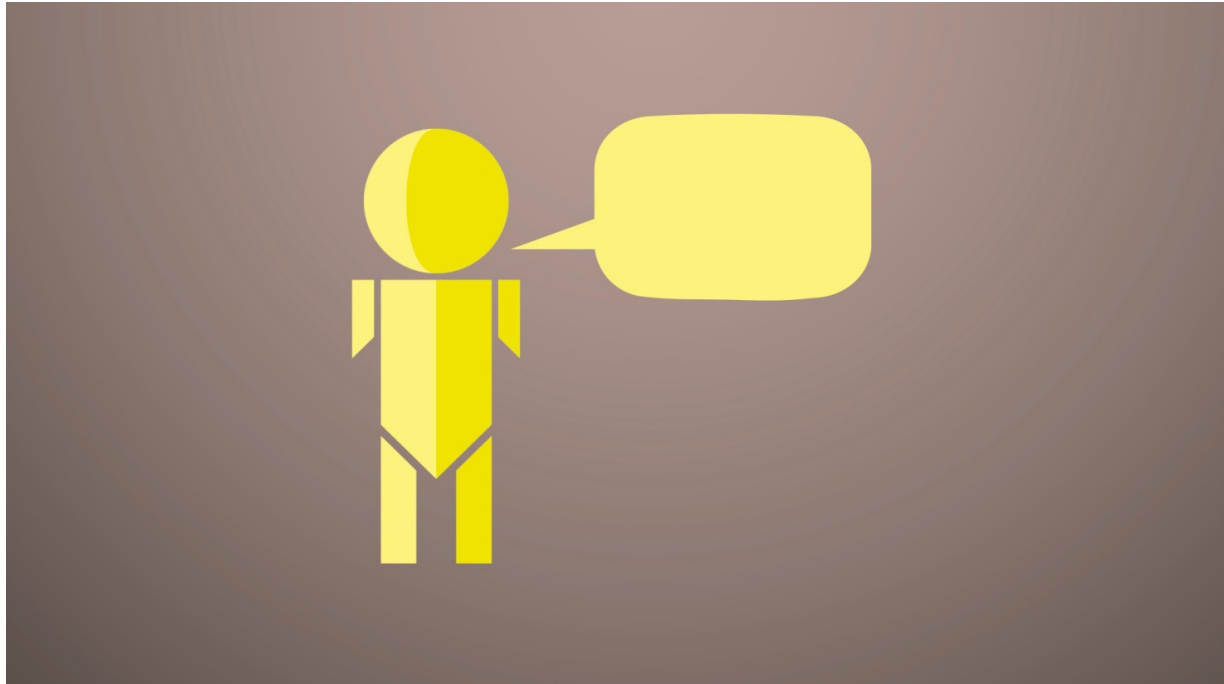
- The call to repentance into following Christ
- A) The call to 4 specific steps:
1. Faith
 2. Repentance
 3. Baptism
 4. Obvious reception/baptism of the Holy Spirit
- B) The call to a learning life, mission and ministry fellowship with Jesus and with disciples as well
- C) The call into a kingdom where Jesus reigns as Lord and King

Part V) Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom

- the evangelistic Bible study DBS

Now we get to part VI: Preach the Gospel of God's Kingdom

- You will be my witnesses



- To share our personal testimony of our new birth is a strong way to proclaim the Gospel because we have personally experienced it.
- Nobody can reject our personal testimony because we are **eye**, **ear** and **life** witnesses – like witnesses at a court session.

Comparison: The use of the word of God to proclaim the Gospel is like the use of a **sword**:
The sword of the Spirit is the word of God > Ephesians 6

The use of a **personal testimony** as we proclaim the Gospel is like the use of a **knife**.

The Lord Jesus himself instructs us to be witnesses:

Acts 1:8

But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

Three other clear Scripture passages concerning this topic:

Acts 4:17-20

But to stop this thing from spreading any further among the people, we must warn them to speak no longer to anyone in this name." Then they called them in again and commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John replied, "Which is right in God's eyes: to listen to you, or to him? You be the judges! As for us, we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard."

1 John 1:1-3

That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked at and our hands have touched—this we proclaim concerning the Word of life. The life appeared; we have seen it and testify to it, and we proclaim to you the eternal life, which was with the Father and has appeared to us. We proclaim to you what we have seen and heard, so that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ.

Matthew 10:32-33

"Whoever acknowledges me before others, I will also acknowledge before my Father in heaven. But whoever disowns me before others, I will disown before my Father in heaven."

- ➔ The personal testimony of our new birth is very important and a great help when we proclaim the Gospel.

To be a witness means

1. We tell people who don't know Jesus yet **how we found Jesus** and how **he saved and redeemed us (turning to God – new birth)**.
2. We share about how **Jesus moves** in our lives: how we **practically experience him in our daily lives** and what we have **seen or heard from Him personally**.
3. We share what we **got to know about his character and his heart**.
4. We share about **the ways in which he led us**.
5. We share how he **changed our lives**.
6. We share how **we trust his promises and believe them to be true**.
7. We share how he has blessed us since our decision to **follow him and trust his word**.
8. We share about **joy, peace, love and favour** we experience as believers of Jesus Christ.

- Our testimony must come from the heart and go to the hearts of the people directly.
- Our words as witnesses will convince them that we found a treasure/ a precious pearl.

1 Peter 2:9

But you are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, God's special possession, that you may declare the praises of him who called you out of darkness into his wonderful light.

- We as followers of Jesus are **priests, even high priests**, which means we are mediators that connect other people with Christ.
- We shall declare the mighty, wonderful works of God, meaning how he accomplished salvation and redemption for us and who God really is.
- Especially God's character of perfect love and compassion must be shared with people.

The apostle Peter challenges us:**1 Peter 3:15**

But in your hearts revere Christ as Lord. Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect.

- We will be able to tell people why we have eternal hope **from the start**. To better understand this, we can look at the story about Jesus and the demon possessed man:

Share and explain faith from the start

Mark 5:14-20

Those tending the pigs ran off and reported this in the town and countryside, and the people went out to see what had happened. When they came to Jesus, they saw the man who had been possessed by the legion of demons, sitting there, dressed and in his right mind; and they were afraid. Those who had seen it told the people what had happened to the demon-possessed man—and told about the pigs as well. Then the people began to plead with Jesus to leave their region. As Jesus was getting into the boat, the man who had been demon-possessed begged to go with him. Jesus did not let him, but said, “Go home to your own people and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and how he has had mercy on you.” So the man went away and began to tell in the Decapolis how much Jesus had done for him. And all the people were amazed.

- ⇒ When Jesus healed the demon possessed, this man desired **to stay with Jesus**.
- ⇒ But Jesus **didn’t allow him to and instead gave him the instruction** to go and **share** what he had experienced with him, Jesus, with his relatives in his village.
- ⇒ Why is that? The healed man certainly would have learned a lot staying around Jesus, but he would have become a **consuming** disciple.
- ⇒ Instead, Jesus instructed him to become a **witness and co-worker** in his Kingdom.
- ⇒ For his relatives, the man was clearly the **most impressive witness**.
- ⇒ The **message was shared where Jesus himself couldn’t minister** because the inhabitants of this gentile area had asked him (Mark 5) to leave their territory.
- ⇒ Because of the healed man’s testimony, many **people became very curious about Jesus**: when Jesus returned to this area 6 months later (Mark 7 & 8), around 4000 people gathered to come and listen to Jesus.

A very similar story can be found in John 4:

John 4:28-29 and 39

Then, leaving her water jar, the woman went back to the town and said to the people, “Come, see a man who told me everything I ever did. Could this be the Messiah?” Many of the Samaritans from that town believed in him because of the woman’s testimony, “He told me everything I ever did.”

By being witnesses for Jesus, we ourselves are blessed and our spiritual growth increases more than through anything else.

The testimony of the Apostle Paul is an example of sharing a personal testimony:

We find two examples of how Paul witnessed for Jesus in **Acts 22:1-22 and 26:1-29**. Both have the same structure and are normative for a powerful testimony:

Acts 22:1-22

“Brothers and fathers, listen now to my defense.” When they heard him speak to them in Aramaic, they became very quiet. Then Paul said: “I am a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but brought up in this city. I studied under Gamaliel and was thoroughly trained in the law of our ancestors. I was just as zealous for God as any of you are today. I persecuted the followers of this Way to their death, arresting both men and women and throwing them into prison, as the high priest and all the Council can themselves testify. I even obtained letters from them to their associates in Damascus, and went there to bring these people as prisoners to Jerusalem to be punished. “About noon as I came near Damascus, suddenly a bright light from heaven flashed around me. I fell to the ground and heard a voice say to me, ‘Saul! Saul! Why do you persecute me?’ “‘Who are you, Lord?’ I asked. “‘I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom you are persecuting,’ he replied. My companions saw the light, but they did not understand the voice of him

who was speaking to me. “‘What shall I do, Lord?’ I asked. “‘Get up,’ the Lord said, ‘and go into Damascus. There you will be told all that you have been assigned to do.’ My companions led me by the hand into Damascus, because the brilliance of the light had blinded me. “A man named Ananias came to see me. He was a devout observer of the law and highly respected by all the Jews living there. He stood beside me and said, ‘Brother Saul, receive your sight!’ And at that very moment I was able to see him “Then he said: ‘The God of our ancestors has chosen you to know his will and to see the Righteous One and to hear words from his mouth. You will be his witness to all people of what you have seen and heard. And now what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized and wash your sins away, calling on his name.’ “When I returned to Jerusalem and was praying at the temple, I fell into a trance and saw the Lord speaking to me. ‘Quick!’ he said. ‘Leave Jerusalem immediately, because the people here will not accept your testimony about me.’ ‘Lord,’ I replied, ‘these people know that I went from one synagogue to another to imprison and beat those who believe in you. And when the blood of your martyr Stephen was shed, I stood there giving my approval and guarding the clothes of those who were killing him.’ “Then the Lord said to me, ‘Go; I will send you far away to the Gentiles.’” The crowd listened to Paul until he said this. Then they raised their voices and shouted, “Rid the earth of him! He is not fit to live!”

The Apostle Paul's salvation story in different parts

- Crucial information from his life before he turned to God: his origin, his education and his persecution of the Church (Acts 22:3-5).
 - How Paul encountered Jesus Christ: his experience with Christ on the way to Damascus, healing of his blindness (Acts 22:6-13).
 - The impact this powerful encounter with Jesus had on his life: God's instruction, his baptism and his ministry for Christ (Acts 22:14-18; 26:19-23).
- ⇒ Paul phrases it differently in Acts 22 and 26
 - ⇒ He left out details (e.g. Ananias)
 - ⇒ But used the same structure
 - ⇒ We can learn how to give our own life transforming testimony with Jesus from Paul as a chosen witness of Jesus (Acts 22:15; 26:16)

➔ In structuring our testimony, we look at Paul's example.

The three main parts of my personal testimony of turning to Jesus:

1. My attitudes, actions, emotions or relationships **before** I got to know Jesus and gave him my life, as well as the incidents and experiences that made me consider Jesus as the answer to my needs or problems.
2. How I became a **child of God and a follower of Christ**; what led me to give all my life to Jesus and how I practically received him into my life.
3. How Christ **changed** me and what he means to me today.

There we should share what has changed in our lives compared to before we met Jesus. We can name the effects in our lives addressing problems and issues that might be important for the people we minister and talk to.

Hints to prepare a life transforming testimony

1. **Different versions** of our testimony:
 - Short (2-5 minutes)
 - Medium (5-15 minutes)
 - Longer (15-30 minutes)
2. It is helpful, **to write down our testimony once**, so we and others can check our phrases and correct them if necessary:
 - Are the words understandable for **non-believers**?
 - Do the words mention the crucial content? Is it too long or too short?
3. We must make sure that our testimony follows a **red thread. Leave out unnecessary details.**
4. We must **know** our testimony and be able to **share it always and everywhere.**
5. If we **pray in the morning for opportunities** and for courage and open eyes and ears to love people, Jesus will definitely use us to be his witnesses!
6. Place **Jesus Christ**, his actions and your personal experience with him at the centre of your testimony.
7. When you got to know Jesus through your parents, share **what faith means to you** and how you came to the convictions to follow Jesus passionately.
8. **The main truths**
 - 1) Forgiveness of sins
 - 2) Eternal life
 - 3) Love of God
 - 4) Peace

→ Permanent joy is as important or even more important than spectacular experiences with Jesus!
9. Share your sins before you turned to God **not** in details. But share about wrong directions in life, problems, guilt, captivity, bad habits, disillusion, etc. in a way so others can relate to somehow.
10. Emphasize **the life Jesus has given you freely** and what he means to you today.

My story, his story, Gods' story

Giving testimony is not just about my story with God, but to share his story with us. When we share our story, it's important to use this perfect bridge to share his story. We could do that by asking for a feedback of our story. Or we simply continue by sharing the life changing story of God with us. In the process of giving testimony, it makes sense to ask for their spiritual story. This helps us to consider and adjust our preaching.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

Task:

Write down one version of your personal testimony (how you encountered Jesus) and share it with your group. Ask the group to add adjustments, corrections, other ideas and clarifications for your testimony.

My personal testimony

1. **Describe with one word**, how your life looked like before you seriously started following Jesus. Then write down 5-10 phrases that explain what you mean by this one word.

2. When and why did I decide to follow Jesus?
What happened after I had decided to follow Jesus?

Answer these questions in 5-10 phrases. You can e.g. use phrases like "I realized that I need to ask Jesus for forgiveness form my sins and to become King of my life". Name a few details of what you've experienced (where, when, why).

3. How my life as a follower of Christ looks like now:
Describe **the effect** of a life as a true follower of Christ **with one word**. Afterwards describe it with more details in 5-10 phrases, describing what benefits you have as a follower of Jesus.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner ☐
2. GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart ☐
3. PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
4. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
5. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
6. Share your personal testimony with at least 5 people. ☐
7. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
8. FAITH, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit ☐

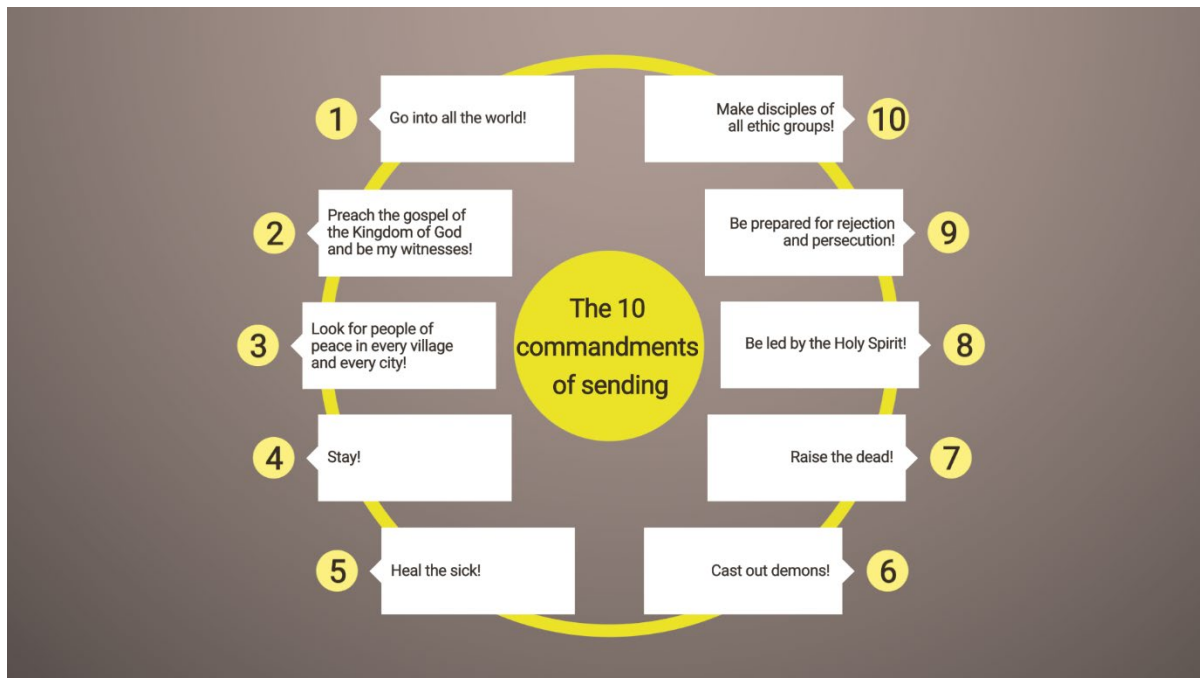
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 14

3rd & 4th Commandment of sending:

Seek persons & houses of peace



3rd Commandment of sending: Seek a person (man OR woman) and a house/group of peace in every village and every city.

4th Commandment of sending: ... in that house/group stay, eat and drink what is given to you.

Matthew 10:11

Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave.

Luke 10:5-7

When you enter a house, first say, 'Peace to this house.' If someone who promotes peace is there, your peace will rest on them; if not, it will return to you. Stay there, eating and drinking whatever they give you, for the worker deserves his wages. Do not move around from house to house.



1st Level: Elements of evangelism for the members of the community of faith

- 1) **Prayer for the harvest (workers)** Acts 1:8
- 2) **Own children** -> Fathers – children Ephesians 6:4
- 3) **Life transformation** -> women - men 1 Peter 3:1
- 4) In the **community of faith** the Lord daily added new believers Acts 2:47
- 5) **Relationships** -> Andrew, Peter, Philip, Nathanael ... John 1:35-51
- 6) **Holy Spirit, power** from on high -> you will be **my witnesses**... Acts 1:8
- 7) **Discipleship** movement Acts 8:1 and following
- 8) Whoever **acknowledges me before others**...Matthew 10:32
- 9) Always **be prepared** to give an answer to everyone who asks why you have such a hope within you ...1 Peter 3:15
- 10) Everybody should **be able to proclaim the Gospel, to give testimony and to lead somebody to Jesus**

2nd Level: Evangelism by Evangelists (Acts 8)

- 1) **Guidance** of the Holy Spirit (or angels)
- 2) **Christ-centred** proclamation
- 3) **Kingdom of God** proclamation
- 4) **Faith, repentance, baptism, reception/baptism of the Holy Spirit**
- 5) **Deliverances**
- 6) **Healings**
- 7) **Joy**
- 8) Within new territory (when it's about planting new communities of faith and not only evangelism) there is a **cooperation between Apostles**
- 9) The evangelist suddenly **disappears**.
- 10) He shall **equip the saints** to the work of (**evangelistic**) ministry

3rd Level: Evangelism by sent ones/Apostles

- 1) **Doesn't know anything but Christ** = Christ-centred (the crucified one) (1 Corinthians 2:2)
- 2) Cross Cultural -> **contextualization** (I have become everything 1 Corinthians 9:22)
- 3) Are always ministering as a **group/team**
- 4) They always win a new **GROUP** (Acts 10)
- 5) They don't only want new births but **discipleship** as fruit
- 6) They start **discipleship movements** (Thessaloniki-Achaia-Macedonia/Ephesus)
- 7) **Completion of the new birth** (Acts 19:1ff)
- 8) Brings **NEW** (Kingdom of God) a) to the old people of God (Synagogues) and b) to the unreached ethnic groups
- 9) **Demonstration of God's Kingdom with miracles of breakthrough** (e.g. 2 Corinthians 12:12; Acts 2:43; Acts 5:12)
- 10) Main strategy: **people** and **houses** of peace (Cornelius, Lydia, prison guard)

Because the sent ones generally go the unreached ethnic groups, their evangelism is usually the first one in this new territory.

Their main goal of evangelism is not only to win new followers of Christ but to plant God's Kingdom **sustainably**.

And that will only work, if:

- Discipleship ...
- remaining discipleship ...
- self-reproducing discipleship ...
- Discipleship within a community...
- Communities of faith are planted.

In order to plant a Community of Faith the best way of evangelism is to seek and find a person of peace and a house of peace!

Person (man or woman) and a house of peace

Matthew 10:11

Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave.

Luke 10:5-7

"When you enter a house, first say, 'Peace to this house.' If someone who promotes peace is there, your peace will rest on them; if not, it will return to you. Stay there, eating and drinking whatever they give you, for the worker deserves his wages. Do not move around from house to house.

Whenever we as sent ones enter a city, a village, **a courtyard or a settlement** we should look out for (look for, find out about) a person of peace

Mark 6:56

And wherever he went — into villages, towns or countryside — they placed the sick in the marketplaces. They begged him to let them touch even the edge of his cloak, and all who touched it were healed.

In this request, the promise is already included that wherever (within the cities, villages, court yards) we go, there are people of peace and that we will find them if we look out for them.

➔ **This is a matter of faith**

Matthew 7:7

"Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you.

Task: Do a Bible study about the topic person of peace: Luke 10,1-11
What do the sent ones do? What does the person of peace do?

(Referring to "PERSONS OF PEACE", *Big life Manual*, page 17)

- V. 1 – Two by two (going where the Spirit leads).
- V. 2 – Pray for the harvest and workers.
- V. 3 – Going in dependence of the protection of the Lord (going by faith).
- V. 4 – Going by faith (preach the Gospel of the Kingdom where possible).
- V. 4 – Don't waste time, don't be distracted by people that are not open or are not people of peace.
- V. 5 – Opens his/her door to you. (If we meet through spiritual questions and conversations a real potential person of peace, he/she will invite us. Persons of peace are interested in spiritual questions).
- V. 5 – Greet with a word of blessing "Shalom" (peace).
- V. 6 – He/she receives the blessing (and we can now directly ask evangelistic questions).
- V. 7 – Opens the household (The person of peace gathers his/her group. He/she opens the house so that his/her people hear the message of the Kingdom too).
- V. 7 – Have fellowship (then give testimony).
- V. 7 – Hospitality.
- V. 9 – Heal the sick people in the group.
- V. 9 – Proclaim the Gospel of the Kingdom of God.
- V. 10 – If the group doesn't respond to your message, leave.

A person of peace (some translate: “person of honour”) is characterized by:

- A) Is honoured and respected by others. This person has gathered a group around that respects him/her.
 - B) Is spiritually open (hungry) for the message of God’s Kingdom. Receives the blessing.
 - C) Opens his/her house and “Oikos” (Greek: the extended family and the relationship network in all areas of this person’s life - incl. work, spare time, etc.) for the message of God’s Kingdom.
 - D) The person is generous, shares and invites for meals and drinks. This is about hospitality.
- Jesus as well as the Apostles (including Paul) ministered with that principle many times
 - If we work according to the principle of the person and the house of peace we win an already existing and organic group connected to each other
 - It is already a community. When Jesus enters this community, it becomes a true “Community of Faith”.

This is sociologically very important!

But if you try to avoid this principle and instead lead single people to Jesus from entirely different families, clans or social networks (from e.g. tribes, religious backgrounds or even castes) with the goal to form a community with these people, it might take a very long time until a true community of faith is established.

- In communities where familial structures are strong, the person of peace oftentimes is also the head of the family.
- The house of peace is in that case the (extended) family itself!

Examples for people of peace in the New Testament

1. Zacchaeus (Luke 19:1-10) and his house:

- And he desired to see Jesus (v3)
- And he received him with great joy. Jesus said: “Today salvation has come to this house” (v6 +10)

2. Cornelius, his house and his friends (Acts 10:1-48):

- Cornelius was a righteous and God-fearing man with his entire household ... and always prayed to God (v2)
- But Cornelius expected Peter and called all his relatives and his close friends (v 24)
- When Peter entered ... he found a large gathering of people (v27)
While Peter was still speaking ... the Holy Spirit came on all who were gathered ... then Peter replied ... and instructed to baptize them in the name of Jesus Christ. They asked Peter to stay a few days with them. (V44-48)

3. Lydia and her house (Acts 16:13-15 and 40):

- A woman who worshiped God named Lydia ... listened; the Lord opened her heart to respond to Paul’s message (v14)
- When she and the members of her household were baptized, she invited us to her home. And she persuaded us. (v15)

Examples for finding people of peace

Example 1: Paul and Rit. **Father**, who came to faith during evangelism, returned home and shared the message with his kids. They started a Community of Faith.

Example 2: Marcel. At a public healing event, the Lord gave a prophetic word for a man and for new age friends who wanted to hear the Gospel after this public healing event. So it came that a new Community of Faith within the **family** and within the **new age group** started.

Example 3: Philipp. Impression during prayer: **village** “Reinach”, where we moved and soon new Communities of Faith were started.

Example 4: Andrew. On the way seeking a person of peace: he met a leader of a martial arts group on the streets. This led to a new Community of Faith amongst a group of martial arts men.

Example 5: Henok. Prayed for a group and suddenly on his following bicycle tour, an **Ethiopian** man waved who wanted to introduce himself and his friends. They started a new Community of Faith.

Example 6: Sené. Through a prophetic word, a **man from Senegal** realized that is not right to have one wife in Senegal and to get married to another one in Switzerland.

Example 7: Impression during prayer for a person of peace at the **student apartment** – they asked if they wanted to study the Bible together and because the leader said: “Why not?”, a new Community of Faith evolved.

Example 8: A **Mafia boss** was asked if he wanted to study the Word of God and he used the coming Mafia cell gathering (where the entire cell gathered) to study the Bible and **Mafia Bible Community** was started.

Example 9: Max. Prayed for an apartment block. Later, in another city, they met a family that lived in that apartment block. They started a Community of Faith.

Example 10: Mahish. While he was building a new house, the Holy Spirit started showing him specific people and their secrets supernaturally. In the **village**, he met these people and a Community of Faith was started.

Example 11: A woman who had an encounter with Jesus took her husband and her child and told them about Jesus. Because her husband was an influential guru, an entire group came to Christ.

Example 12: A group **published an advertisement** and several groups met and formed as a result.

➔ In this house, with this group of peace: **stay, eat and drink what is given to you!**

Luke 10:5-7

“When you enter a house, first say, ‘Peace to this house.’ If someone who promotes peace is there, your peace will rest on them; if not, it will return to you. Stay there, eating and drinking whatever they give you, for the worker deserves his wages. Do not move around from house to house.

The Lord provides us with simple and clear instructions for what to do after we found the person and a house of peace:

- A) **STAY** with the person and the house of peace and don't move from house to house!
- That sounds as if this would be a secondary fact. But that is a **central principle** of apostolic evangelism
 - Jesus focused or limited himself to a group of twelve because he only had the capacity to invest in a group of twelve people
 - If he hadn't limited himself and focused, the many other disciples that travelled with them might have hindered a solid, deep transformational discipleship of the twelve
 - **Self-limitation** keeps us from shallow discipleship
 - As soon as we've found a group of disciples, we must invest in that group and seriously disciple them, instead of going from house to house or from group to group and only disciplining them shallowly
- B) We are supposed to stay at the house/with the person of peace, EAT and DRINK what is given to us; it's a clear order from the Lord Jesus!
- Eating and drinking in community is very useful for evangelism
 - Putting that into practice can sometimes literally lead to horrible stomach or heart aches!
 - There were some crucial questions in the early Church concerning food: are we allowed to eat and drink everything?
 - For example: the meat on the market that was blessed and consecrated for some other gods?

1 Corinthians 10:23-31

„I have the right to do anything,” you say—but not everything is beneficial. “I have the right to do anything”—but not everything is constructive. No one should seek their own good, but the good of others. Eat anything sold in the meat market without raising questions of conscience, for, “The earth is the Lord’s, and everything in it.” If an unbeliever invites you to a meal and you want to go, eat whatever is put before you without raising questions of conscience. But if someone says to you, “This has been offered in sacrifice,” then do not eat it, both for the sake of the one who told you and for the sake of conscience. I am referring to the other person’s conscience, not yours. For why is my freedom being judged by another’s conscience? If I take part in the meal with thankfulness, why am I denounced because of something I thank God for? So whether you eat or drink or whatever you do, do it all for the glory of God.

1 Corinthians 8:1-10

Now about food sacrificed to idols: We know that “We all possess knowledge.” But knowledge puffs up while love builds up. Those who think they know something do not yet know as they ought to know. But whoever loves God is known by God. So then, about eating food sacrificed to idols: We know that “An idol is nothing at all in the world” and that “There is no God but one.” For even if there are so-called gods, whether in heaven or on earth (as indeed there are many “gods” and many “lords”), yet for us there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we live; and there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we live. But not everyone possesses this knowledge. Some people are still so accustomed to idols that when they eat sacrificial food they think of it as having been sacrificed to a god, and since their conscience is weak, it is defiled. But food does not bring us near to God; we are no worse if we do not eat, and no better if we do. Be careful, however, that the exercise of your rights does not become a stumbling block to the weak. For if someone with a weak conscience sees you, with all your knowledge, eating in an idol’s temple, won’t that person be emboldened to eat what is sacrificed to idols?

Mark 7:15

Nothing outside a person can defile them by going into them. Rather, it is what comes out of a person that defiles them.

Mark 16:17-18

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

Within the Torah (the five books of Moses), there are 613 commandments or laws. These commandments can be put into four categories:

- Moral laws (ethical laws, e.g. the 10 commandments)
- Ritual laws (circumcision, laws of purity, dietary laws)
- Ceremonial laws (laws of the temple cult, laws of sacrifice)
- Judicial laws (political and civil life, civil law area)

Now the question is: Which of the commandments are still true for the New Testament and which of the commandments are fulfilled in Jesus Christ and don't have to be exercised anymore?

- This question can only be thoroughly answered by looking at the Bible:
- The book of Hebrews shows us clearly that through "the once and for all sacrifice of Jesus" the ceremonial laws are fulfilled and don't have to be exercised anymore.
- The same is true for the dietary laws (ritual laws) - as shown in the book of Acts 10,10-16.

Acts 10:10-16

He became hungry and wanted something to eat, and while the meal was being prepared, he fell into a trance. He saw heaven opened and something like a large sheet being let down to earth by its four corners. It contained all kinds of four-footed animals, as well as reptiles and birds. Then a voice told him, "Get up, Peter. Kill and eat." "Surely not, Lord!" Peter replied. "I have never eaten anything impure or unclean." The voice spoke to him a second time, "Do not call anything impure that God has made clean." This happened three times, and immediately the sheet was taken back to heaven.

In different sending regions, people will show us their hospitality and invite us. They will serve foods and drinks. Among those, there will be certain things we normally don't eat, e.g. pork meat, foods that are consecrated to other gods, foods containing blood (e.g. in Massai tribes) or drinks that are fermented in some way!

Jesus as well as Paul encourages us to great openness towards these things! But at the same time, the New Testament clearly says that if we feel guilty or somehow uncomfortable we should leave it. At least we are supposed to respect and honour everybody within his/her own conscience.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

- d) Look for and describe 5 other people (houses) of peace within the New Testament.

- e) Discuss within your group where and how you've found people and houses of peace in your ministry so far.
- f) Discuss the following question with your group: with which strategy can you find people and houses of peace in your surroundings?
- g) Write down where in your neighbourhood and surroundings you think you will find people and houses of peace.

- h) Discuss very practically where you personally set clear limits about food and drinks.
- i) Each group presents what they found out and learned to the other groups.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

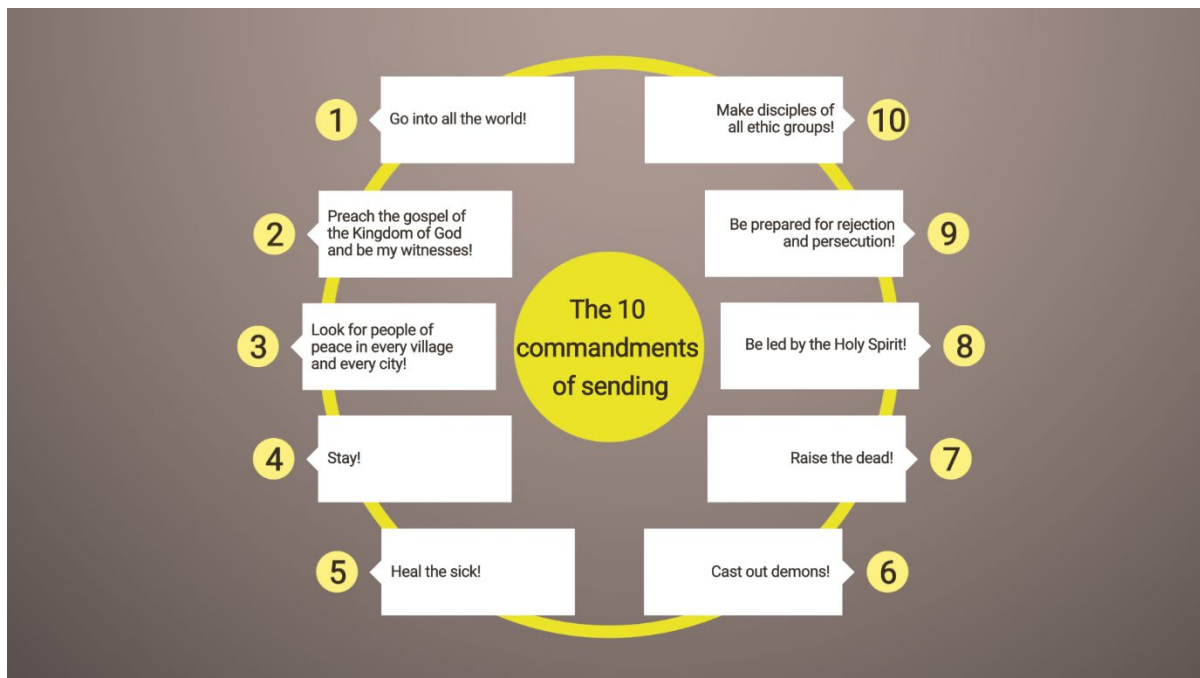
1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with the team/a partner ☐
2. GO – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached God put on your heart ☐
3. FIND people and houses of peace ☐
4. PREACH – the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
6. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with at least 5 people. ☐
8. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, repentance, baptism and receiving the Holy Spirit ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 15

5th Commandment of sending: Heal the sick



Before sending out his disciples at the end of his ministry and on his behalf, Jesus prepared his disciples well during the timespan of three years. The disciples went through an intensive training of sending.

→ Before they were sent, the disciples had to meet the conditions for the sending

Summarized we have 5 spiritual realities we need to grasp and receive by faith before we are sent out:

1. Recognition and receiving of Jesus' call and calling into the ministry of sending
→ **Listen you ALL my followers: Make disciples of all ethnic groups by going to them, baptizing them and ...**
2. Taking part in an intensive training of sending
→ **Teach them to keep everything I've commanded you to do**
3. Claim the promises for the sending by faith

Promise 1: I am with you always, to the very end of the age

Matthew 28:18 and 20

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. And go baptizing and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Promise 2: The harvest is plentiful

Luke 10:2

He told them, "The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."

Promise 3: A ripe, even overripe harvest is ready (people who are ready and open for the Gospel)

John 4:35

Don't you have a saying, 'It's still four months until harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest.

Promise 4: A ripe, even overripe harvest is ready (people who are ready and open for the Gospel)

That doesn't only mean open and prepared people in general but people of peace as well

Matthew 10:11

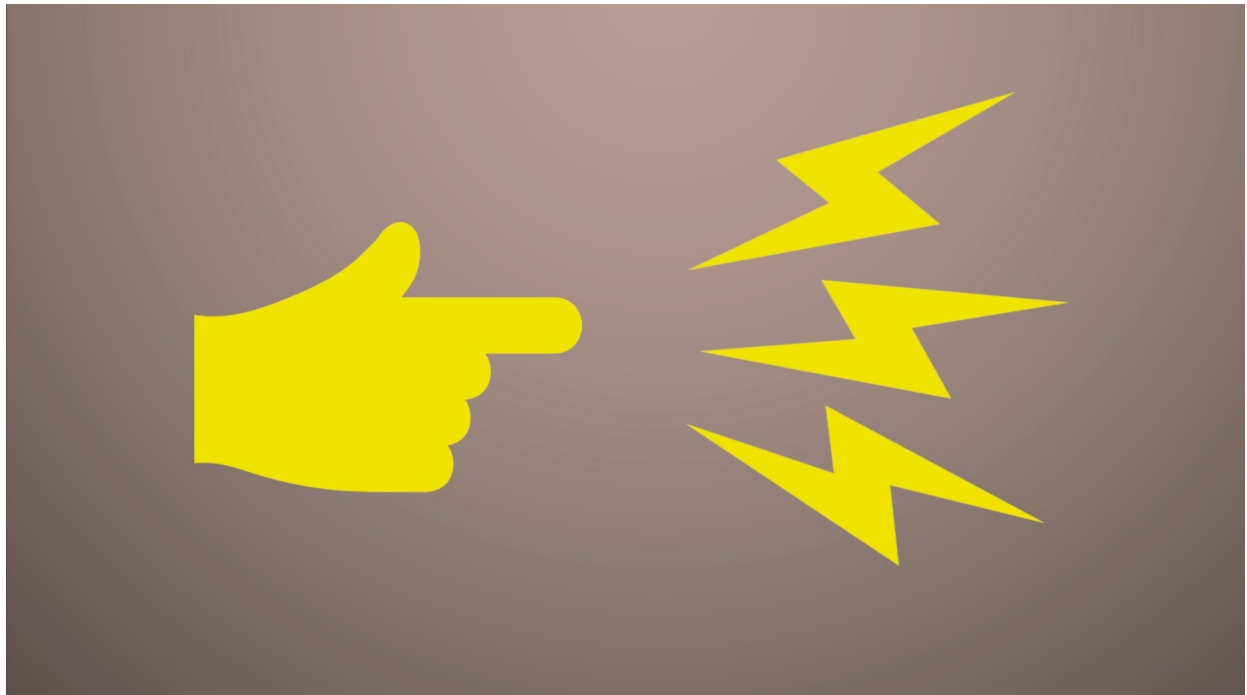
Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave.

Prayer for harvest workers

Matthew 9:37-38

Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest is plentiful but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field."

Receiving **authority** for the sending and the required **power** to carry out the task carefully



Authority and power

Luke 9:1-2

When Jesus had called the Twelve together, he gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases, and he sent them out to proclaim the kingdom of God and to heal the sick.

- Authority and power are requirements needed to fulfil the 5th commandment of sending
- **In Greek we read:**
 - Authority = **Exousia**
 - Power = **Dynamis**
- After the Scriptures clearly said that we are all called into the ministry of sending, we must ask the logical question if we all have the same authority and power to carry out the ministry of sending.
- It's crucial that we understand that we are sent **on Christ's behalf**, like the New Testament says: **"We are the ambassadors of Christ."**

2 Corinthians 5:20

We are therefore Christ's ambassadors, as though God were making his appeal through us. We implore you on Christ's behalf: Be reconciled to God.

- Because we go as ambassadors and representatives of Christ, he equips us with the corresponding authority and power **he himself** had received from the Father when he came to earth to carry out the ministry of sending.

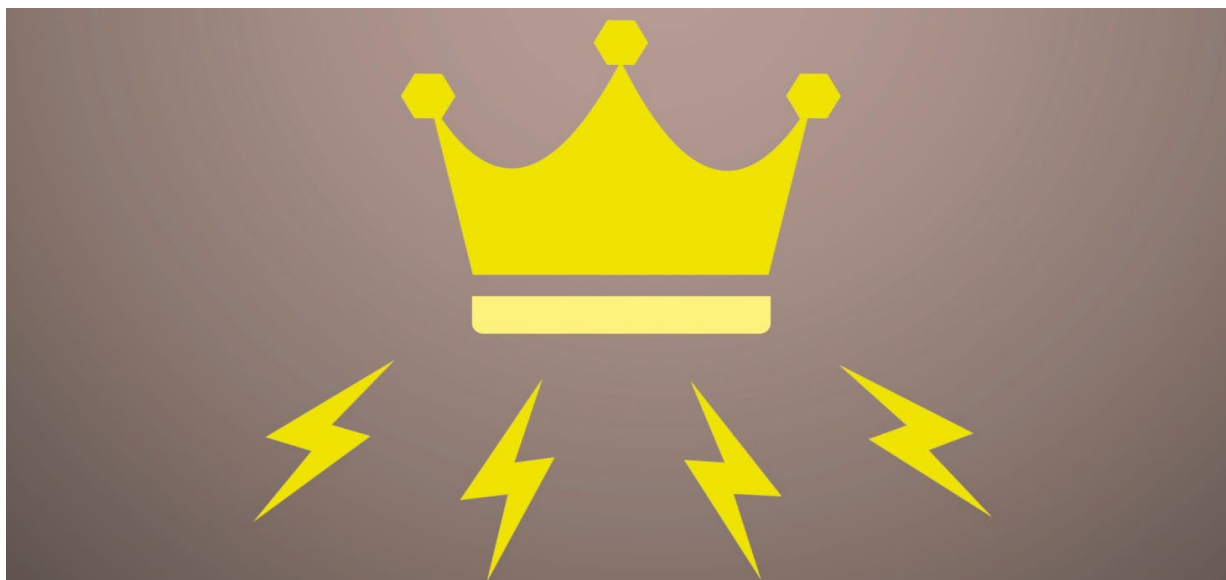
Matthew 10:1 and 7-8

Jesus called his twelve disciples to him and gave them authority to drive out impure spirits and to heal every disease and sickness.

As you go, proclaim this message: 'The kingdom of heaven has come near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

These twelve Jesus sent out and commanded them ... "as you go":

- ⇒ Proclaim this message: The Kingdom of God is at hand
- ⇒ Heal the sick,
- ⇒ Raise the dead,
- ⇒ Clean the lepers
- ⇒ Cast out evil spirits



- ⇒ In the Greek we find here the word “**EXOUSIA**“, which means
 - Authority
 - Might
 - Right and
 - Strength
- ⇒ If you receive Exousia, **then clearly the instruction and duty that follows is to execute** Exousia.
- ⇒ Authority is both a right and a duty!
- ⇒ When an ambassador in **times of peace** is sent into another country he receives a corresponding **letter of accreditation** to go with. This letter is the given authority or the authorization and enablement to carry out certain instructions.
- ⇒ The ambassador must show this particular **letter of accreditation** to his hosting foreign country to prove his being a legitimate representative.
- ⇒ He then is acknowledged and accredited to
 - Speak in the name of his government
 - Conduct negotiations
 - Deliver messages
 - Sign contracts
- ⇒ Whenever the ambassador speaks, his government speaks because he was authorized
- ⇒ Authority therefore empowers to do something one couldn't do otherwise
- ⇒ In **times of war**, the words of an ambassador are not sufficient anymore. Now tangible actions must follow his words!
- ⇒ It's not only about proclamation anymore but about demonstration **in power (Dynamis)**.
- ⇒ Power means specific **power actions**

Power actions within war against the kingdom of darkness are according to Mark 16, Luke 9, Luke 10, Matthew 10 and Matthew 28 e.g.:

- A) Proclamation of the **word** (the right and authority to speak, to call...)
- B) Powerful prayers
- C) Declarations
- D) Healings
- E) Deliverances
- F) Raising of the dead

Even the Apostles did their ministry using this power from above

Romans 15:18-19

I will not venture to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished through me in leading the Gentiles to obey God by what I have said and done—by the power (dynamis) of signs and wonders, through the power (dynamis) of the Spirit of God. So from Jerusalem all the way around to Illyricum, I have fully proclaimed the gospel of Christ.

- ⇒ When the Lord Jesus sent out his disciples, he gave them all authority (exousia) and power (dynamis) needed to bring the gospel of God's Kingdom to the ends of the earth and to be victorious against all power (dynamis) of the enemy!

Luke 10:19

I have given you authority (exousia) to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power (dynamis) of the enemy; nothing will harm you.

Here some examples for what purpose the disciples had AND have the authority and power but also the instruction and duty:

- Go into all the earth
- Be witnesses
- Evangelize, preach, proclaim, debate
- Lead people to repentance
- Forgive sins = declare the forgiveness of sins to people
- Call people to faith = Call people into following Jesus
- Baptize people in water
- Laying on of hands, so people are filled with the Holy Spirit
- Suffer
- Announce judgment = shake dust off their feet of people don't listen
- All kinds of healings
- Deliverances from evil spirits
- Raising the dead
- Bind/loosen
- Start discipleship groups = found «Communities of Faith» and/or spiritual families
- Educate/encourage/exhort/rebuke others
- Make disciples = training
- Bless
- Fasting and prayer
- Send

Exactly that authority and power (and much more) the Lord gives to everybody that seriously wants to follow Jesus.

Matthew 28:20

And teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.

5th commandment of sending: Heal the sick!

- ⇒ In the four Gospels, Jesus gives his disciples clear instructions to preach the Gospel, to cast out demons and to heal the sick
- ⇒ We are his disciples now and that's why these instructions are the same for us too!

Luke 10:8-9

He said, "The knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom of God has been given to you, but to others I speak in parables, so that, though seeing, they may not see; though hearing, they may not understand."

Mark 16:17-18

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

Matthew 10:8

Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

John 14:12

Very truly I tell you, whoever believes in me will do the works I have been doing, and they will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.

- ⇒ The Kingdom of God spreads wherever the Gospel is proclaimed and is accompanied by signs and wonders.

Mark 16:20

Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

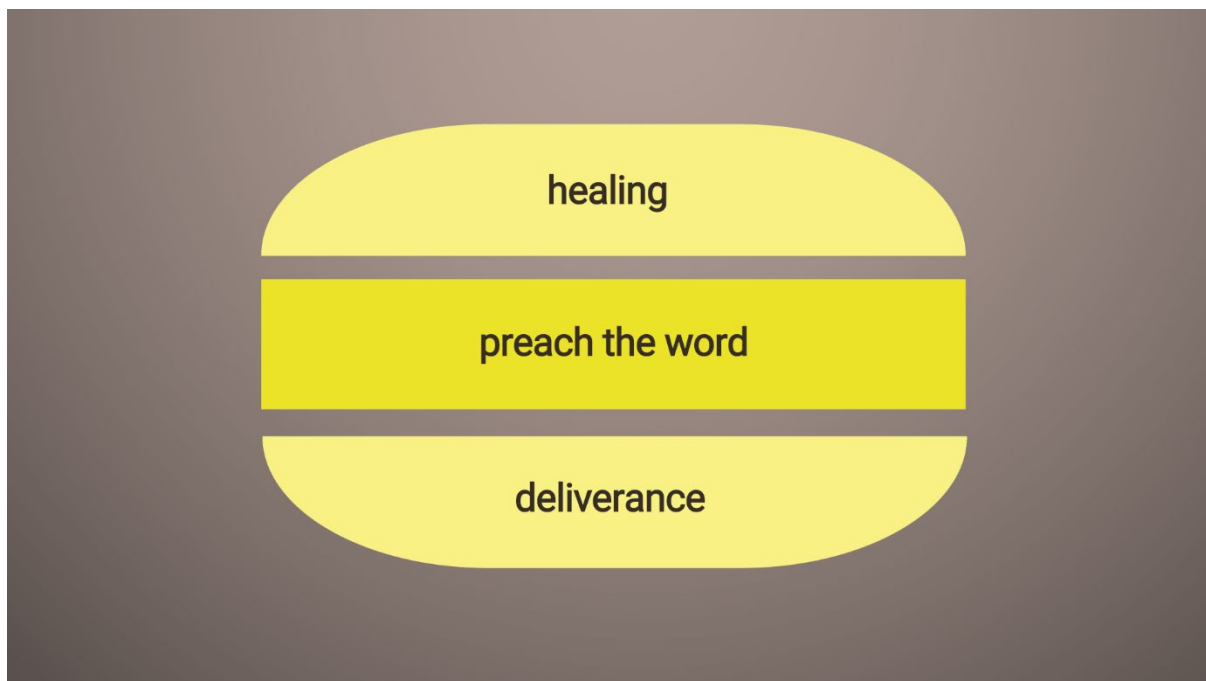
- ⇒ Paul also wrote:

1 Corinthians 2:4-5

My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the Spirit's power, so that your faith might not rest on human wisdom, but on God's power.

The three most common power actions within pioneer evangelism

We call it the Gospel-sandwich:



- Proclamation of the Gospel is the centre (meat)
- Followed by healings and deliverances (bread)
- **The Kingdom of God comes with power:**

Mark 9:1

And he said to them, "Truly I tell you, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see that the kingdom of God has come with power."



10 thoughts concerning the power actions (healings and deliverances) and the proclamation of God's Kingdom

- 1) You cannot separate the **actions of power** (healings and deliverances) from the Kingdom of God
- 2) You cannot replace the **actions of power** (healings and deliverances) by programs.
- 3) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are demonstrations of God's Kingdom, they make it tangible and visible on earth. Many times, demonstrations of power (healings and deliverances) happen first and proclamations of the word (= proclamations of God's Kingdom) follow.
- 4) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are a true blessing for our lives.
- 5) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are an expression of God's compassion and love for people.
- 6) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** destroy resistance and catalyse the process of a new birth.
- 7) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are «fruits» and a specific expression of Jesus' work of redemption for people.
- 8) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are signs (**characteristics, trademarks**) of God's Kingdom.
- 9) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are signs that point to God's new world where there will be no suffering or diseases anymore. Future invades the present.
- 10) **Actions of power** (healings and deliverances) **worked by the Holy Spirit** are in a direct relation to our relationship with the Holy Spirit.

God's primary will is always healing!

As long as we really think that sickness and disease can be a «God-given» blessing, we **won't** really believe in healings.

→ That God's primary will is always healing can be seen in three ways throughout the Bible:

A) The nature of God is love and he wants to bless and heal

Exodus 15:26

He said, "If you listen carefully to the Lord your God and do what is right in his eyes, if you pay attention to his commands and keep all his decrees, I will not bring on you any of the diseases I brought on the Egyptians, for I am the Lord, who heals you."

James 1:17

Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

B) God revealed his perfect nature and will in Jesus. Healing is from God, all kinds of destructive works are from the devil. Jesus never walked and ministered to spread diseases and sickness.

Acts 10:38

How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing ALL who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.

C) God sent his son in order to be beaten and sacrificed also for our healing.

Isaiah 53:4-5

He was despised and rejected by mankind, a man of suffering, and familiar with pain. Like one from whom people hide their faces he was despised, and we held him in low esteem. Surely he took up our pain and bore our suffering, yet we considered him punished by God, stricken by him, and afflicted. But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was on him, and by his wounds we are healed.

Jesus fulfilled this word from Isaiah:

Matthew 8:16-17

When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick. This was to fulfil what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah: "He took up our infirmities and bore our diseases."

So the question is never: Is it God's will to heal? But instead: How do I get authority to receive healing and to heal others?

The simple answer is: Jesus took up and bore all our infirmities and diseases already – so we simply need to believe in what he has accomplished for us on the cross and the power that comes with it! Sickness is never God's primary will!

But if someone is sick and DOESN'T get healed, it's clear that God also moves within that circumstance. He alone can use this difficult circumstance and turn it for the better (in all things, God works for the good of those who love him and are called according to his purpose...Romans 8:28).

The power of the Holy Spirit lives in us:

Romans 8:11

And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies because of his Spirit who lives in you.

- ⇒ In the Gospels, we read about around 30 healings that happened through Jesus
- ⇒ In more of 10 of the situations, Jesus had to deliver the person from evil spirits so the person could be healed
- ⇒ Among the 661 verses in the Gospel of Mark 209 talk about miracles and signs.

Testimonies of the author, Florian Bärtsch

1. Marsha from Irbit



➔ The blind see

2. Rajneesh from Madhya Pradesh. Deaf-mute from birth



➔ Deaf hear

3. Anatoli from Bashkortostan.



➔ The lame walk

4. Evangelism with demonstration of power



➔ Actions of power

5. The man with the hat is a former Imam

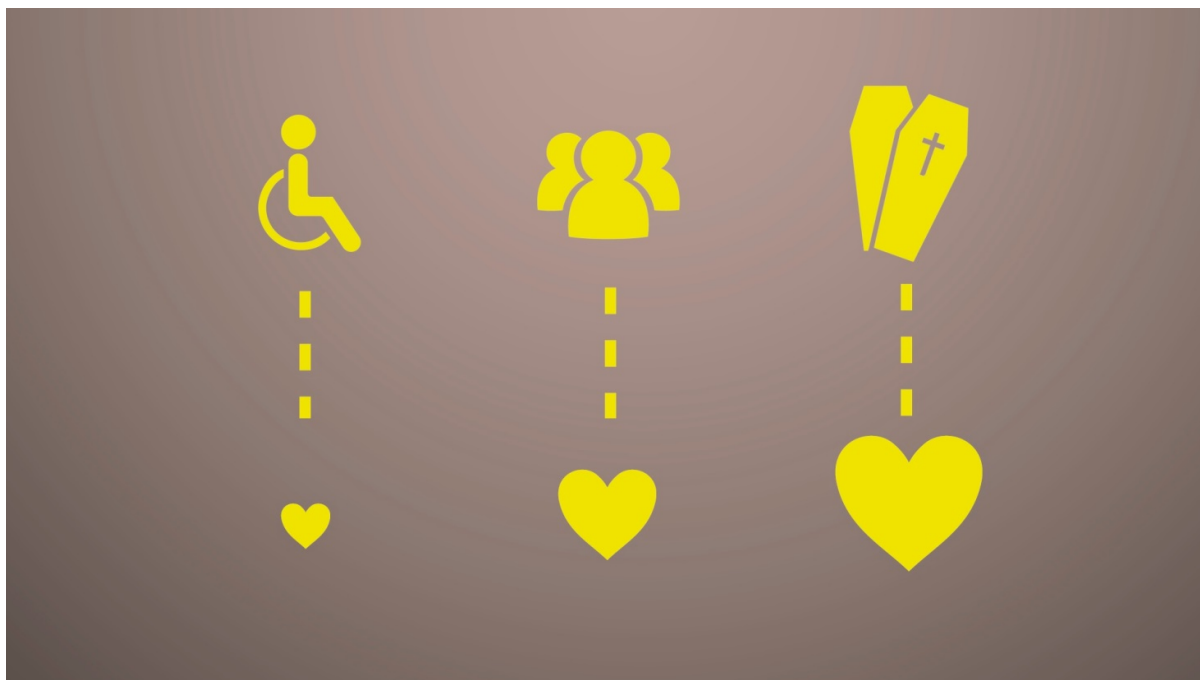


➔ He experienced healing

Within these 4 days out on the streets in the Hindu- and Islamic villages of South East Asia approximately 1000 (one thousand!) healings happened! When the people saw the power of God move they opened their hearts wide for Isa (= Jesus in Islam) and declared they want to follow him. Sometimes, the presence and power of God was so tangible that all people present were completely healed. They heard the Gospel of God's Kingdom and decided to become Isahis (= followers of Christ). In these moments, they kneeled down and devoted their lives and their settlement to Isa.



Measure of faith



1:100, 1:50, 1:25

When people pray for the sick today, complete miracles don't always happen - even people that are very experienced in the ministry. Sometimes, after we prayed for a few people, we saw the «big miracles» happen. Normally, we see a big miracle after having prayed for 25, 50 or a 100 people.

What should we do if we pray and healing DOESN'T happen?

- Pray a second time!
- Pray until God heals or speaks to us (compare Paul in 2 Corinthians 12:7-9 ... a thorn is given into my flesh ... three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.")
- Even through Paul, not all were healed (2 Timothy 4:20; Erastus stayed in Corinth, Trophimus I left behind sick in Milet)
- By the way, even when a «big miracle » happens, it doesn't mean automatically that people will start following Jesus. Few that experienced healing through Jesus really started following him.
- John Wimber simply said: "If we prayed 50 times and DID'T see any healing manifest we take a short break and pray for another 50 people."

Healing is related to the following:

- A) **Word of God** (commands us to heal the sick and promises healing)
- B) **Spirit of God** (we were filled with the Holy Spirit and in this power, we can pray for the sick, the Holy Spirit moves and does a miracle)
- C) **Faith** (by faith we as his disciples receive the gift of the Holy Spirit and by faith in the promises of the word of God we lay hands on the sick and they WILL recover)

James 5:15

And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise them up. If they have sinned, they will be forgiven.

Luke 17:19

Then he said to him, "Rise and go; your faith has made you well."

Healing by faith

Healing is a part of the work of Jesus and by faith we can release healing

- a) Jesus Christ reveals the Father to us
- b) The Father wants us healthy
- c) It's always the devil that wants people to be sick and remain sick
- d) Jesus took up all infirmities and bore our diseases on the cross for us
- e) We must believe in Jesus as a healer
- f) The key for healing, is to apply and use our faith
- g) If we pray by faith (in the finished work of Jesus), healing will manifest

- D) **Empathy– compassion**

Matthew 9:36

When he saw the crowds, he had compassion on them, because they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd.

Mark 1:41

Jesus was indignant. He reached out his hand and touched the man. "I am willing," he said. "Be clean!"

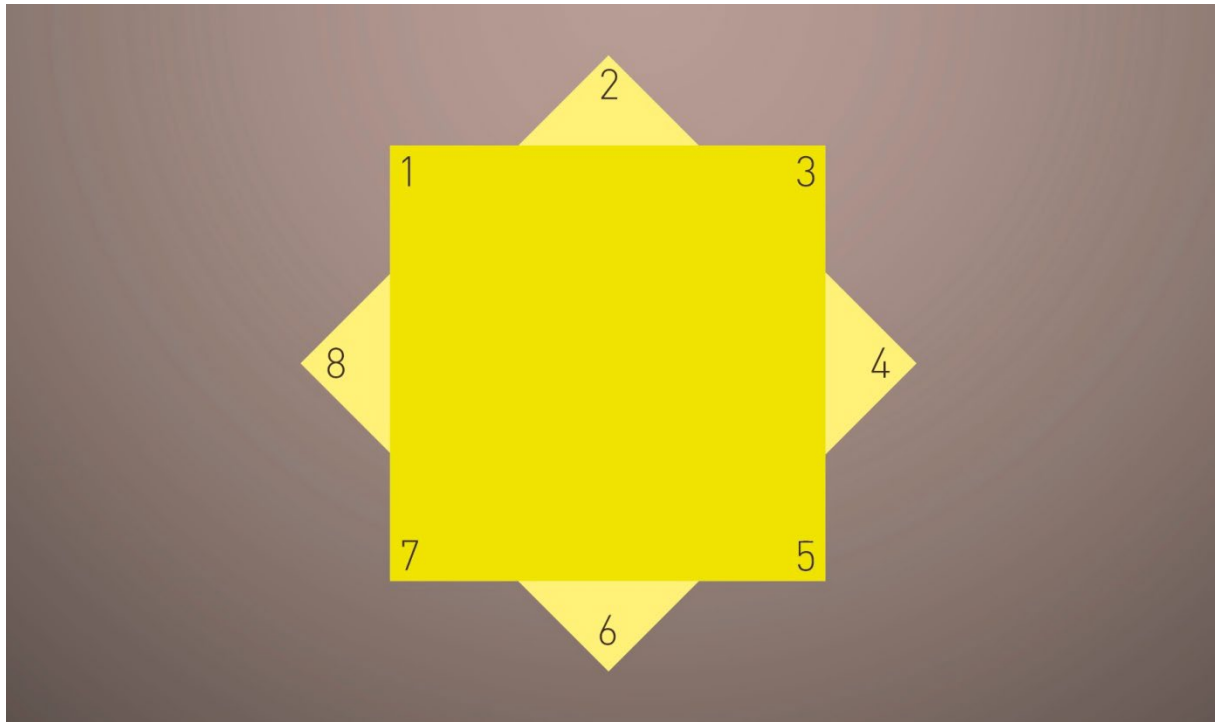
Matthew 20:34

Jesus had compassion on them and touched their eyes. Immediately they received their sight and followed him.

Healing practically

When we precisely look at Jesus we can see 8 ways how He healed people practically.

8 ways / “methods” for healing the sick practically



1. A) To lay hands on a person

Mark 16:18

“...they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well.”

1. B) To lay hands on a sick part of the body

Matthew 20:34

Jesus had compassion on them and touched their eyes. Immediately they received their sight and followed him.

→ It's not even mentioned if Jesus prayed or declared healing

2. The sick person touches us

Mark 6:56

And wherever he went—into villages, towns or countryside—they placed the sick in the marketplaces. They begged him to let them touch even the edge of his cloak, and all who touched it were healed.

3. Lay hands on the person, speak to the sick person and declare healing

Luke 5:13

Jesus reached out his hand and touched the man. “I am willing,” he said. “Be clean!” And immediately the leprosy left him.

4. Lay hands on the person, speak to the person and instruct the person to do a step of faith

Acts 3:6

Then Peter said, "Silver or gold I do not have, but what I do have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk."

5. DON'T lay hands – simply speak to the person and declare**Mark 3:5**

He looked around at them in anger and, deeply distressed at their stubborn hearts, said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." He stretched it out, and his hand was completely restored.

John 5:8

Then Jesus said to him, "Get up! Pick up your mat and walk."

John 9:7

"Go," he told him, "wash in the Pool of Siloam" (this word means "Sent"). So the man went and washed, and came home seeing.

6. DON'T lay hands – simply speak to the pain or the disease and order it to leave**Luke 4:38-39**

Jesus left the synagogue and went to the home of Simon. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever, and they asked Jesus to help her. So he bent over her and rebuked the fever, and it left her. She got up at once and began to wait on them.

7. DON'T lay hands – simply anoint with oil**Mark 6:13**

They drove out many demons and anointed many sick people with oil and healed them.

8. "Other methods"**John 9:6**

After saying this, he spit on the ground, made some mud with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes.

Mark 7:32-33

There some people brought to him a man who was deaf and could hardly talk, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. After he took him aside, away from the crowd, Jesus put his fingers into the man's ears. Then he spit and touched the man's tongue.

Mark 8:23-25

He took the blind man by the hand and led him outside the village. When he had spit on the man's eyes and put his hands on him, Jesus asked, "Do you see anything?" He looked up and said, "I see people; they look like trees walking around." Once more Jesus put his hands on the man's eyes. Then his eyes were opened, his sight was restored, and he saw everything clearly.

Acts 19:12

...so that even handkerchiefs and aprons that had touched him were taken to the sick, and their illnesses were cured and the evil spirits left them.

Final thoughts

- We have authority and power to heal the sick!
- Let us gladly go and heal the sick!
- Personally, the author (Florian Bärtsch) has seen how the Lord has tremendously blessed people who are willing to BEsent to the lost and reach out to them!

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from the teaching.

- d) Pray for the sick people among you now. Note what happens.

- e) Plan an outreach where you can heal at least 10 sick people.

- f) Each group presents what they've learned to the other groups.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

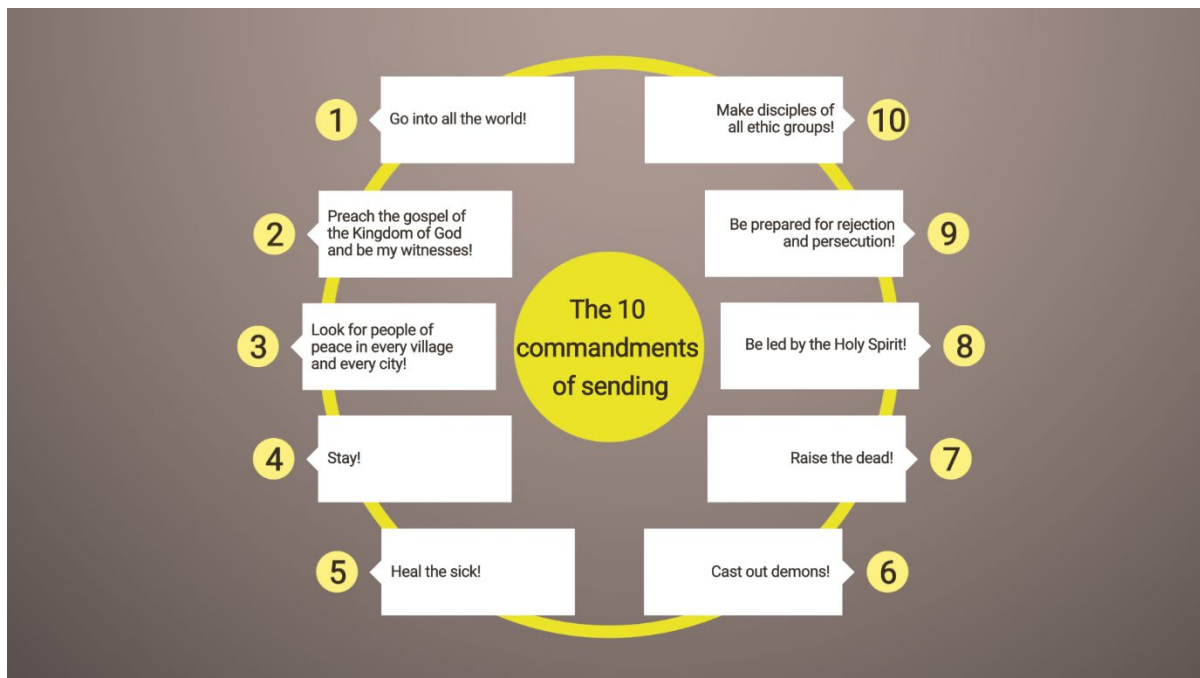
1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with a partner/ the team ☐
2. GOING – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached of the ethnic groups God put on your heart ☐
3. FIND people of peace ☐
4. PREACH – the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
6. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
7. SHARE your personal life transforming testimony with 5 people ☐
8. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, repentance, baptism and reception of the Holy Spirit ☐
10. PRAY FOR AND HEALING for 10 sick people within an outreach ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 16

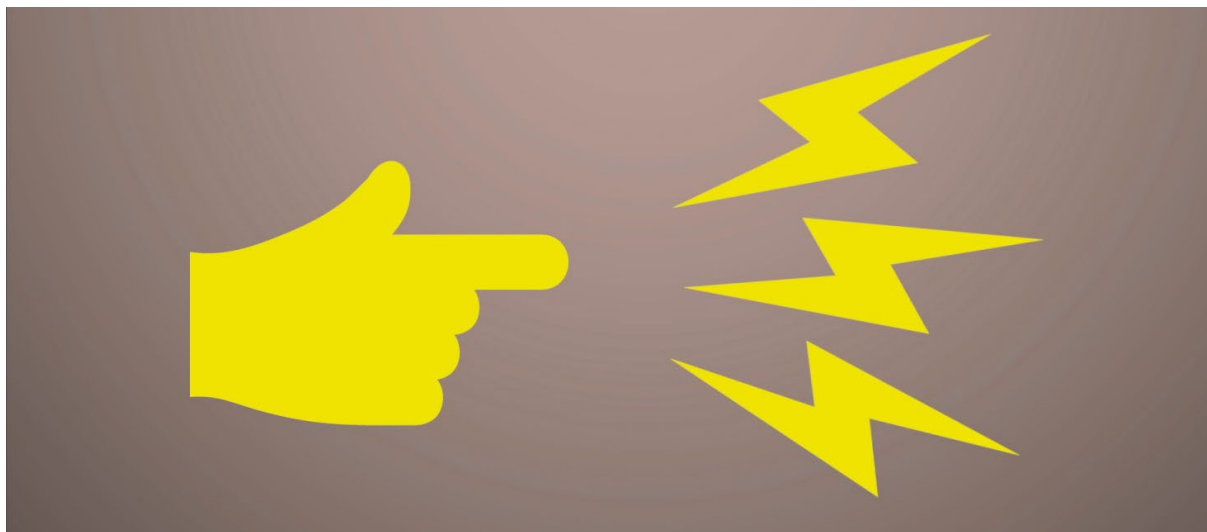
6th Commandment of sending: Cast out demons!



Summary for the 5th commandment of sending: Heal the sick!

- **Healing** is a **huge topic** and not always easy to handle. We only looked at how the healing ministry looks like and can be practiced in the context of sending.
- Now we will talk about **casting out evil spirits and the ministry of deliverance** – which is a huge topic. In this training manual, we will only focus on the ministry of deliverance within the context of sending.
- **The same is true here:** Jesus *is the sent one* and *the* example for the ministry of sending and all aspects of deliverance
- More than **30 miracles** of Jesus are reported in the Gospels

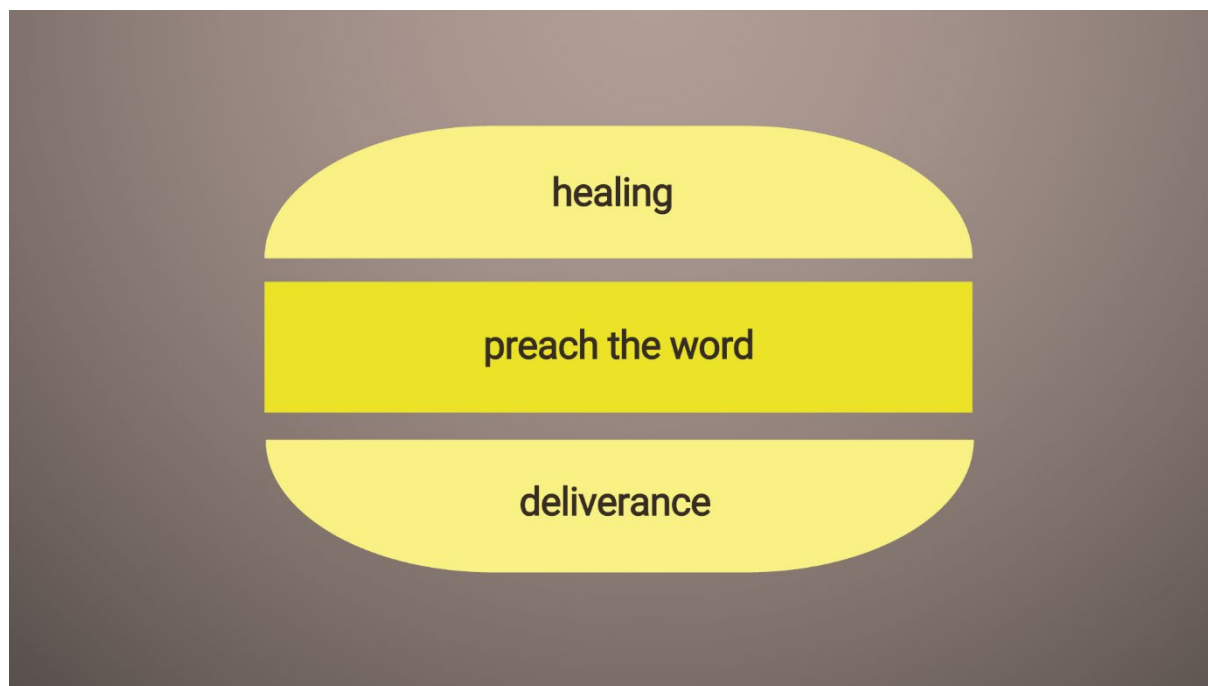
The first miracle of Jesus mentioned is a **deliverance from evil spirits**. Deliverance from evil spirits is the only miracle that is not directly mentioned in the Old Testament!



Mark 1:23-26

Just then a man in their synagogue who was possessed by an impure spirit cried out, "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of God!" "Be quiet!" said Jesus sternly. "Come out of him!" The impure spirit shook the man violently and came out of him with a shriek.

Within the ministry of sending of Jesus **proclaiming, deliverance from evil spirits and healings** were one.



- 1) Jesus proclaimed the Gospel and drove out evil spirits

Mark 1:39

So he traveled throughout Galilee, preaching in their synagogues and driving out demons.

- 2) Jesus healed and drove out evil spirits

Mark 1:32

That evening after sunset the people brought to Jesus all the sick and demon-possessed.

- 3) Jesus **didn't separate healing ministry** and the **ministry of deliverance**. Diseases and demonic oppressions were «mixed».

Mark 1:32

That evening after sunset the people brought to Jesus all the sick and demon-possessed.

Luke 4:40-41

At sunset, the people brought to Jesus all who had various kinds of sickness, and laying his hands on each one, he healed them. Moreover, demons came out of many people, shouting, "You are the Son of God!" But he rebuked them and would not allow them to speak, because they knew he was the Messiah.

- 4) Within Jesus' ministry of sending sometimes **evil spirits of weakness caused a disease** and in this case, Jesus doesn't pray for healing but delivers the woman.

Luke 13:11-13

"Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

Summary: Within Jesus' ministry of sending it is clear: **He** brings the **Kingdom of God**, **He** proclaims the Gospel, **He** casts out evil spirits and **He** heals.

Luke 11:20

But if I drive out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.



At the beginning of his ministry, he drove out an evil spirit and that was true until the end of his ministry:

Luke 13:32

He replied, "Go tell that fox, 'I will keep on driving out demons and healing people today and tomorrow, and on the third day I will reach my goal.'

The collision of two Kingdoms: On the one hand, the kingdom of darkness which keeps the land of people captive and on the other hand, the Kingdom of God which comes, invades and conquers the earth

A clash between two kingdoms happens

We are at war, total war which means that everyone fights against each other. We are within a spiritual war. That's why a true breakthrough is needed.

Victory comes by proclaiming and by demonstrating the Kingdom of God in **collision with evil spirits** (kingdom of darkness).

Jesus did that and the same is true for Paul

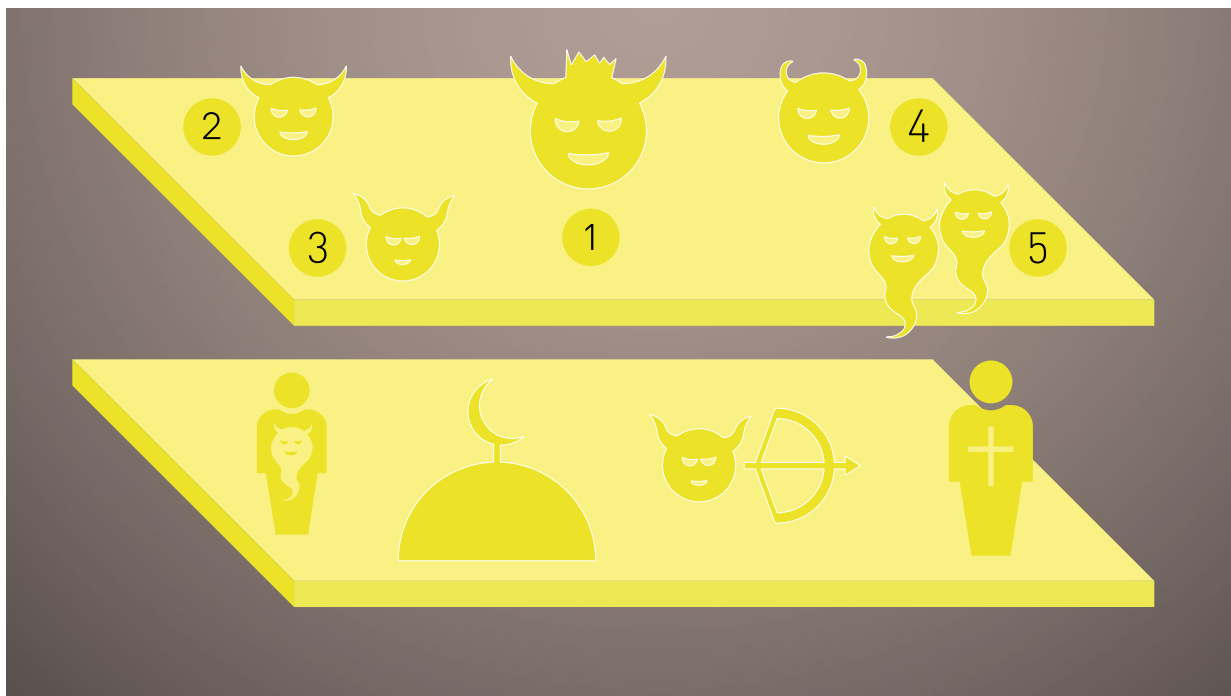
Ephesians 6:10-13

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God, so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand.

The spiritual war

Isaiah 14:11-17

All your pomp has been brought down to the grave, along with the noise of your harps; maggots are spread out beneath you and worms cover you. How you have fallen from heaven, morning star, son of the dawn! You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low the nations! You said in your heart, "I will ascend to the heavens; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of Mount Zaphon. I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High." But you are brought down to the realm of the dead, to the depths of the pit. Those who see you stare at you, they ponder your fate: "Is this the man who shook the earth and made kingdoms tremble, the man who made the world a wilderness, who overthrew its cities and would not let his captives go home?"



1 John 3:8

The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.

The devil (1) is a fallen angel and the leader of the hostile army. He reigns with the rulers (2), authorities (3), the powers of this dark world (4), and the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms (5).

These rulers live in their spiritual realms but manifest/incarnate in our visible world. If we as sent ones go into the world to the unreached to proclaim the Gospel of the Kingdom, we encounter different forms of resistance.

1. We encounter demonized people. We cast out the demons through the word of authority.
2. The enemy tries to stop our going into the world, by firing flaming arrows from the hidden. This could be a sickness that comes upon us suddenly. It could be a direct demonic attack on our body, our soul or on our heart. With the "shield of faith and the sword of the Spirit" we rebuke these attacks.
3. Sometimes we encounter "the structured demonic". This means we encounter sinful and false systems like, false religions, prostitution, violence, slavery and so on. These strongholds can't be cast out by simply one word. But what we can do instead, is use the weapon of prayer and preaching the word and thereby disempower and destroy these strongholds.

2 Corinthians 10:4-5

The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

We should and can proceed against these three forms of the demonic directly. But we should not and cannot proceed against the devil (1), rulers (2), authorities (3), the powers of this dark world (4), and the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms (5) if they haven't been manifest or incarnate somehow on this earth. We cannot and should not bind or rebuke the demonic powers over cities, regions or nations.

The spiritual war raging at the moment:

- 1) God created earth
- 2) God originally gave Adam and Eve responsibility and dominion over the earth
- 3) The serpent seduced Adam and Eve and they lost the dominion over the earth to the devil
- 4) Now the devil is lord of the earth
- 5) Through his death on the cross, Jesus conquered sin, Hell, Satan and death forever
- 6) Because of Jesus' victory, we can win back the world out of the devil's **terror regime**.

→ We attack and conquer! The devil is on retreat and tries to stop us. Your Kingdom come!

Mark 16:18

"They will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

Example from the 2nd World War: when the Allies started their liberation and recapture mission

D Day: Departed Day

The day the Allies started to conquer back Western Europe, which was occupied by the Germans = 6th of June 1944. This can be compared to the first coming of Jesus, his death on the cross and the pouring out of the Holy Spirit on Pentecost.

V-Day: Victory Day

The day Germany unconditionally surrendered and Western Europe was delivered = 8th of May 1945. This can be compared to the second coming of Jesus.

The devil is outraged which means when we truly bring the Kingdom of God, **collisions with the kingdom of darkness** will happen. **There will be no victory without collisions.**

But we attack the devil, bind him **punctually** where he steps in our way or wherever he tries to stop us and we plunder his house!

Matthew 12:29

Or again, how can anyone enter a strong man's house and carry off his possessions unless he first ties up the strong man? Then he can plunder his house.

- Because Jesus has already **won the victory**, he **can and did give us the authority and power** for us, as we go as sent ones to cast out evil spirits and heal the sick
- **Diseases, demonic oppressions and captivity – those are all works of the devil we are supposed to destroy by Jesus' power.**

1 John 3:8

The one who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.

Luke 10:19

I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you.

Jesus gave us authority over all demons!

Luke 9:1-2

When Jesus had called the Twelve together, he gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases, and he sent them out to proclaim the kingdom of God and to heal the sick.

The disciples were sent by Jesus and they returned **full of joy and gladness** and said:

Luke 10:17

The seventy-two returned with joy and said, "Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name."

Later the sent one Paul said full of thanksgiving:

1 Corinthians 15:57

But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ

When we go and reach out to the unreached and proclaim the Gospel of God's Kingdom, **we will definitely** meet sick people and people who suffer from evil spirits. We have authority and power to heal and cast out evil spirits **by faith!**

Let us heal the sick and cast out evil spirits in **great faith, trust and boldness** - trusting the finished work of Jesus!



Experiences

This woman was severely oppressed by evil spirits. Five men tried to hold her – but the woman had an incredible power inside her and got rid of them easily. Then the police came, we had to interrupt and couldn't finish the deliverance. After Florian prayed the whole night for deliverance, an English evangelist came. The same woman from the night before came, the demon manifested itself through the woman and tore down the curtains. The English man spoke a word to her, the evil spirits left her immediately and she was completely free.

Mark 9:28-29

After Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately, "Why couldn't we drive it out?" He replied, "This kind can come out only by prayer."

Matthew 17:18-21

Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out of the boy, and he was healed at that moment. Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and asked, "Why couldn't we drive it out?" He replied, "Because you have so little faith. Truly I tell you, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you."

Preparation for going: prayer and fasting!

Manifestations

- Cries: they are afraid
- Fall
- Speaking in strange voices
- Winding like snakes
- They behave like they are having sex: unclean spirits
- People in trance
- Flickering of eyes

There are various sorts of demonic manifestations.

Manifestations are nothing to be afraid of → we have been given authority and power and we can act in it (we walk by faith)

Luke 4:35

"Be quiet!" Jesus said sternly. "Come out of him!" Then the demon threw the man down before them all and came out without injuring him.

- **Amos:** At the beginning of his meetings he simply says: "Praise the Lord!" After that, people who are possessed often begin to manifest.
- Experience with a woman that wanted prayer for a deaf ear – an evil spirit left her and she could hear again.
- Experience of a man who had a dream where a friend showed up and cursed him. From that morning on, he was an alcoholic. He destroyed his family with his addiction. He came and received prayer, the evil spirit manifested, shook the man and left him. Immediately, the man was free from alcoholism.



When we cast out evil spirits, it is very important that we always proclaim the Gospel as well!

Luke 11:24-26

"When an impure spirit comes out of a person, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, 'I will return to the house I left.' When it arrives, it finds the house swept clean and put in order. When it goes and takes seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that person is worse than the first."

Practice: How did Jesus do it practically?

In 3 examples we read what Jesus said

1. **Matthew 8:28-32**

*When he arrived at the other side in the region of the Gadarenes, two demon-possessed men coming from the tombs met him. They were so violent that no one could pass that way. "What do you want with us, Son of God?" they shouted. "Have you come here to torture us before the appointed time?" Some distance from them a large herd of pigs was feeding. The demons begged Jesus, "If you drive us out, send us into the herd of pigs." **He said to them, "Go!"** So they came out and went into the pigs, and the whole herd rushed down the steep bank into the lake and died in the water.*

In the parallel passage in Mark 5:9 Jesus asks for the name of the evil spirits to identify them.

2. **Mark 9:25-26**

*When Jesus saw that a crowd was running to the scene, he rebuked the impure spirit. **"You deaf and mute spirit," he said, "I command you, come out of him and never enter him again."** The spirit shrieked, convulsed him violently and came out. The boy looked so much like a corpse that many said, "He's dead."*

Come out of him and never enter him again!

3. **Luke 4:33-35**

*In the synagogue there was a man possessed by a demon, an impure spirit. He cried out at the top of his voice, "Go away! What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of God!" **"Be quiet!"** Jesus said sternly. **"Come out of him!"** Then the demon threw the man down before them all and came out without injuring him.*

- Jesus **didn't discuss** but commanded!
- Short commands with authority!

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal revelations from this teaching.

- d) Now pray for those among you who still suffer from certain oppressions by evil spirits in some areas of your lives.
- e) Plan an outreach to pray for several people who are oppressed by evil spirits.

- f) Each group presents what they've learned to the other groups.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

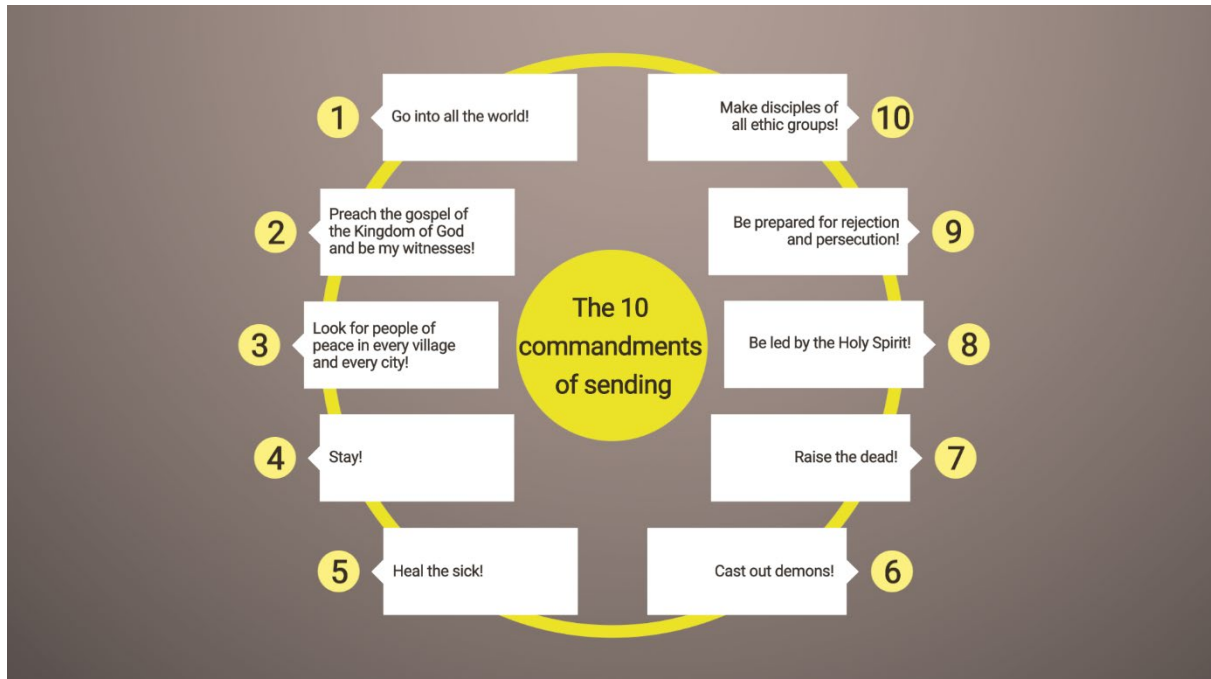
1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with a partner/ the team ☐
2. GOING – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached of the ethnic groups God put on your heart ☐
3. FIND people of peace ☐
4. PREACH – the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
6. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
7. SHARE your personal life transforming testimony with 5 people ☐
8. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, repentance, baptism and reception of the Holy Spirit ☐
10. PRAY FOR AND HEAL 10 people within an outreach ☐
11. PLAN an outreach to pray for people who are oppressed by evil spirits ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 17

6th Commandment of sending: Raise the dead!



Matthew 10:7-8

As you go, proclaim this message: 'The kingdom of heaven has come near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

This quotation from the Gospel of Matthew is an **2000-year-old command** to his 12 disciples. **Raising from the dead** at the end of that age is a **central content of the Kingdom of God** and of the **Christian faith**.

Resurrection means: the soul enters an immortal spiritual body.

Raising from the dead means: The soul and life returns into the old mortal body.

Each raising from the dead is a **sign pointing** towards the general and complete raising of the dead at the **second coming of Jesus**.

The Gospels tell us that Jesus healed many or even all people within a region. But he **never raised all people who had recently died from the dead**. The Gospels tell us «only» about **three** people raised from the dead.

The raising from the dead is such a **central truth and reality in the Kingdom of God**. The «miraculous actions» of single people raised from the dead already now in this age of grace we now live in as his disciples are so important, that the Lord Jesus clearly instructed and commanded his disciples: „**Raise the dead!**“

- Each raising from the dead is a **sign of the Kingdom of God**
- Each raising from the dead is a **visible action of the power of God**
- Each raising from the dead is a **sign for the general raising from the dead**
- Each raising from the dead is a **demonstration of God's Kingdom**
- But they are **rather rare** and because of that even more **precious signs** for his Kingdom

Throughout the entire Bible, only **seven «normal»** and **two «special» raising from the dead** are mentioned:

- **Two «normal» in the Old Testament**
- **Three** within the ministry of Jesus
- **One** in the ministry of Peter
- **One** in the ministry of Paul

Plus, some «special raisings from the dead»

Raisings from the dead in the Bible

1. Elijah raises the son of the widow from the dead (1 Kings 17:17-24)

- Elijah is moved by compassion and anger
- Elijah takes a step of faith
- Elijah stretches out on the boy and prays

1 Kings 17:19-22

“Give me your son,” Elijah replied. He took him from her arms, carried him to the upper room where he was staying, and laid him on his bed. Then he cried out to the Lord, “Lord my God, have you brought tragedy even on this widow I am staying with, by causing her son to die?” Then he stretched himself out on the boy three times and cried out to the Lord, “Lord my God, let this boy’s life return to him!” The Lord heard Elijah’s cry, and the boy’s life returned to him, and he lived.

2. Elisha raises the son of the Schunemite from the dead (2 Kings 4:18-32)

- Schunemite mother had faith.
- Elisha **didn't hear anything** from God. Elisha had to act entirely by faith.
- Elisha wanted a safe place (no pressure, room to hear God, to develop faith).
- Elisha prays.
- An act of faith twice by stretching out on the boy.

2 Kings 4:33-35

He went in, shut the door on the two of them and prayed to the Lord. Then he got on the bed and lay on the boy, mouth to mouth, eyes to eyes, hands to hands. As he stretched himself out on him, the boy's body grew warm. Elisha turned away and walked back and forth in the room and then got on the bed and stretched out on him once more. The boy sneezed seven times and opened his eyes.

3. Jesus raises the daughter of Jairus from the dead (Mark 5:22-43)

- Jairus' daughter is on her deathbed.
- Jairus goes to Jesus.
- Jairus hears about his daughter's death and **unbelief** starts to rise.
- Jesus resists the spirit of unbelief.
- Even Jesus needed the right atmosphere (no cynicism, emotionality or mockery).
- He brings a small group of disciples (Peter, John, James) who also had faith with him.
- Not a prayer but a command.

Mark 5:41-42

He took her by the hand and said to her, "Talitha koum!" (which means "Little girl, I say to you, get up!"). Immediately the girl stood up and began to walk around (she was twelve years old). At this they were completely astonished.

4. Jesus raises the young man of Nain from the dead (Luke 7:11-17)

- Public event.
- Jesus touches the coffin and commands.
- Moved by compassion.

Luke 7:14

Then he went up and touched the bier they were carrying him on, and the bearers stood still. He said, "Young man, I say to you, get up!"

5. Jesus raises his friend Lazarus from the dead, who had already been dead for 4 days, (John 11:1-44)

- It's all to the honour and glory of God.
- It's also about stirring the faith of his disciples.
- Jesus is touched and cries together with Mary.
- As a reaction the Pharisees want to kill Jesus and Lazarus

John 11:43-44

When he had said this, Jesus called in a loud voice, "Lazarus, come out!" The dead man came out, his hands and feet wrapped with strips of linen, and a cloth around his face. Jesus said to them, "Take off the grave clothes and let him go."

6. Peter raises the disciple Tabitha from the dead, resulting in a spiritual awakening (Acts 9:36-43)

Acts 9:40-42

*Peter sent them all out of the room; then he got down on his knees and **prayed**. **Turning toward the dead woman, he said**, “Tabitha, get up.” She opened her eyes, and seeing Peter she sat up. He took her by the hand and helped her to her feet. Then he called for the believers, especially the widows, and presented her to them alive. This became known all over Joppa, and many people believed in the Lord.*

➤ Peter prayed first, then gave a command.

7. Paul raises Eutychus from the dead, who had fallen to the ground from the 3rd floor, by stretching out over the dead body like Elijah and Elisha (Acts 20:9-12)

Acts 20:10-12

Paul went down, threw himself on the young man and put his arms around him. “Don’t be alarmed,” he said. “He’s alive!” Then he went upstairs again and broke bread and ate. After talking until daylight, he left. The people took the young man home alive and were greatly comforted.

Another two unusual examples of people raising from the dead in the Bible:

1) Raising of a dead person through the dead Elisha

(2 Kings 13:14-21)

Elisha died and was buried. Now Moabite raiders used to enter the country every spring. Once while some Israelites were burying a man, suddenly they saw a band of raiders; so they threw the man’s body into Elisha’s tomb. When the body touched Elisha’s bones, the man came to life and stood up on his feet.

2) Dead people raising from their graves through the death of Jesus on the cross

(Matthew 27:52-53)

The earth shook, the rocks split and the tombs broke open. The bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life. They came out of the tombs after Jesus’ resurrection and went into the holy city and appeared to many people.

Here we see a direct **correlation** between the resurrection of Jesus and the dead people raising from their graves! The Bible shows us further that there is an **appointed time** to die for us people.

Deuteronomy 31:14

The Lord said to Moses, “Now the day of your death is near. Call Joshua and present yourselves at the tent of meeting, where I will commission him.” So Moses and Joshua came and presented themselves at the tent of meeting.

If death **reaches someone before his/her appointed time**, we can call people back into life: among **the seven people who were raised from the dead throughout the Bible, 5 were children or youth**.

Jesus, referring to the dead daughter of Jairus, says: “**She sleeps**.” Similarly, he talks about Lazarus, saying: “**Lazarus, our friend, sleeps** but I go to wake him up.”

Jesus doesn’t really mean that they are sleeping. **Sleep in the Old Testament is a synonym for death**.

1 Corinthians 11:30

That is why many among you are weak and sick, and a number of you have fallen asleep.

1 Corinthians 15:51

Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed

1 Thessalonians 5:10

He died for us so that, whether we are awake or asleep, we may live together with him.

Conditions to raise the dead

- Understanding of the instruction, the authority and the power we received from Jesus to raise the dead.
- Compassion.
- Faith.

Practice of raising the dead**Command:**

- Talita kum! – Girl, I tell you, get up!
- Young man, I tell you, get up!
- Lazarus, come out!
- Tabitha, get up!

Raising the dead is like a wakeup call!

Miraculous action:

- **HE went down and stretched out over him** and spoke (e.g. Elijah, Elisha, Paul)

Here are some recent examples of people who rose from the dead as an encouragement to go and raise people from the dead, in case **death reaches a person «too early» or when death approaches**.

Illustration 1**Bardan**

The team in Eastern Nepal was in contact with a pastor and his wife in the USA. The pastor had a terrible car accident with 5-6 cars involved and died. His wife brought him to the hospital, where she made a call to Bardan and his team in Nepal. Immediately, Bardan felt the presence of God powerfully. When the wife told the team that her husband had died, Bardan heard an inner voice from God and Bardan declared aloud what he heard God speak to him that very moment:

“Nothing happened, the pastor is ok.” In that moment, the phone call was interrupted because the Holy Spirit’s presence became very strong and the woman on the phone collapsed because of the anointing. The team in Nepal prayed for 15 minutes – a little later the pastor’s wife called from the USA and shared enthusiastically that the doctor had just confirmed that her husband was totally “healed”, meaning back from the dead, and now alive!

➔ **Remote healing, remote raising from the dead.**

Illustration 2

Rajkumar, Khushal and Tutul



Rajkumar (l), Khushal (m) and Tutul (r) are pioneers in the province of Assam in North East India.

After the BEsent training, they went back into their region and shared the Gospel with a mother and her 16-year old daughter. The father had just died and the mother was by herself with three children. The 16-year old's name was Malaya and her two little siblings played outdoor that day. When a severe rain storm arose, Maya walked through a field to go and get her two siblings to bring them home. In the grass lay a great black cobra. She attacked and bit Ma-

laya's left leg, so all four poisoned tooth prints could be seen clearly. Before the poison could develop its full deadly potential, she made it back to her home. Then she began to lose consciousness. The mother called the pioneers to pray. After the prayer, the mother brought her to the hospital as fast as she could.

On the way to the hospital, Malaya lost consciousness and was almost dead. You could see the bite of the cobra clearly on the skin – but for the doctor it was absolutely inexplicable that the deadly poison of the cobra hadn't spread to the rest of her body but instead had remained at the same bite spot. Then they brought the dead daughter home. The three pioneers already thought about how to organize the funeral ceremony but first they prayed again, this time in the presence of the neighbors, the relatives and the family of Malaya. During prayer, Malaya came back to life and shared that she had seen Jesus and heard him commanding the poison not to spread to the rest of her body. He said he would bring her "new life". She was so thankful for her «new life» that she turned to Jesus and wanted to be baptized. Her mother and a brother of her mother wanted to be baptized as well. So a house of peace and a new Community of Faith evolved.

Before this miracle happened, the people in that village had been aggressive against Christians, persecuted them and troubled them a lot. But ever since that mighty and public miracle, everyone in the village honours Christians and treats them respectfully.

→ **Death had already happened or was close.**

Illustration 3

Jamal



Jamal's mother died one night in her bed. When they found her, she had already been dead for hours. The family gathered around the dead mother. When Jamal was with us at the training, the Lord woke him up at night and instructed him to call his mother back to life. After he had called her back, she came back to life. She shared that while Jamal was praying and "calling", Jesus came and put his hands on her heart and sent her back.

Illustration 4 Abdallah



Not long after Jamal had called his mother back, he found the police man Abdallah and led him to Jesus. Abdallah was Muslim and spiritually very oppressed and depressed. After he had repented and we had prayed for freedom, he went back into his village and to his family. Shortly after, Abdallah was invited to a wedding by a couple belonging to his remote relatives in another village. Right before the marriage ceremony, the aunt of the couple died in an adjoining room of the same house. The tradition among the ethnic group of the Oromos demands that if someone dies within the same house before the marriage ceremony, the marriage ceremony must be stopped and cancelled. Abdallah went into the room where the aunt was, sent the others out of the room and called the aunt back into life. She came back to life and was hungry.

Illustration 5 Kume



Kume is a trainee. She used to be a successful singer before. She turned away from Islam and started following Jesus. For the last training in the city of Dire, she helped us as a leader to train new students. After the morning teaching about healing and raising the dead, she went for an outreach with a group of women. They found a dramatic situation outside on the streets: A young woman was on her deathbed or was already dead, the ambulance was there and the woman was already on the stretcher. The mother cried out loud because she wanted to call her husband to tell him that his daughter was on her death bed, but the only person who had known the number was the dead daughter. The team calmed the mother and said that Jesus would restore her daughter. Then the team prayed for 30 minutes (they prayed, they didn't command) and suddenly the daughter opened her eyes. She opened her mouth and said her father's cell phone number. The mother was absolutely thrilled and invited the team to her home to hear more about Jesus.

Illustration 6 Juri



Juri is a trainee in the Northern Caucasus. When we taught in the training about:

Matthew 10:7-8

As you go, proclaim this message: 'The kingdom of heaven has come near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

Juri spontaneously said: "Yes, that's true". I wanted to know what he meant and he told me his story: Juri was a merchant from Mahakschala, married and with two daughters. His mother was an occult medium. When he was around 40 years old, his business collapsed. Suffering from depression, Juri left his family and moved around the country as a criminal with no money and no home. In his desperation, he decided to go and commit suicide by jumping off a cliff into the sea. When he had climbed the cliff and wanted to

jump off it into the sea, the cliff turned into a demon who said: "You belong to me!" Shocked from that appearance, Juri decided not to commit suicide and went back to join his family. In the meantime, his wife and both his daughters had never made a real decision for Jesus but regularly attended a church. So Juri joined them one day for a service. When both of his daughters collapsed after an altar call, he went up front to help them because he thought something bad had happened to them. In the front, he had a long talk with the pastor who then prayed with Juri. He felt nothing special, but his wife told him that she had never seen him with eyes burning with light like this before. He then kept coming to church with his family and eventually his entire household came to Jesus.

Sometime later, Juri started to get a stomach ache – he had appendicitis. But when he was brought to the hospital, it was already too late – he died during the operation. (Outside his body) Juri saw the spiritual chaos around him and he wondered why the doctors would operate him – even though he was already dead. That moment his wife was praying outside in the hallway for her husband. Suddenly Juri came back to life and became clear in his thoughts. After over 5 minutes of official clinical death, God raised him back to life. Later, Juri was sent into the city Scham-Chal by his pastor Arthur and Juri founded and led a Community of Faith there. From there, he then founded another Community of Faith in another city called "Bogaduriovka". Both Communities of Faith now consist of around 12 people each.

Illustration 7 **Pastor Bante**



Pastor Bante is one of our teachers of our training in the Himalaya. He and Judi have already seen 4 people in total rise from the dead. Interesting fact: his relatives were witnesses of a very dramatic raising from the dead, on the third day after a person had died and directly before the funeral. But this dramatic demonstration of Jesus' power didn't lead to a clear decision and new births in the family who were Christians by name. Pastor Bante experienced a clear impulse and faith from the Lord to raise all four people from the dead.

Romans 8:11

And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies because of his Spirit who lives in you.

Final thoughts

- We have the authority and the power to raise the dead!
- Let us go in great joy and when we are in a situation in which a person dies before his/her appointed time, let us use our authority and raise the dead!

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Discuss in your group what you have experienced or what you've heard you're your surroundings concerning the raising of the dead.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned.

Outreach

Regularly practice **GOING** (2-3 times a week, 6-9 hours in total) to the unreached of the ethnic group God put on your heart. This should be accompanied by 2-3 prayer walks (4-6 hours) each week.

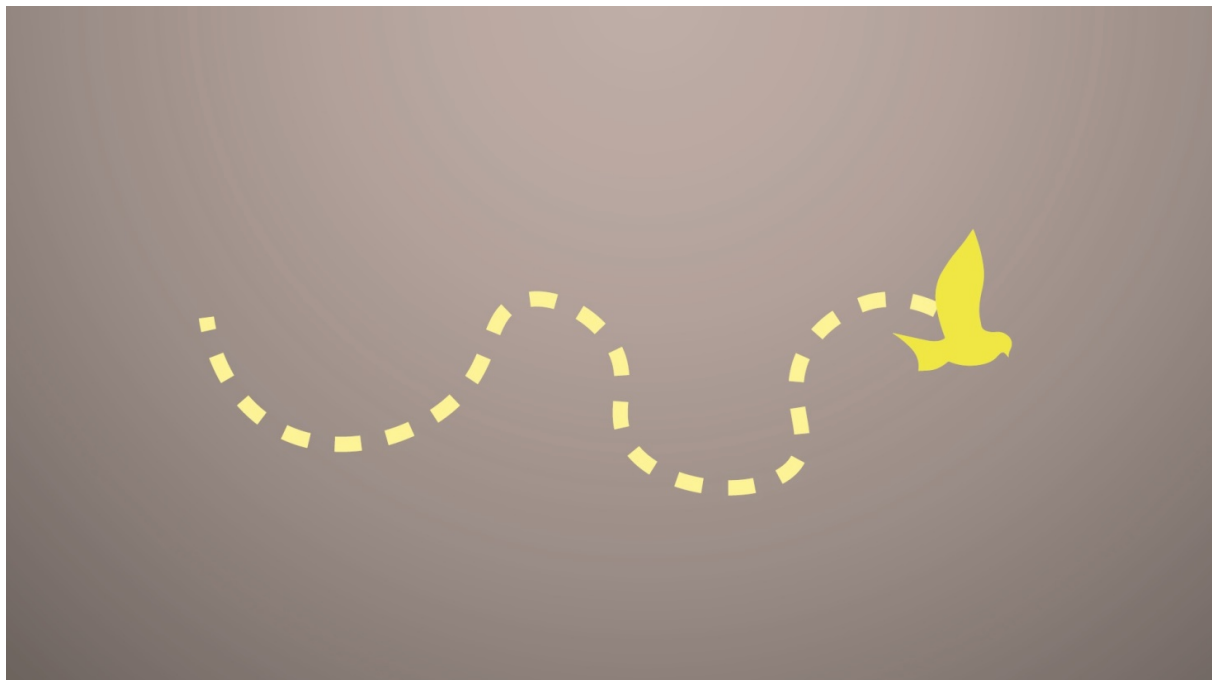
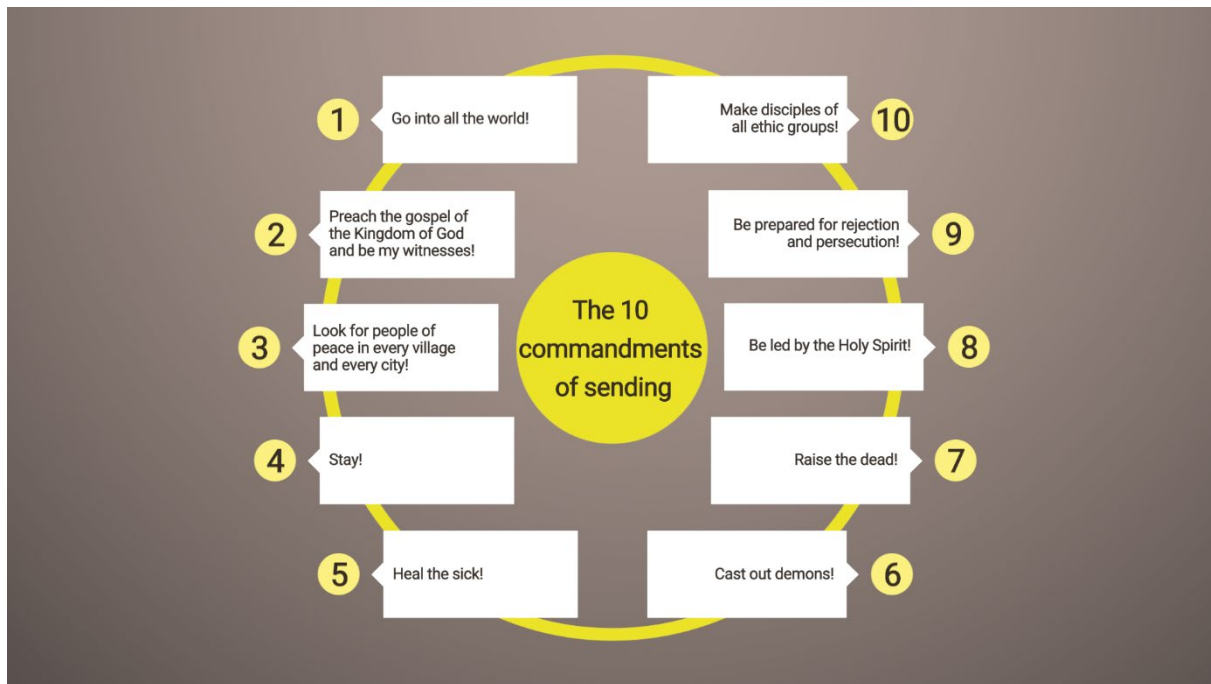
1. PRAYER – Prayer walks with a partner/ the team ☐
2. GOING – (2:2 or as a team) to the unreached group God put on your heart ☐
3. FIND people of peace ☐
4. PREACH – the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. SHARE – the way of salvation ☐
6. EVANGELISTIC DBS with people of peace ☐
7. SHARE your personal life transforming testimony with 5 people ☐
8. CALL to repentance and into FOLLOWING Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, repentance, baptism and reception of the Holy Spirit ☐
10. PRAY FOR AND HEAL 10 people within an outreach ☐
11. PLAN an outreach to pray for people who are oppressed by evil spirits ☐
12. If you are guided to do so, raise a person from the dead ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 18

The 8th commandment of sending: Be led by the Holy Spirit



When the Lord sent out his disciples, he also gave them instructions about **where** to go.

Matthew 10:5-6

*These twelve Jesus sent out with the following instructions: “**Do not go among the Gentiles or enter any town of the Samaritans. Go rather to the lost sheep of Israel.**”*

Luke 10:1

*After this the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent them two by two **ahead of him to every town and place where he was about to go.***

Jesus usually gave his disciples instructions about **where** to go. This means **he guided** them. Also on other occasions, for example when looking for a room for the Last Supper, he instructed them **where** they should go.

Mark 11:1-3

As they approached Jerusalem and came to Bethphage and Bethany at the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent two of his disciples, saying to them, "Go to the village ahead of you, and just as you enter it, you will find a colt tied there, which no one has ever ridden. Untie it and bring it here. If anyone asks you, 'Why are you doing this?' say, 'The Lord needs it and will send it back here shortly.'"

Sometimes Jesus and his disciples also worked **systematically**:

Luke 9:6

*So they set out and went **from village to village**, proclaiming the good news and healing people everywhere.*

Towards the end of his time on earth the Lord announced a **fundamental change**:

John 16:13

But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come.

After Pentecost, the Holy Spirit will guide us in all truth!

Acts 1:4-8

On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: "Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit." Then they gathered around him and asked him, "Lord, are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them: "It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

- After **receiving** the gift of the Holy Spirit at conversion (after faith, repentance and water baptism)
- we will be **filled** and **fulfilled** with the Holy Spirit and
- there will be an **overflow** of the Holy Spirit.

Overflow in a 5-fold way:

- Acts 2:4 **Preaching in other languages (I)**
- Acts 10:44-46 **Gift of tongues (I) and praising God (II)**
- Acts 19:1-6 **Gift of tongues (I) and prophesy (III)**
- Acts 2:11 **speaking of the great deeds of God (II)**
- Acts 9:17-20 **Preaching about Jesus in the synagogues (IV)**
- Galatians 4:6 God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit **who calls out**,
"Abba, Father." (V)

What happens when people receive the Holy Spirit?

- Speaking in other tongues: mentioned 3 times
- Praising God: mentioned twice
- Prophesying: mentioned once
- Preaching about Jesus: mentioned once
- Calling out in the Spirit, “Abba, Father”: mentioned once

From the moment of being filled with the Holy Spirit on, we live in **fellowship with the Holy Spirit**.

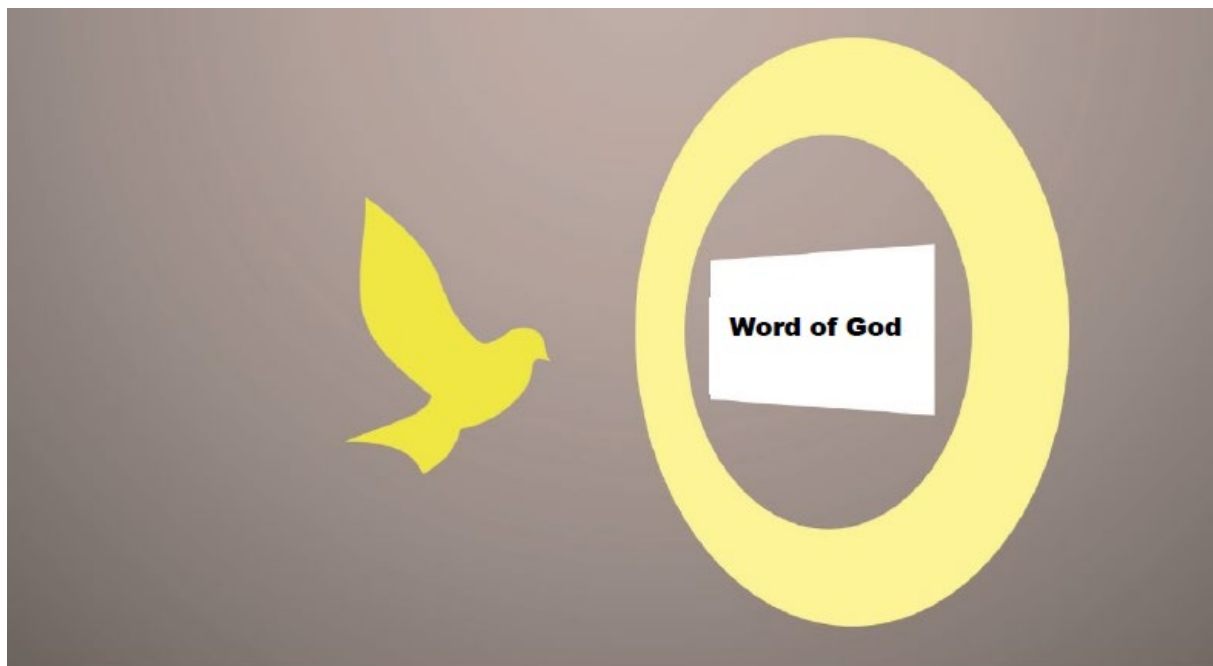
2 Corinthians 13:14

May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

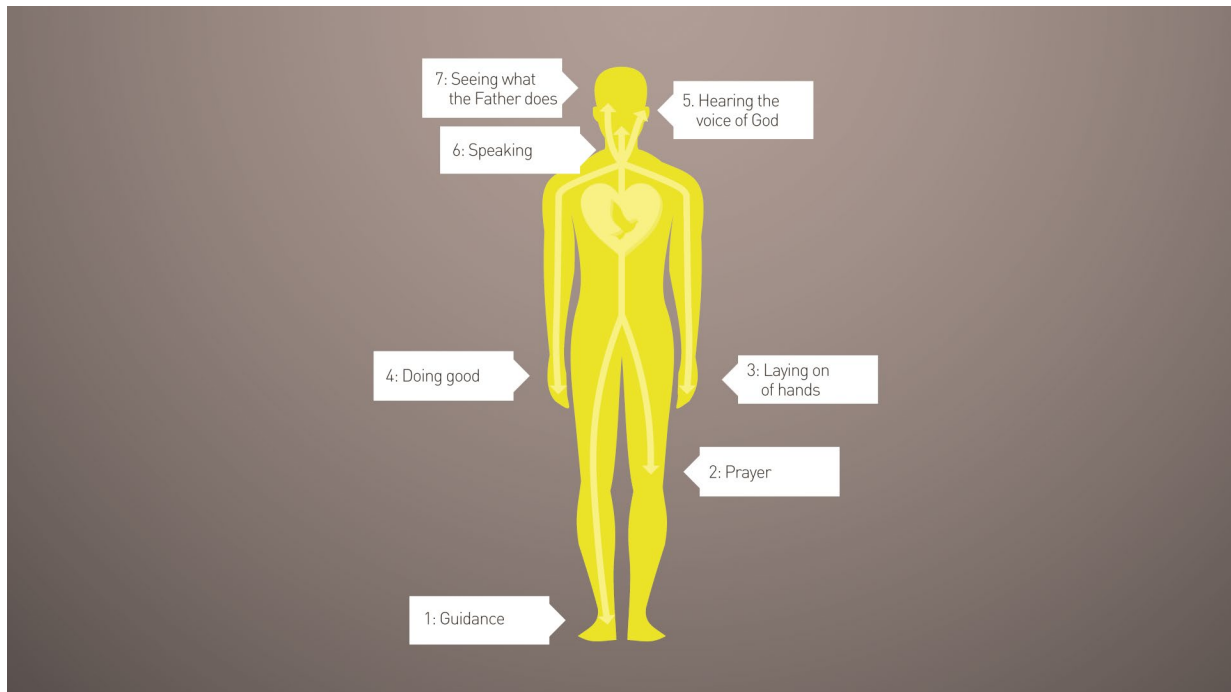
- 1) This fellowship of the Holy Spirit in the ministry is expressed by the **interaction of word and spirit – the words I have spoken to you are Spirit and Life** (John 6:63) – in our spiritual lives.

- 2) **This fellowship of the Holy Spirit is also expressed in different areas** of our spiritual lives.

The dove is the symbol of the Holy Spirit: The Holy Spirit fills and works through the Word of God. Jesus says: “My words are Spirit and Life.”



Following illustration shows the manifold work of the Holy Spirit in our spiritual lives.



3

The evangelistic ministry of the Holy Spirit

- The Holy Spirit works strongly through our words, when **we evangelize**.
- Working in the harvest fields, in persons or groups and houses of peace, **so they would be ripe for harvest**: John 4:35.
- **Convicting of sin**, righteousness and judgment: John 16:8.
- Causing **rebirth** in us, the new life of Jesus in us: John 3:5
- Causing **assurance of salvation**: Romans 8:16.

The “Power Ministry“ of the Holy Spirit

- Healing
 - Deliverance
 - Raising the dead
- The **ministry of the Holy Spirit through the spiritual gifts** he has given us.
 - The growth of the fruits of the Holy Spirit.
 - **The leading and guiding ministry of the Holy Spirit.**

Being led by the Holy Spirit

Hearing the voice of God is crucial in the ministry of sending.

The Lord speaks **again and again to the sent ones through the Holy Spirit** and also to those he wants to call into discipleship. Here are some powerful words from Scripture:

Romans 8:14

For those who are led by the Spirit of God are the children of God.

John 8,47

Whoever belongs to God hears what God says. The reason you do not hear is that you do not belong to God.

John 10:27

My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me.

John 16:13

But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come.

John 5:19-20

Jesus gave them this answer: “Very truly I tell you, the Son can do nothing by himself; he can do only what he sees his Father doing, because whatever the Father does the Son also does. For the Father loves the Son and shows him all he does. Yes, and he will show him even greater works than these, so that you will be amazed.”

Job 33:14

For God does speak—now one way, now another— though no one perceives it

Isaiah 30:21

Whether you turn to the right or to the left, your ears will hear a voice behind you, saying, “This is the way; walk in it.”

Hearing God's voice and being guided by it was normal for:

1) Jesus

Luke 4:1

Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, left the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness.

2) Peter

Acts 10

→ Cornelius – Angel – 3 times vision

3) Philip

Acts 8:26-30

Now an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "Go south to the road—the desert road—that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." So he started out, and on his way he met an Ethiopian eunuch, an important official in charge of all the treasury of the Kandake (which means "queen of the Ethiopians"). This man had gone to Jerusalem to worship, and on his way home was sitting in his chariot reading the Book of Isaiah the prophet. The Spirit told Philip, "Go to that chariot and stay near it."

4) Paul

Acts 16:9

During the night Paul had a vision of a man of Macedonia standing and begging him, "Come over to Macedonia and help us."

1 Corinthians 14:24-25

But if an unbeliever or an inquirer comes in while everyone is prophesying, they are convicted of sin and are brought under judgment by all, as the secrets of their hearts are laid bare. So they will fall down and worship God, exclaiming, "God is really among you!"

- Hearing God's voice and being guided by the Holy Spirit was **normal** for the sent ones of Jesus and is a **part** of the fellowship with the Holy Spirit!
- When Samuel was still a child, living in the temple with Eli, he only understood after the third time and after Eli explained it that the Lord was speaking to him (1 Samuel 3,1-21).

About 90% of the Spirit's direction we experience like Jonathan did:

1. Samuel 14:1-14

One day Jonathan son of Saul said to his young armor-bearer, "**Come, let's go over** to the Philistine outpost on the other side." But he did not tell his father. Saul was staying on the outskirts of Gibeath under a pomegranate tree in Migron. With him were about six hundred men, among whom was Ahijah, who was wearing an ephod. He was a son of Ichabod's brother Ahitub son of Phinehas, the son of Eli, the Lord's priest in Shiloh. No one was aware that Jonathan had left. On each side of the pass that Jonathan intended to cross to reach the Philistine outpost was a cliff; one was called Bozez and the other Seneh. One cliff stood to the north toward Mikdash, the other to the south toward Geba. Jonathan said to his young armor-bearer, "**Come, let's go over to the outpost of those uncircumcised men.** Perhaps the Lord will act in our behalf. Nothing can hinder the Lord from saving, whether by many or by few." "**Do all that you have in mind,**" his armor-bearer said. "Go ahead; I am with you heart and soul." Jonathan said, "**Come on, then; we will cross over toward them and let them see us. If they say to us,** 'Wait there until we come to you,' we will stay where we are and not go up to them. **But if they say,** 'Come up to us,' we will climb up, because that will be our sign

that the Lord has given them into our hands.” So both of them showed themselves to the Philistine outpost. “Look!” said the Philistines. “The Hebrews are crawling out of the holes they were hiding in.” The men of the outpost shouted to Jonathan and his armor-bearer, **“Come up to us and we’ll teach you a lesson.”** So Jonathan said to his armor-bearer, “Climb up after me; **the Lord has given them into the hand of Israel.**” Jonathan climbed up, using his hands and feet, with his armor-bearer right behind him. **The Philistines fell before Jonathan**, and his armor-bearer followed and killed behind him. In that first attack Jonathan and his armor-bearer killed some twenty men in an area of about half an acre.

- Jonathan had an **“impression”, a thought directly from God**: “One day, Jonathan son of Saul said to his young armour bearer, (...) **“Come, let’s go over to the outpost of those uncircumcised men. Perhaps the Lord will act in our behalf”** (...).”
- **First confirmation from the armour bearer**: **“Do all that you have in mind,”** his armour bearer said. “Go ahead; I am with you heart and soul.”
- **First step** in the given direction. Jonathan said, **“Come on, then; we will cross over toward them** and let them see us. **If they say to us,** ‘Wait there until we come to you,’ we will stay where we are and not go up to them. **But if they say,** ‘Come up to us,’ we will climb up, because that will be our sign that the Lord has given them into our hands.”
- **Second confirmation**: the men at the outpost shouted to Jonathan and his armour bearer, **“Come up to us and we’ll teach you a lesson.”**
- **Second step and victory – breakthrough**: so Jonathan said to his armor bearer, “Climb up after me; **the Lord has given them into the hand of Israel.**” Jonathan climbed up, using his hands and feet, with his armour bearer right behind him. **The Philistines fell before Jonathan**, and his armour bearer followed and killed behind him.

Two basic thoughts about God speaking directly:

- **Only the word of God is infallible**, as it is written in Psalm 12,6: “The words of the Lord are flawless, like silver purified in a crucible, like gold refined seven times.”
- **All direct speech and guidance must be examined according to this word.**

Personal examples of the Holy Spirit’s guidance

1. Henok:

- First step: Started riding the bike.
- Second step: A man waved at me.
- Third step: Introduced me to his friends
- Knowing: man of peace



2. Kingdom Ministries:

- Vision of harvest fields with four big areas (at the beginning of the 1990s).
- Step by step, we came into these harvest fields in accordance to the vision.
- The Holy Spirit always leads.



3. Pray that a young man would give his life to Jesus
 - Impression to pray for the conversion of a young man, although there were only elderly people.
 - However, there really was a young man present who immediately gave his life to Jesus.
 - He asked me if I would like to tell all these things to his friends.
 - When I was with this group, 14 out of 20 gave their lives to Jesus.



4. If they do not come to you, then why don't you come to us?
 - A man was frustrated, because his friends did not want to come to the church service. They preferred to go to the restaurant to have a drink.
5. Then the innkeeper said: "If they do not come to you, then why don't you come to us why don't you have your church service here in the restaurant?"



6. New town, new people
 - After month-long prayer, the Lord spoke to us that we should reach out to the occult scene.
 - The openness was huge.

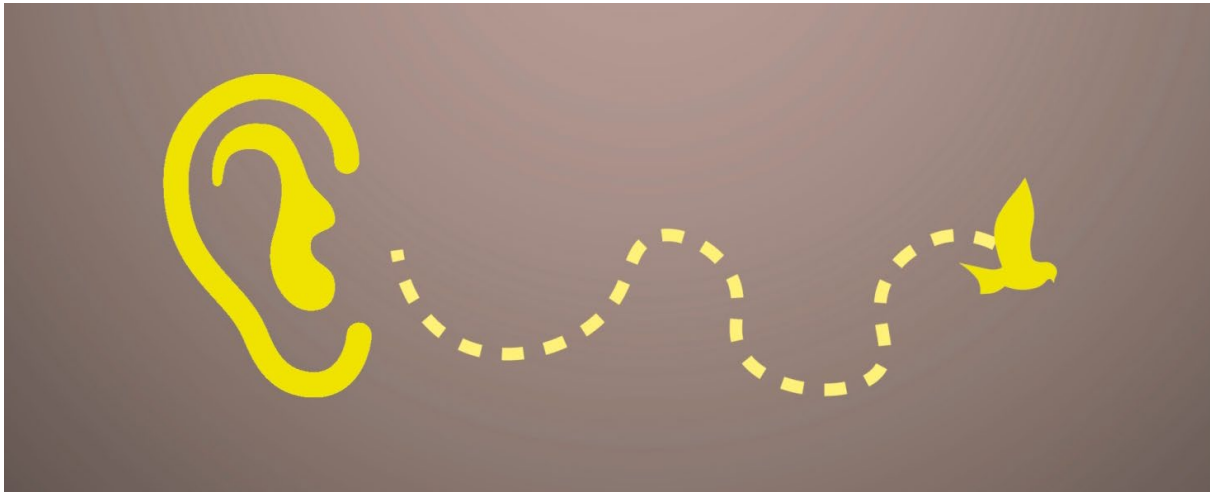


John 4:35

Don't you have a saying, 'It's still four months until harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest.

Task

- a) In order to practice hearing the voice of God **and** being led by the Holy Spirit during evangelism, Kevin Dedmon developed the “spiritual treasure hunt” method.



To start, a group of disciples prays together. Then, everyone takes time to listen to what God wants to tell them about the treasure hunt. This is about words of knowledge.

- **Certain information** and hints **about the people** that are looked for and found.
- For example: **description of persons, places, prayer requests, unusual things...**
- These words of knowledge can be received as **words thought or heard**, as **images** or **visions**.
- This information always has a **certain reason**.
- For example, when God **reveals a sickness**, then this is with the purpose that he **wants to heal this sickness**.
- When someone receives hints about the **appearance of a person**, the purpose is for that person to be **found and addressed**.
- **Information about a location** helps to know **where to look for that person**.
- Everyone from the group writes these impressions on **their own note**, on their “treasure map”.

Acts 9:10-18

In Damascus there was a disciple named Ananias. The Lord called to him in a vision, “Ananias!” “Yes, Lord,” he answered. The Lord told him, “Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, for he is praying. In a vision he has seen a man named Ananias come and place his hands on him to restore his sight.” “Lord,” Ananias answered, “I have heard many reports about this man and all the harm he has done to your holy people in Jerusalem. And he has come here with authority from the chief priests to arrest all who call on your name.” But the Lord said to Ananias, “Go! This man is my chosen instrument to proclaim my name to the Gentiles and their kings and to the people of Israel. I will show him how much he must suffer for my name.” Then Ananias went to the house and entered it. Placing his hands on Saul, he said, “Brother Saul, the Lord—Jesus, who appeared to you on the road as you were coming here—has sent me so that you may see again and be filled with the Holy Spirit.” Immediately, something like scales fell from Saul’s eyes, and he could see again. He got up and was baptized.

Treasure hunt

1. Every person writes down words of knowledge on the following list:

- PLACE (like road sign, clock, coffee shop, shopping centre, etc.)

- NAME

- APPEARANCE (colour of specific clothes, hair colour, etc.)

- REASONS FOR PRAYER (knee pain, kidneys, tumours, left ankle, marriage, etc.)

- UNUSUAL THINGS (windmill, lollipop, dolphins, green door, etc.)

2. Form groups of 3 or 4 people

- Add the words of knowledge from the group to your “treasure map”.
- Attention: everyone keeps his own list – don’t write a new list on a separate piece of paper!

3. Choose a starting point.

4. Begin to look for your treasure.

5. When you find someone from your treasure map (from the individual lists of the group)

- go to that person and say something like: “This might sound a bit strange, but we are on a treasure hunt and we think that you are on our list.”
- Show them your lists (one or two points on every list or just one point from one list).
- Start a conversation (friendship – ask questions to get to know them).
- Let them know that God has “marked” them and that he wants to bless them.
- Ask if you can pray for them.

6. If they say “no”:

- Continue to build the relationship (general reason: friendship).
- Ask the Holy Spirit what he wants to highlight about this person.
- Share some encouraging words with them (prophecy).

7. Then ask again if you can pray for them.

- If they say “no” – bless them and look for your next treasure.
- If they say “yes” –
 - Ask God for his presence and speak his presence into their lives.
 - Command the pain to go, bones to be whole, tumours to shrink, etc.
 - Let them do a test – “Do something that you were not able to do before we prayed for you.”
- Pray again if necessary.

8. If they are healed

- Explain what just happened (the goodness of God – He knows you and cares about you, etc.)
- Ask, if they want to get to know Jesus in a personal way (relationship with him).
- Lead them as they invite Jesus into their lives.

Personal examples of the Holy Spirit’s guidance

1. My first experience with the treasure hunt:

We had 12 descriptions for a person. Near a warehouse and close to a staircase, a man with green walking sticks on the way to the hospital, etc.
And that is exactly how we found this man.

2. Bridge with red balloons:

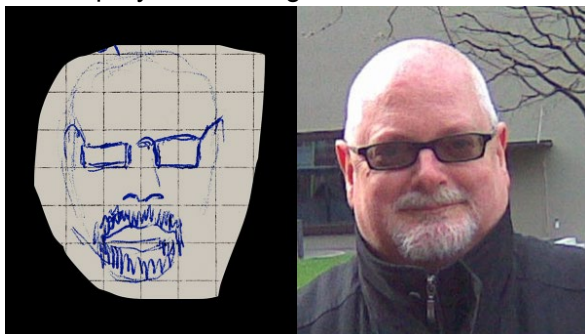
The following description: A fisherman will walk over a bridge and during a conversation red balloons will fly behind his head.
When a man came and waited we saw the red balloons from children.

3. Oslo wheelchair:

In Oslo, God said to teenagers that they should pray for an old, bald man in a wheelchair, whom they found – however, this man had hair. They were able to pray for him in his home, he then got up from his wheelchair and put down his wig.

4. White-bearded man:

Descriptions of a white-bearded man of about 50 years, with square glasses, no hair for whom we should pray for blessing and deliverance. Someone even made a drawing:



Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with each other what you have experienced or heard about concerning the guidance of the Holy Spirit and hearing the voice of God.

- e) Every group presents what they have learned.
- f) You go on a treasure hunt: each group presents what they learned and presents the precise goals of how to put things into practice during the outreach to the other groups.

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with the team/ a partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
12. Treasure hunt ☐

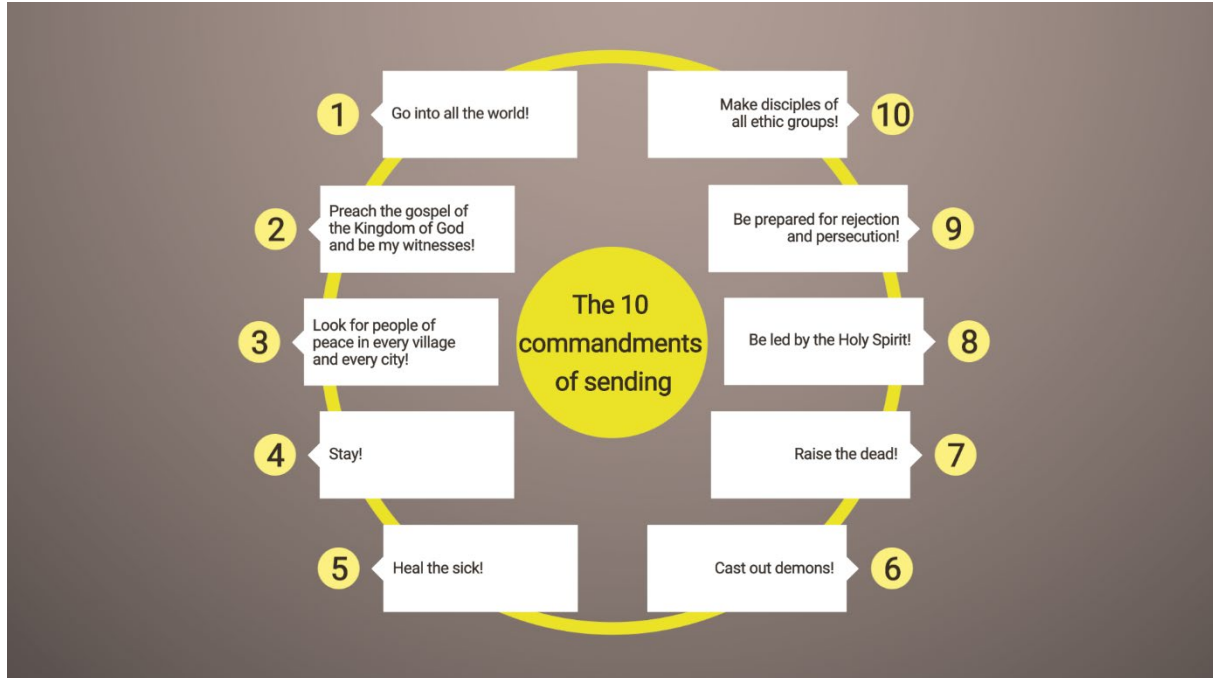
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 19

The 9th commandment of sending:

Be prepared for rejection and persecution!



The Lord said it in a very straightforward way: There is **no sending** without fights, rejection, persecution and suffering!



Matthew 10:16

I am sending you out like sheep among wolves. Therefore be as shrewd as snakes and as innocent as doves.

- **The enemy** is a **thief** (John 10,10), a **liar** and a **murderer of people** (John 8,44) from the beginning, therefore he will **not stand on the side lines** and accept that we **invade territory controlled by him and proclaim the Kingdom of God!**
- One of the principles for the coming of the Kingdom of God and for the message of the cross is:
Through suffering to glory, through dying to life.

The Lord himself addresses persecution at length in Matthew 10, one of the **core sending texts**:

Matthew 10:12-26

As you enter the home, give it your greeting. If the home is deserving, let your peace rest on it; if it is not, let your peace return to you. If anyone will not welcome you or listen to your words, leave that home or town and shake the dust off your feet. Truly I tell you, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgment than for that town. "I am sending you out like sheep among wolves. Therefore be as shrewd as snakes and as innocent as doves. Be on your guard; you will be handed over to the local councils and be flogged in the synagogues. On my account you will be brought before governors and kings as witnesses to them and to the Gentiles. But when they arrest you, do not worry about what to say or how to say it. At that time you will be given what to say, for it will not be you speaking, but the Spirit of your Father speaking through you. "Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child; children will rebel against their parents and have them put to death. You will be hated by everyone because of me, but the one who stands firm to the end will be saved. When you are persecuted in one place, flee to another. Truly I tell you, you will not finish going through the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes. "The student is not above the teacher, nor a servant above his master. It is enough for students to be like their teachers, and servants like their masters. If the head of the house has been called Beelzebul, how much more the members of his household! "So do not be afraid of them, for there is nothing concealed that will not be disclosed, or hidden that will not be made known.

Spiritual warfare

We are being sent as sheep: born-again followers of Jesus among the wolves

- demons
- demon-possessed people
- people whose thoughts, speech and actions are under demonic influence

Thus, our fight is not simply against "flesh and blood" (differences in opinion), but there is a spiritual battle at the deepest level, which is manifested in our bodies and souls.

Ephesians 6:12

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.

Example: Conversion of a Satanist who came to a church service

At first, the preacher was not able to write his sermon because every time he began to write, a film of all the sins he ever committed played before his inner eyes. Then he was knocked over as he was getting his Bible, even though there was no one present. This was clearly from the invisible world. This push resulted in a nose injury followed even by hospitalization. During the sermon, the Satanist fell into a trance and tried to kill himself with a knife. Then the Satanist's mother called and said that she is always praying for her son, but is menaced by demons and nightmares regularly at night. Then the man who invited the Satanist called, saying that he could not go to work anymore due to problems with his nervous system.
 → Hostile opposition was huge!!

The above-mentioned passage from Matthew 10 mentions 10 common forms of persecution:

10 common forms of persecution

- 1) If anyone will not welcome you or listen to your words
 → **Lacking acceptance, rejecting the message, asking to leave**
- 2) You will be handed over to the local councils (or courts)
 «**Legal rejection**» (anti-conversion laws and the like), but also **discriminations** (being banned from school or having to pay more school fees, not receiving a good job or apartment, etc.)
- 3) Brought before governors and kings
 → **Rejection, contempt and mockery by the “wise of this world” (the esteemed, intelligent, educated and powerful).**
- 4) The head of the house has been called Beelzebul
 → **Perversion of truth: good is called evil and evil is presented as good. The disciples experience the same things as Jesus—like master, like servant.**
- 5) You will be hated by everyone
 → **Pure hate**
- 6) Persecuted in one place
 → **Local or regional persecution**
- 7) Flogged
 → **Bodily persecution**
- 8) In their synagogues
 → **Religious persecution (by other religions) or even persecution by Christians of other denominations**
- 9) Brother will betray brother to death
 → **Resistance, betrayal and persecution within the church**
- 10) And a father his child; children will rebel against their parents and have them put to death.
 → **Resistance, betrayal and persecution within the family**

Example 1) Haafiz's wife attempted to poison him.

Example 2) Oromo region: First, someone announced through the loudspeakers of the mosques that the Gospel is wrong, then there were beatings. Later, the trainees were put in prison, then the house of a trainee was set on fire, and then a mob of 190 Muslims beheaded one of the trainee's disciples.

10 important principles of persecution

1st Principle

Everyone who wants to do the right thing and walk in the ways of God will be attacked by the evil one.

Hebrews 11:35-38

Women received back their dead, raised to life again. There were others who were tortured, refusing to be released so that they might gain an even better resurrection. Some faced jeers and flogging, and even chains and imprisonment. They were put to death by stoning; they were sawed in two; they were killed by the sword. They went about in sheepskins and goatskins, destitute, persecuted and mistreated—the world was not worthy of them. They wandered in deserts and mountains, living in caves and in holes in the ground.

2nd Principle

The disciples of Jesus will experience persecution just like the Lord experienced it himself. This goes together with being **transformed into the likeness of Christ**.

Matthew 10:25

It is enough for students to be like their teachers, and servants like their masters. If the head of the house has been called Beelzebul, how much more the members of his household!

John 15:18-20

“If the world hates you, keep in mind that it hated me first. If you belonged to the world, it would love you as its own. As it is, you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world. That is why the world hates you. Remember what I told you: ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’ If they persecuted me, they will persecute you also. If they obeyed my teaching, they will obey yours also.

3rd Principle

Persecution is one aspect of **carrying the cross of Christ**.

- The cross never was and is not primarily a nice piece of jewellery for Christians.
- **The cross is a cruel instrument of torture and death.**

Luke 9:23

Then he said to them all: “Whoever wants to be my disciple must deny themselves and take up their cross daily and follow me.

Luke 14:27

And whoever does not carry their cross and follow me cannot be my disciple.

4th Principle

The Lords lets us be a real part of the coming and building of the Kingdom of God. **And thus, he also lets us partake in his sufferings**, so we may “fill up what is still lacking”.

Colossians 1:24

Now I rejoice in what I am suffering for you, and I fill up in my flesh what is still lacking in regard to Christ's afflictions, for the sake of his body, which is the church.

- ➔ This privilege to complete **the sufferings of Christ** on his behalf gave the Apostles great joy:

Matthew 5:10-12

Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. "Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

5th Principle

Paralyzing fear and anxiety are one of the **main tactics** of the enemy to stop the spreading of the Gospel.

- of mental and physical pain and mistreatment
- of existential needs
- of losing family and friends
- of rejection
- of fear
- of isolation (living underground)
- of shortage
- of chains, prison, etc.

The attacks of the enemy are often very direct in new territories and unreached places. People are directly being persecuted and killed. In places more reached with the Gospel, the persecution is more disguised.

Example Saida – first there was an existential fight, then her daughter died, but during the burial there was a breakthrough.

Example Milosh – first there were huge blessings – many conversions with baptisms, then the pressure of the enemy increased, first he was robbed and then his son was shot.

Matthew 10:26+28

So do not be afraid of them. (...) Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell.

6th Principle

The joy of the Holy Spirit drives out this fear.

Nehemiah 8:10

Do not grieve, for the joy of the Lord is your strength."

Matthew 5:12

Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

Acts 5:40-42

They called the apostles in and had them flogged. Then they ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. The apostles left the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy of suffering disgrace for the Name. Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the good news that Jesus is the Messiah.

7th Principle

In persecution, **Jesus is especially close to us and hears our prayers** – and there even is a breakthrough of the Gospel.

Daniel 3:24-25

Then King Nebuchadnezzar leaped to his feet in amazement and asked his advisers, "Weren't there three men that we tied up and threw into the fire?" They replied, "Certainly, Your Majesty." He said, "Look! I see four men walking around in the fire, unbound and unharmed, and the fourth looks like a son of the gods."

Acts 4:23-31

On their release, Peter and John went back to their own people and reported all that the chief priests and the elders had said to them. When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God. "Sovereign Lord," they said, "you made the heavens and the earth and the sea, and everything in them. You spoke by the Holy Spirit through the mouth of your servant, our father David: 'Why do the nations rage and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth rise up and the rulers band together against the Lord and against his anointed one.' Indeed Herod and Pontius Pilate met together with the Gentiles and the people of Israel in this city to conspire against your holy servant Jesus, whom you anointed. They did what your power and will had decided beforehand should happen. Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. Stretch out your hand to heal and perform signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus." After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.

8th Principle

Great reward is promised to those who are persecuted for the sake of the Kingdom of God.

Matthew 5:11-12

"Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

Revelation 2:10

Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you life as your victor's crown.

9th Principle

Sometimes (depending on the guidance of the Holy Spirit), it is right to avoid persecution.

Matthew 12:14-15

But the Pharisees went out and plotted how they might kill Jesus. Aware of this, Jesus withdrew from that place. A large crowd followed him, and he healed all who were ill.

Matthew 10:23

When you are persecuted in one place, flee to another. Truly I tell you, you will not finish going through the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.

Acts 9:23-25

After many days had gone by, there was a conspiracy among the Jews to kill him, but Saul learned of their plan. Day and night they kept close watch on the city gates in order to kill him. But his followers took him by night and lowered him in a basket through an opening in the wall.

Example: In the Caucasus region Artur was shot in front of the church. His successor and his family were also threatened to be killed. The man went underground and when he came back after 3 weeks he continued his ministry – until today.

10th Principle

The Biblical way to deal with persecutors is to bless them and to pray for them.

Luke 6:28

Bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you.

Example of Trainee 1: He was beaten and he was denied access to water. Later, a water source was found on his property and he built a well, so that all the people from his village could have access to this water.

He blesses the people from his village with water although they had denied it to him before.

Example of Trainee 2: He was put in jail. During the daily Islamic prayers, the Christians began to bless the prison guards, even those, who had persecuted them. These prayers opened the hearts of the Muslims in that prison.

Example from India: "Is it true, that your Holy Book says, if someone hits you on your left cheek that you should also turn the other cheek?" Then this strong man answered: "It is also written that it is more blessed to give than to receive." The potential persecutor immediately changed his idea to beat him.

Romans 12:14

Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse.

Luke 23:34

Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." And they divided up his clothes by casting lots.

- The World Watch List published by Open Doors is a **ranking of 50 countries that shows where Christians experience the most intense persecution.**
- About 650 million Christians live in these **50 countries** that are listed on the World Watch List.
- In 36 of these 50 countries, **Islamic extremism** is described to be the driving force of persecution, which makes it the dominant factor by far.
- According to a new estimation, about 200 million (almost one third) of them suffer from a **high degree of discrimination and persecution.**
- Christians are the most strongly persecuted **religious community** worldwide.
- Further understanding of persecution of Christians:
Persecution does not only mean that the state does the following to an individual or to whole groups of Christians because of their faith:
 - Put them in prison
 - Injure them
 - Torture them or
 - Kills them, as is the **reality in many countries.**
- Persecution also includes:
 - when Christians lose their employment and livelihood because of their faith.
 - when children receive no education or only a poor education **because of their faith** or the **faith of their parents.**
 - when Christians are being driven from their **home country** because of their faith.
 - when members of other religions are **prohibited by law or society to convert to Christianity** or to confess their Christian faith.

Therefore, persecution is when Christian believers expect negative consequences for their family, property, body or life.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group about the struggles, rejection, persecution and sufferings you have experienced in your ministry.

- e) What are your main fears with regard to rejection, persecution and suffering?
Pray together and for each other.
Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world and also pray for the persecutors!

- f) Each group presents what they learned and presents the precise goals of how to put things into practice during the outreach to the other groups.

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with team and partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
 - Go on 5 treasure hunts ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐

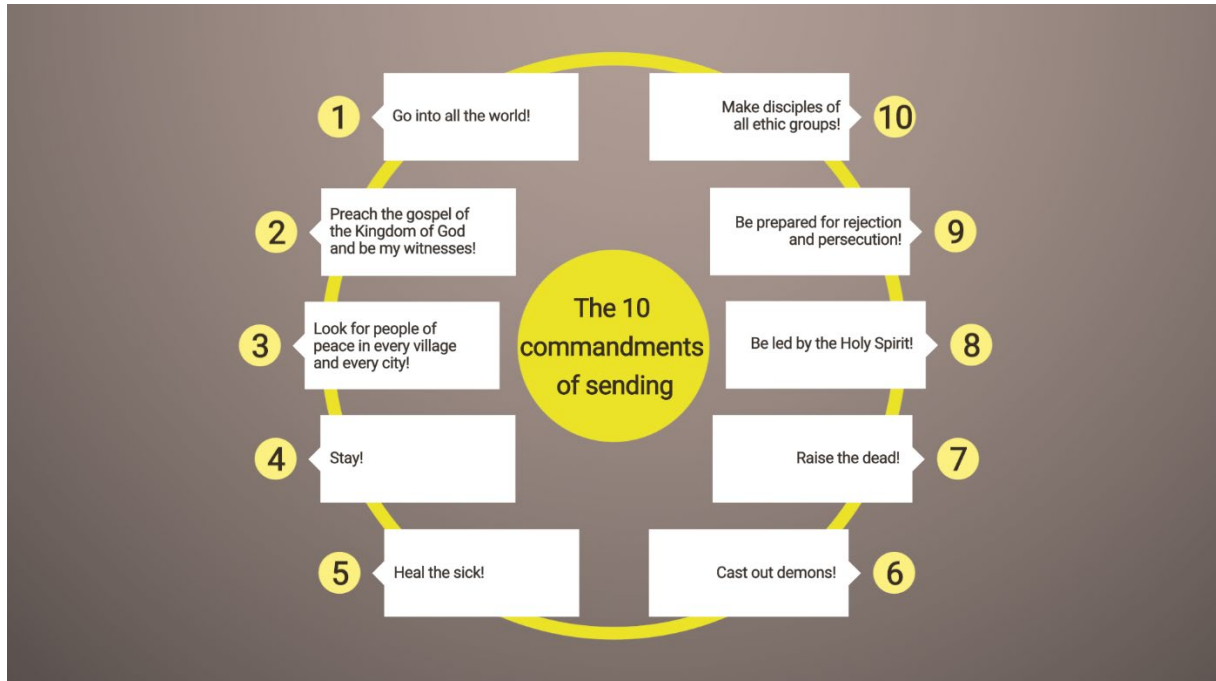
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



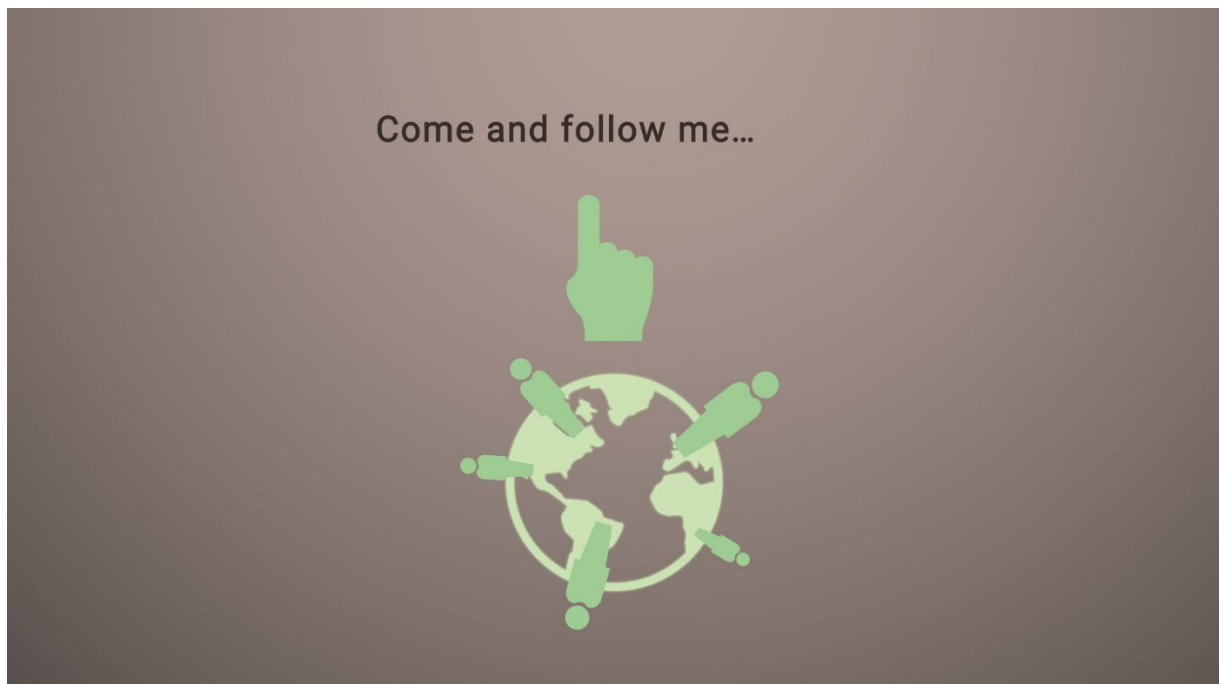
Training Unit 20

The 10th commandment of sending: Make disciples I:

The Jesus Model



The 10th commandment of sending requires more work than the other nine commandments combined. Making disciples of all ethnic groups: this is the core of the ministry of sending! With this 10th commandment of sending begins the third and largest part of the sending training.



Summary

Part I: Preparations for being sent

- Being filled with the power of the Holy Spirit
- Prayer
- Training

Part II: The 10 commandments of sending

1. Go – go by faith
2. Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God
3. Seek persons of peace and houses of peace
4. STAY in the houses of peace
5. Heal the sick
6. Cast out evils spirits
7. Raise the dead
8. Let yourselves be guided by the Holy Spirit
9. Be prepared as sent ones and expect struggle, rejection, persecution and suffering

10. Make disciples of all nations and ethnic groups

The testament example: A testament is someone's last will and must not be changed!

- Before the risen Jesus returned to the Father in heaven he called his remaining 11 main disciples to a mountain in Galilee.
- There he gave them the **great commandment** as a legacy, his final speech, and his last will, which today we call the "**great commission**".

Matthew 28:18-20

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

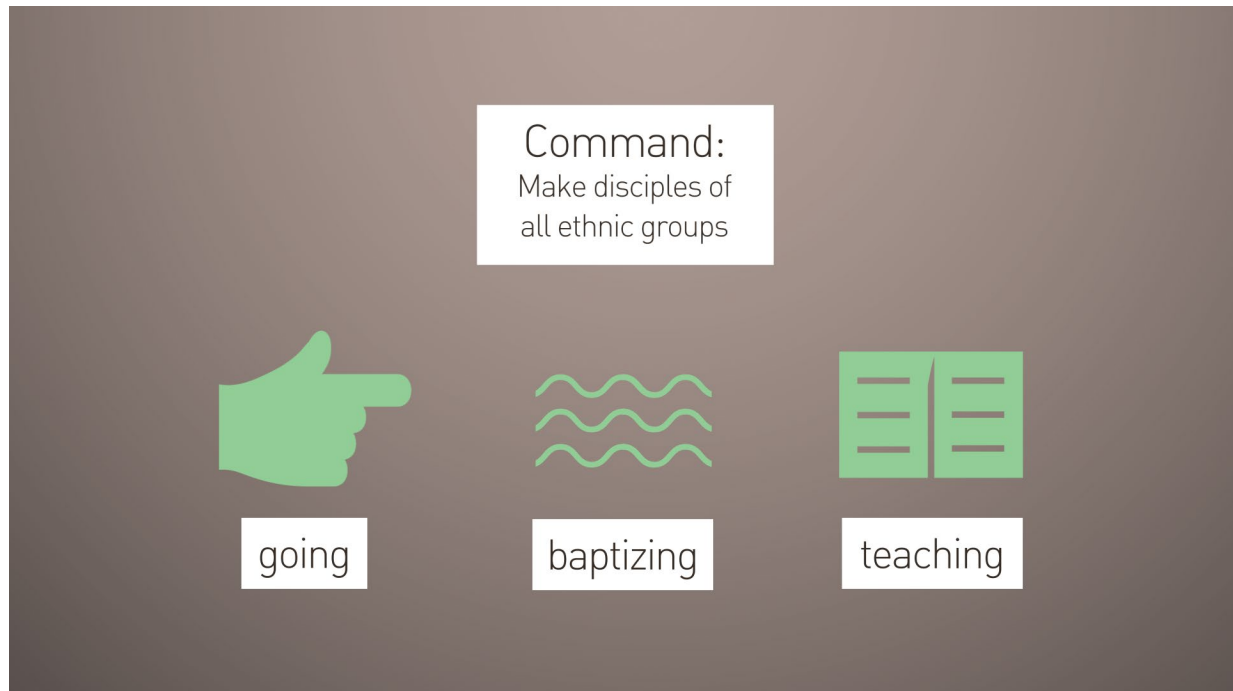
In fact, the Great Commission is a commandment to make disciples.

Many Bible translations have four single commands in this Bible passage:

1. Go
 2. Make disciples of all ethnic groups
 3. Baptize them
 4. Teach them to obey everything I have commanded you
- In reality, Jesus gave us only **one command**. This was not a mission command but much more a **command to make disciples**.
 - In the Greek original text of the New Testament there is only one command that tells us **WHAT** we should do: "**Make disciples of all nations.**"
 - However, the original text includes **three so-called participles**, which describe in the Greek language **HOW** we should carry out the command: **by going, by baptizing and by teaching to obey**.

Therefore, we should:

- a) **go to the unreached ethnic groups** (and proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God). Then, when faith comes into their hearts through preaching, we should:
- b) **baptize them in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit** and finally we should
- c) make disciples of them
- d) by **teaching them to obey everything** the Lord himself has commanded his disciples to do.



- The Great Commission is actually a great commission to make disciples.
- Discipleship is a big trend in the Kingdom of God today and the Holy Spirit has been putting a strong emphasis on it and wants to return it to us.
- Especially men (fathers) are called to practice discipleship within their families. Fathers are responsible for discipling their children.

Ephesians 6:4

Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord.

Revelations 3:22

Whoever has ears, let them hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

- The evangelist evangelizes
- The prophet prophesies
- The teacher teaches
- The shepherd shepherds, which means he cares for the people
- What does a sent one, an apostle, do?
- He makes disciples! According to Matthew 28:18-20 the true goal of a sent one is to plant the seeds of discipleship where there has been no disciples or discipleship before.
- **The final and true goal of all “sending” is to plant seeds of discipleship.**
- Discipleship needs to be planted within communities of faith just as Jesus showed us by living in community with his twelve disciples.

The greatest commandment in the Old Testament is the commandment to love:

Matthew 22:37-40

Jesus replied: "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. (Deuteronomy 6:5) This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself. (Leviticus 19:18) All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments."

In this verse, Jesus says that all commands of the Old Testament are summarized in the command "to love God". In the same way, we can summarize all commands of Jesus in the command: "make disciples of all ethnic groups."

The greatest commandment of Jesus in the New Testament is the command to make disciples:

Matthew 28:19-20

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Justin Welby, Archbishop of the Anglican church said: "First, the church exists to worship God in Jesus Christ. Second, the Church exists to make new disciples of Jesus Christ. Everything else is decoration. Some of it may be very necessary, useful or wonderful decoration, but it's decoration."

What is discipleship?

Definition of discipleship: Teach them to obey everything I have commanded you.

Task: In groups of two, discuss the following two questions concerning the command to make disciples: **Teach them to obey everything I have commanded you.**

- Who is meant by "**THEM**"?
 - Apostles?
 - Leaders?
 - People with a special calling?
 - Men?
 - Women?
 - Old people?
 - Young people?

- What does the discipleship command mean when it says to do “**EVERYTHING**” (I have commanded you)? List 15 things:

Every baptized follower should live in discipleship and make disciples of others.

This is the most important ministry in the New Testament besides the command to love.

**TEACH them
to obey EVERYTHING**

- There are 684 commandments in the whole New Testament
 - 382 «laws» of Jesus
 - 50 key commandments
- 6 to 8 key commandments for discipleship lead to a short discipleship

Discipleship = To keep CHRIST's commandments

1 Corinthians 9:21

To those not having the law I became like one not having the law (though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law), so as to win those not having the law.

Galatians 6:2

Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfill the law of Christ.

The clearest and most simple definition of discipleship is to keep the commandments of Jesus and to do them.

- Reading Jesus' commandments, listening in heart and study. All commands are in imperative form!
- After listening comes straight the doing. It is important to listen and do!

2 Timothy 2:2

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

- Share **now/immediately**, what you have received. Is an other principal of discipleship.

Discipleship of Jesus is an **obedience-oriented** discipleship.

Mathew 28,20 does not only address obedience towards the commands of Jesus. It is also an empowerment for the disciples to do everything that Jesus had taught them. It becomes clear that every follower of Jesus is called and authorized to do everything Jesus commanded his disciples to do.

All disciples means:

1. Leaders
2. Men
3. Women
4. Old men and women
5. Young men and women
6. All who have been born again, who are baptized, filled with the Holy Spirit and who follow Jesus wholeheartedly

What does the Scripture mean when it says that we as followers of Jesus (men and women, old and young) are authorized to do “everything” that Jesus taught his disciples to do?

This includes all the commands of Jesus, for example:

- to go
- to preach the Gospel
- to heal
- to cast out demons
- to baptize
- to offer the Lord's supper
- to bless
- to plant communities of faith
- to make disciples
- to bind and to loosen
- to train new leaders

Why is discipleship so important?

The Heavenly Father desires for us to be transformed into the image of his Son. He took this decision before the creation of the world.

Romans 8:29

For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters.

A second definition of discipleship:

A disciple is someone **who becomes more and more like Jesus in his character and who does the works of Jesus.**

The commandment to make disciples (we should make disciples who again make more disciples) is actually a discipleship multiplication command.

- **Jesus is the best disciple maker**
- Jesus is the greatest example for all discipleship
- **Jesus is our model for discipleship**

The training model of Jesus:

- a) **Principle:** The disciples of Jesus were an answer to prayer:
He prayed intensely for a whole night before he began calling the 12 men into discipleship.
Pray intensely and then call your disciples
- b) **Principle:** Jesus called the 12 disciples, formed a community with them and shared his life with them:
Life in community was the natural setting for discipleship. Community and discipleship meant the same thing for Jesus.
Jesus did not differentiate discipleship from sharing lives and living in community.
- c) **Principle:** Jesus released them for the sake of discipleship
Jesus called them to himself so that they could really focus on becoming disciples after his heart.
- d) **Principle:** The training community with the disciples was his spiritual family, his spiritual home, his community of faith, his church.
- e) **Principle:** Jesus only had three years. He needed these three years to properly disciple 12 men. However, after about one year he **sent** them out so that they could gain sending experience of their own.
- f) **Principle:** He trained 3 to 12 persons and thereby started a movement. He trained a **few** (12 men) so as to reach **many** (all ethnic groups).
- g) **Principle:** Jesus gave commandments to his disciples.
The discipleship of Jesus is an obedience-oriented discipleship.
- h) **Principle:** Discipleship pattern: Jesus trained in theory (teaching) and practice (field training).
 - 1. Jesus teaches
 - 2. Jesus **shows** something and the disciples watch
 - 3. The disciples imitate it and Jesus watches/coaches
 - 4. Jesus sends the disciples out to do the same thing with others**Jesus trained in theory (teaching) and practice (demonstrating)**
- i) **Principle:** Train in a **group** (12 people) and one-on-one both at home and outside.
- j) **Principle:** At the end of their discipleship training Jesus sent the disciples out to do the same: after the coming of the Holy Spirit on Pentecost, the disciples established communities of disciples (churches). **After three years Jesus sent out his disciples to do the same.**

Task: Luke 5 to 18 is the passage in the whole New Testament that gives us the best insight on how Jesus trained his disciples practically.
Read carefully these chapters and write down, in which **discipleship areas** Jesus trained his 12 disciples. Also write down **where and how** he did it. Then share your results and your insights with someone else.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Memorize the 10 discipleship principles of Jesus and present them to one another.

- e) Share in the group where and how you have already experienced discipleship in your previous ministry!
- f) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application (outreach).

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

- 1) PRAYER: prayer walks with the team and a partner ☐
- 2) GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3) Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4) PREACH: the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5) EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6) Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7) Share your personal testimony with others ☐
- 8) Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9) FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10) Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11) Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12) Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
 - Go on 5 treasure hunts ☐
- 13) Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14) Pray intensely that the Lord would show you which persons you can call into discipleship. Naturally, it is best when you can disciple the same person of peace you found and baptized (in water and in the Spirit). ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Answers:**How and where Jesus trained his 12 disciples.**

1. JESUS TEACHES (importance of the Word) about the Kingdom of God: Luke 5:3; Luke 6:20-47 mustard seed Luke 13:18-21
2. TEACHING and DOING (word and deed): Luke 6:47-49: Jesus shows in a parable how the Word is effective and also how it is not. Alone the Word of God has great power: Luke 8:4-15. How Christians deal correctly with what they have heard: Luke 8:16-18. Whoever hears the Word and does it is a relative of Jesus. Luke 8:19-21/Blessed is who hears and puts into practice, Luke 11:27-28.
3. JESUS shows Peter his CALLING: FISHER – FISHER OF MEN Luke 5:3-10 → Shows the 12 Apostles their calling (disciples and apostles v.13): Luke 6:12-16
4. JESUS shows how to HEAL: Luke 5:12-16 (practical = field training). JESUS shows the connection between faith (v. 20) – forgiveness of sins (v. 20) – healing (v. 24-25): Luke 5:17-26. Field training: Anointing – healing and public confession – faith: Luke 8:40-48. Healing = Deliverance: Luke 13:10-17. Healing on the Sabbath Luke 13:10-17/14:1-6. Healing and giving thanks and glory to God: Luke 17:11-19. Crying out to Jesus until he hears: Luke 18:35-43.
5. Jesus goes to unbelievers (EVANGELISM) Luke 5:27. Celebrating feasts: Luke 5:27-32. Be careful about material possessions: Luke 12,16-21. There is a “too late”: Luke 13:22-30. The great banquet: Luke 14:15-24. Lost sheep/coin/son Luke 15
6. DEALING WITH CRITICISM: Luke 5:30-32. JESUS says what his calling is. Luke 7:30-35: Jesus deals with his critics. Jesus is rejected by Samaritans: Luke 9: 51-55. Refusing to give a sign: Luke 10:29-32. Pharisees: Luke 16:14-18 The hostility of Herod: Luke 13:31-33
7. FASTING: Luke 5:33-35
8. Jesus shows how to understand the COMMANDMENTS Luke 6:1-11
9. JESUS shows the importance (v. 9) of FAITH: Luke 7:11-10/Luke 17:5-6
10. Jesus shows mercy: RAISING OF A DEAD PERSON Luke 7:11-17. Being laughed at and raising of a dead person: Luke 8:49-56.
11. Jesus honors John, the highest of the “OLD TESTAMENT PEOPLE OF GOD but also shows the difference to the new Luke 7:18-29 → Luke 5:36-39
12. The connection between FORGIVENESS OF SINS and LOVE: (v. 47) Luke 7:36-47
13. Jesus travels with WOMEN: Luke 8:1-3
14. MIRACLES WITH NATURE: Luke 8:22-25. Miraculous multiplication of food: Luke 9:10-17
15. DELIVERANCE: Luke 8:26-39. Information about the kingdom of evil. Luke 11 and 14:22. Return of the evil spirits: Luke 10:24-26
16. Calling→ SENDING – Rejection: Luke 9:1-6/Luke 10:1-12 House of peace/identification with the sent one: Luke 10:16. Rejoicing with the sent ones: Luke 10:17-24
17. JUDGEMENT for rejection: Luke 10:13-15. Woe to the Pharisees: Luke 11:37-53. Fig tree: Luke 13:6-9/Luke 13:22-30. Lazarus: Luke 16:19-30. There is a “too late”: Luke 13:22-30. Woe to the deceivers: Luke 17:1-2

18. SUFFERING: Luke 9:21-22; Luke 9:43-45; Luke 18:31-34. Commitment to Christ – suffering: Luke 9:18-20. Fearless commitment: Luke 12:1-12. Division for the sake of Jesus: Luke 12:49-59. The hostility of Herod: Luke 13:31-33

19. DISCIPLESHIP, denying oneself, price, being ashamed of Jesus: Luke 9:23-27. Following Jesus: Luke 9:57-6. Counting the costs: Luke 14:25-35. Following Jesus and the favorite sin: Luke 18:18-26. Reward for following Jesus: Luke 18:28-29

20. Sharing INTIMATE MOMENTS at the glorification of Jesus: Luke 9:28-36

21. Disciples heal and JESUS EVALUATES: Luke 9:37-43

22. CHARACTER TRAINING: Luke 9:46-50. Mercy: Luke 10:25-37. Being more important than doing: Luke 10:38-42. Attention: material things: Luke 12:16-21. Worries – trust: Luke 12:22-34. Self-exaltation: Luke 14:7-14. Faithfulness: Luke 16:10 -13. Being faithful in small things: Luke 16:10-13. Pride/self-righteousness/humility: Luke 16:14-18; Luke 18:9-14

23. PRAYER: Luke 11:1-13

24. FUTURE: Luke 12:35-48; Luke 12:54-59; Luke 17:20-37. Lament over Jerusalem: Luke 13:34-35

25. DEALING WITH DISASTERS: Luke 13:1-5

26. PARABLES = principles of the Kingdom of God: Luke 13:6-9 + 18-21: Dealing with fruitlessness, do not despise small beginnings

27. Statements about NON-CHRISTIANS: Luke 16:1-9, Luke 18:1-8

28. Jesus, the CHILDREN and the Kingdom of God: Luke 18:15-17

29. REBUKE: Luke 17:3

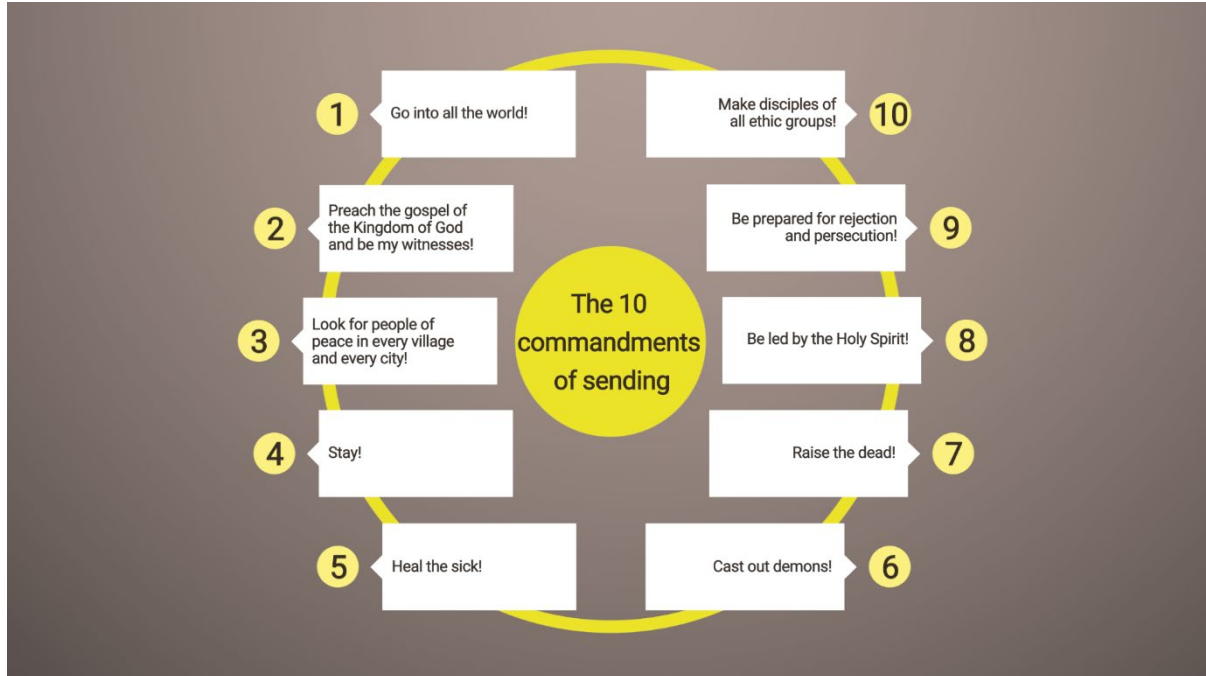
30. Jesus and FORGIVENESS: Luke 17:4

Training Unit 21



Make disciples II:

Discipleship means keeping the commandments of Jesus



The greatest commandment in the Old Testament is the commandment to love:

Matthew 22:37-40

Jesus replied: "‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments."

The greatest commandment of Jesus in the New Testament is the commandment to make disciples:

Matthew 28:19-20

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Definition of discipleship: **Keeping the commandments of Christ**

1 Corinthians 9:21

To those not having the law I became like one not having the law (though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law), so as to win those not having the law.

Galatians 6:2

Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfill the law of Christ.

What is discipleship?

Definition of discipleship: Teach them to obey everything I have commanded you.

➔ Definition of discipleship: **Keeping the commandments of Christ**

1 Corinthians 9:21

*To those not having the law I became like one not having the law (though I am not free from God's law but I **am under Christ's law**), so as to win those not having the law.*

Galatians 6:2

Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfil the law of Christ.

teach them to obey EVERYTHING

There are 684 commandments in the whole New Testament (either in the form of a direct commandment or in the form of an indirect commandment where the context shows that it is a "commandment").

382 "commandments" of Jesus:

Those are all commandments of Jesus. The indirect, temporary commandments are (commandments that were given for a specific situation) included in this number.

50 out of these 382 commandments are key commandments
These include the **10 commandments of sending**.

The 50 "key" commandments of Jesus (the Law of Christ)¹

1. Repent—Matthew 4:17—humility
2. Follow me—Matthew 4:19—meekness
3. Rejoice—Matthew 5:12—joyfulness
4. Let your light shine—Matthew 5:16—generosity
5. Honour God's commandments—Matthew 5:17–18—love
6. Be reconciled—Matthew 5:24–25—responsibility
7. Do not commit adultery —Matthew 5:29–30—self control
8. Keep your word—Matthew 5:37—credibility
9. Go the second mile—Matthew 5:38–42—concern for others
10. Love your enemies—Matthew 5:44—creativity
11. Be perfect—Matthew 5:48—integrity
12. Practice secret disciplines—Matthew 6:1–18—faith
13. Gather treasures—Matthew 6:19–21—thrifty living
14. Seek the Kingdom of God—Matthew 6:33—decisiveness
15. Do not judge—Matthew 7:1—discernment
16. Do not waste pearls—Matthew 7:6—common sense
17. Asking, seeking, knocking—Matthew 7:7–8—ingenuity
18. Doing to others—Matthew 7:12—sensitivity

¹ <http://www.historymakers.info/sermons/50-commands-of-christ.html>

19. Choose the narrow path—Matthew 7:13–14—determination
20. Watch out for false prophets—Matthew 7:15—alertness
21. Pray for workers in the harvest—Matthew 9:38—dedication
22. Be as clever as snakes—Matthew 10:16—wisdom
23. Fear God, not people—Matthew 10:26—audacity
24. Hear God's voice—Matthew 11:15—attentiveness
25. Take your yoke—Matthew 11:29—obedience
26. Honour your parents—Matthew 15:4—honour
27. Beware of the yeast—Matthew 16:6—virtue
28. Deny yourself—Luke 9:23—sacrifice
29. Do not despise the small ones—Matthew 18:10—tolerance
30. Go to those who have fallen into sin—Matthew 18:15—justice
31. Beware of greed—Luke 12:15—contentment
32. Forgive those who have sinned against you—Matthew 18:21–22—forgiveness
33. Honour marriage—Matthew 19:6—loyalty
34. Be a servant—Matthew 20:26–28—servanthood
35. Be a house of prayer—Matthew 21:13—prayer
36. Pray with faith—Matthew 21:21–22—faith
37. Invite the poor—Luke 14:12–14—hospitality
38. Give to the emperor what belongs to the emperor—Matthew 22:19–21—thankfulness
39. Love the Lord—Matthew 22:37–38—enthusiasm
40. Love your neighbour—Matthew 22:39—kindness
41. Expect my return—Matthew 24:42–44—readiness
42. Take, eat and drink—Matthew 26:26–27—thoroughness
43. Be born again—John 3:7—rebirth
44. Keep my commandments—John 14:15—obedience
45. Watch and pray—Matthew 26:41—attentiveness in prayer
46. Tend my sheep—John 21:15–16—care for others
47. Baptize my disciples—Matthew 28:19—reproduce
48. Receive the power of God—Luke 24:49—empowerment
49. Give—Luke 6:38—generosity
50. Make disciples—Matthew 28:20—reproduce

Disciple Multiplication Movements (DMM) have summarized discipleship to **six key commandments**. **These six commandments are planted like a basic DNA into the discipleship movement and cause it to multiply.** These six commandments create a kind of “brief discipleship”.

Brief discipleship – six commandments

- 1) **Repent and believe** (confessing, leaving, fearing God, following Jesus, being born again, receiving the Holy Spirit, trusting)
- 2) **Be baptized**
- 3) **Love** (God, your neighbour, give to the poor, the widows, the orphans, forgiveness, kindness, grace, offering, encouragement, self-denial, serving, not judging).
- 4) **Pray**
- 5) **Fellowship** (thinking about the death of Jesus during the Lord’s Supper, gathering together, fellowship with other believers)
- 6) **Making disciples** (teaching, proclaiming the gospel, sharing your testimony, evangelizing, healing, casting out evil spirits, finding persons of peace, planting communities of faith)

Some work with eight core commandments of Jesus:

They plant these eight commandments as a basic DNA into the discipleship movement and cause it to multiply.

Brief discipleship – eight commandments

- 1) **Repent and believe**
- 2) **Be baptized**
- 3) Receive the **Holy Spirit**
- 4) **Love** God, your neighbour and your enemies
- 5) **The Lord’s Supper**
- 6) **Prayer and the word of God**
- 7) As **stewards**, give your time, treasures and talents generously
- 8) Go in teams of two and make disciples by being witnesses, teaching God’s word, training new believers and leaders.

Some orient themselves to the following **basic statements found in Hebrews 6,1-3** so as to lay a **foundation for discipleship**:

Hebrews 6:1-3

Therefore let us move beyond the elementary teachings about Christ and be taken forward to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death, and of faith in God, instruction about cleansing rites, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so.

1. **Repenting** of dead works:
Everything that has priority before God is an idol. Repenting of the sins of our past.
2. **Believing** in the living God:
There need to be changes so that we can completely dedicate our hearts to the living God and believe his promises. Confessing and acting based on his promises proves our loyalty to him.
3. **Doctrine of baptism**:
Baptism is not necessary to be saved (unlike repentance and faith for example). However, whenever possible, we should be baptized like Jesus “in order to fulfill all righteousness”.

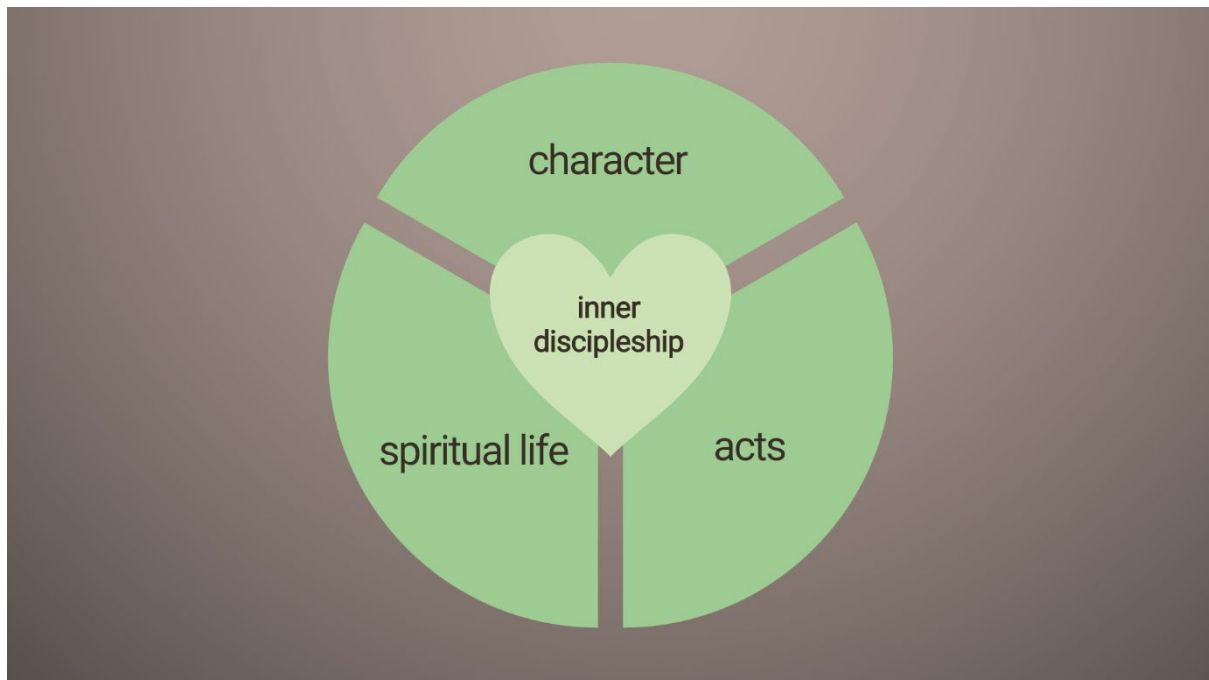
4. **Laying on of hands** “works”:
 - A) Blessings (Matthew 19:13)
 - B) healing (Mark 7:32)
 - C) **impartation**/transfer anointing (Acts 8:16+19; 19:6)
 - D) ordination (Acts 6:6; 1 Timothy 4:14)
 - E) apostolic commission (Acts 13:3)
 - F) release of gifts (2 Timothy 1:6)
5. **Resurrection:**
Christians will rise to eternal life, sinners go to eternal damnation (Acts 24:15; John 5:29)
6. **The Last Judgment:**
For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each one may receive what is due for what he has done in the body, whether good or evil (2 Corinthians 5:10).

What is the discipleship level that we aim for with this training?

In our ministry of sending we want to establish a deep and solid discipleship.

→ The discipleship should cover four areas in the life of a disciple:

The four discipleship areas of the BEsent training



Inner discipleship:

In a first step we want to start with inner discipleship with new followers of Jesus. The issues of inner discipleship are the same as the areas that Paul mentions in 2 Corinthians 13:14.

2 Corinthians 13:14

May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

- 1.1 The grace of the Lord Jesus
- 1.2 The love of the Father
- 1.3 The fellowship of the Holy Spirit

Next to inner discipleship there are three main topics of discipleship:

- 2. The spiritual life of a disciple
- 3. The deeds of a disciple
- 4. The character of a disciple

The discipleship topics of the BEsent training**Inner discipleship**

- 1. Grace of the Lord Jesus
 - a) Faith
 - b) Repentance
 - c) Water baptism
 - d) Receiving the Holy Spirit
- 2. Love of the Father
- 3. Fellowship of the Holy Spirit

A) Spiritual life of a disciple

- 4. Bible reading DBS
- 5. Personal prayer
- 6. Assurance of salvation
- 7. Be filled with the Holy Spirit
- 8. Living in community

B) Deeds of a disciple

- 1. Giving testimony
- 2. Go and preach the Gospel
- 3. Ministry of the Holy Spirit
- 4. Giving and sharing
- 5. Make disciples

C) Character of a disciple

- 6. Love God and your neighbour
- 7. Transformational Ministry
- 8. Forgiveness
- 9. Serving
- 10. Living by faith

Recommended order

If we don't have a clear guidance for a order of the discipleship topics, it's recommended to do it with our disciples in the following order:

1. Inner discipleship
2. Bible reading DBS
3. Personal prayer
4. Giving testimony
5. Go and preach the Gospel
6. Forgiveness
7. Transformational Ministry
8. Assurance of salvation
9. Living in community
10. Being filled with the Holy Spirit
11. Ministry of the Holy Spirit
 - a. Heal the sick
 - b. Cast out demons
 - c. Raise the dead
 - d. Be led by the Holy Spirit
12. Make disciples
13. Love God and your neighbour
14. Giving and sharing
15. Serving
16. Living by faith

- ⇒ Training new disciples in these basic areas of discipleship requires at least six months to one year.
- ⇒ For us as disciple makers, training means to show, demonstrate and practice these topics with our disciples until they can practice these discipleship areas alone.
- ⇒ This list with the 18 topics was of course not directly copied from the Bible and therefore is not absolute. However, it covers the most important areas of basic discipleship.
- ⇒ There is no exact order for the discipleship areas in which we train our disciples. It depends on the disciple's situation and on what the Holy Spirit is currently working on within the process of transformation into the likeness of Christ.
- ⇒ Of course, these 18 mentioned areas are not a full discipleship training but rather a basic one.
- ⇒ When growing as disciples, we go through the levels as described by the apostle in 1 and 2 John (children, young men, fathers).
- ⇒ After the basic discipleship (points A-D), the training should continue until we become mature fathers and mothers in Christ.

Hebrews 5:12-14

In fact, though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you the elementary truths of God's word all over again. You need milk, not solid food! Anyone who lives on milk, being still an infant, is not acquainted with the teaching about righteousness. But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained themselves to distinguish good from evil.

Hebrews 6:1-3 and 12

Therefore let us move beyond the elementary teachings about Christ and be taken forward to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death, and of faith in God, instruction about cleansing rites, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so.

We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Memorize the 18 discipleship areas that form the basic discipleship and present them to each other.

- e) Share in the group which discipleship areas you have already trained in your previous ministry and which ones you have not trained yet.
- f) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application (outreach).

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with the team and a partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
→ Go on 5 treasure hunts ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Pray intensely that the Lord would show you which persons you can call into discipleship. Naturally, it is best when you can disciple the same person of peace you found and baptized (in water and in the Spirit). ☐
15. Call this person into discipleship. ☐

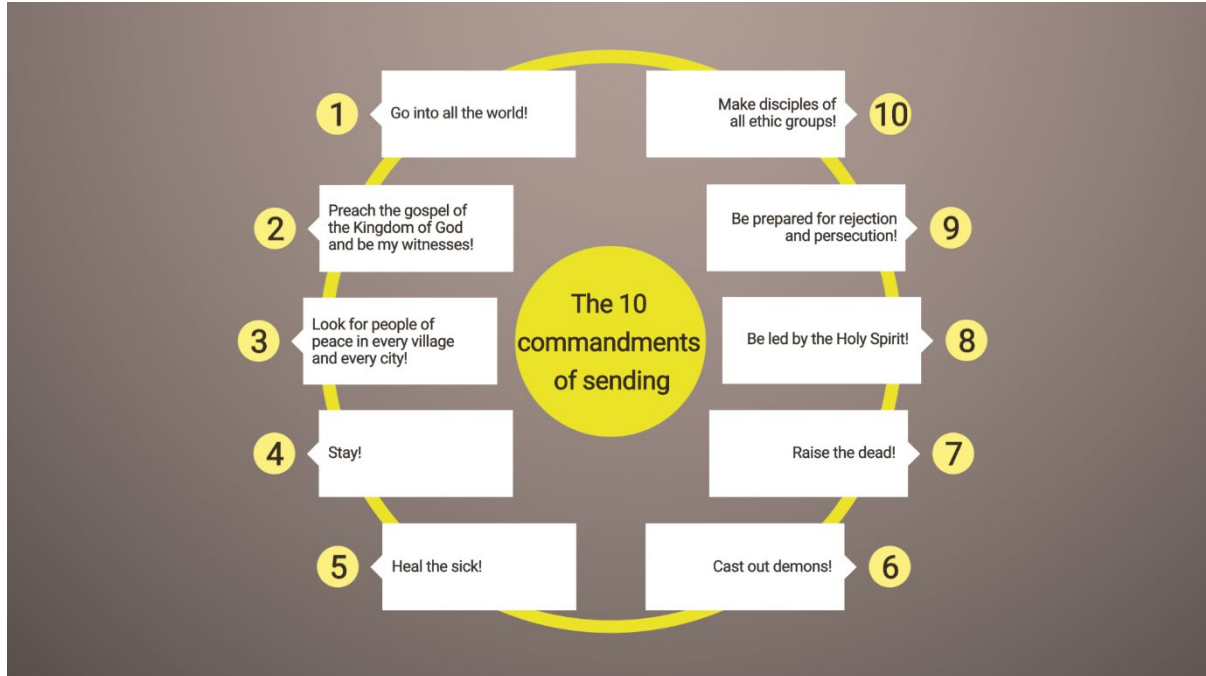
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 22

Make disciples III:

The setting for discipleship



Make disciples of all ethnic groups III: The setting for discipleship and the discipleship meetings – What does a discipleship training meeting look like?

The setting for a discipleship meeting

- ⇒ To **have a child** is one thing.
- ⇒ To **train** a new born **baby** until it becomes a mature adult is something very different.
- ⇒ The **spiritual education** of a born-again person is what we call **discipleship**. Besides **loving and worshipping God**, this is the most important and most challenging task of a faith community.
- ⇒ As with educating a child, discipleship happens in
 - different **life situations**
 - different **environments**
 - different **settings**
 - different **contexts**

Where does discipleship take place?

- ⇒ The basic and primary setting for discipleship is sharing one's life with the disciples.
- ⇒ Jesus did it this way.
- ⇒ It is not possible to share one's life with many people, rather with 3 to 5 disciples or full time like Jesus, with 12 disciples.

Sharing lives means:

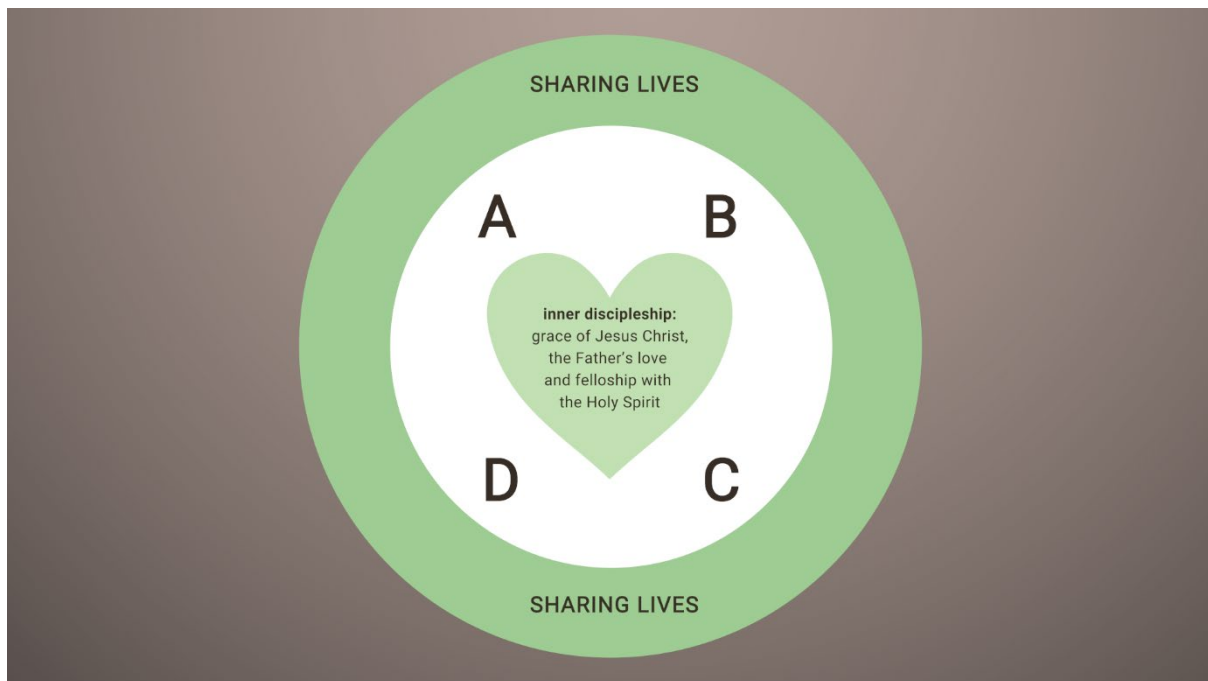
- Sharing primarily one's spiritual life, doing spiritual things together. → Jesus went to the villages together with his disciples, he preached, healed, etc.
- It also means doing very normal things together → visiting people
- Eating and spending time together

Discipleship takes place in **5 main settings**.

First, the inner discipleship of the heart

2 Corinthians 13:14

May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

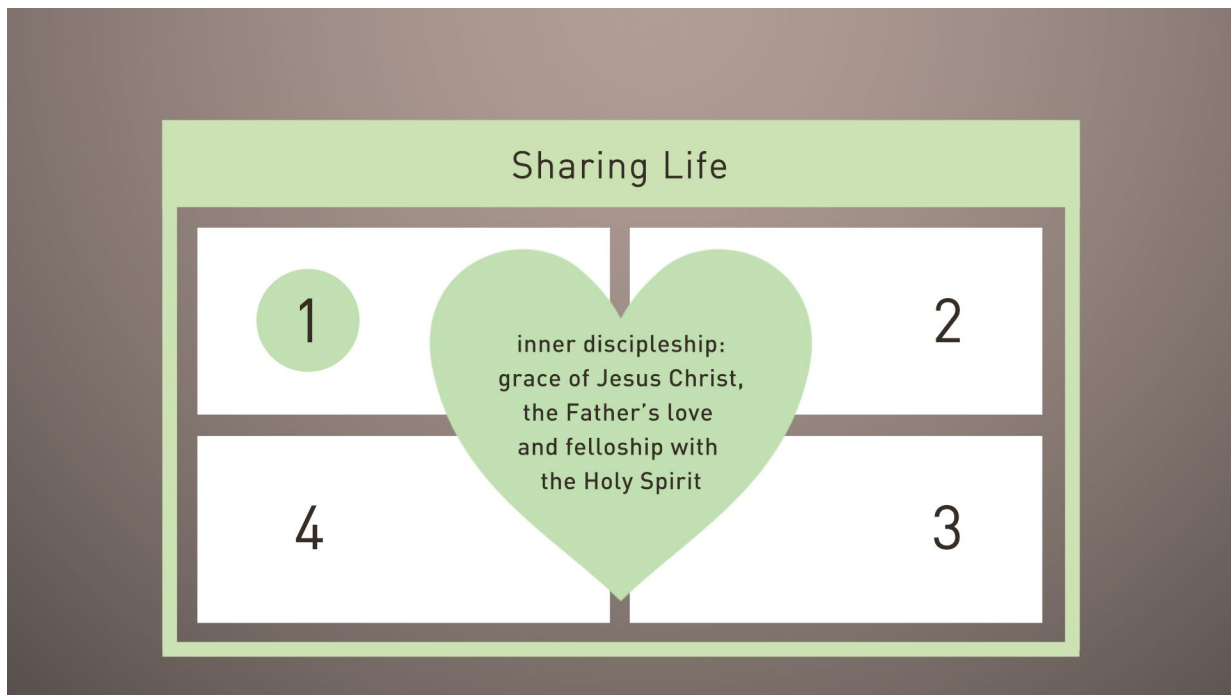


The first and most important part of discipleship is that the disciple...

- comes into a real and tangible relationship with the triune God
- experiencing and living it daily.

This inner discipleship is the foundation for the whole spiritual life of every disciple.

Besides the so-called **“inner discipleship”** happening in our heart and our personal spiritual life, there is an **“outer discipleship”** happening in four different settings of our community life.



A) One-on-one discipleship is the part of discipleship that happens in

- ⇒ One-on-one conversations and in prayer
- ⇒ The one-on-one discipleship takes place in a pastoral context with one person or in a small group that we trust.
- ⇒ This form of discipleship places a lot of emphasis on counseling and is especially important if the disciple has big problems in his character or life, for example:
 - Occult ties (idolatry, oppression or possession by evil spirits)
 - Addictions (drugs, alcohol, pornography, stealing)
 - Character deficits (hatred, rage, violence)
 - Mental diseases (schizophrenia, psychoses, phobia)
 - Relational problems (abuse, divorce)

Paul describes one-on-one discipleship in:

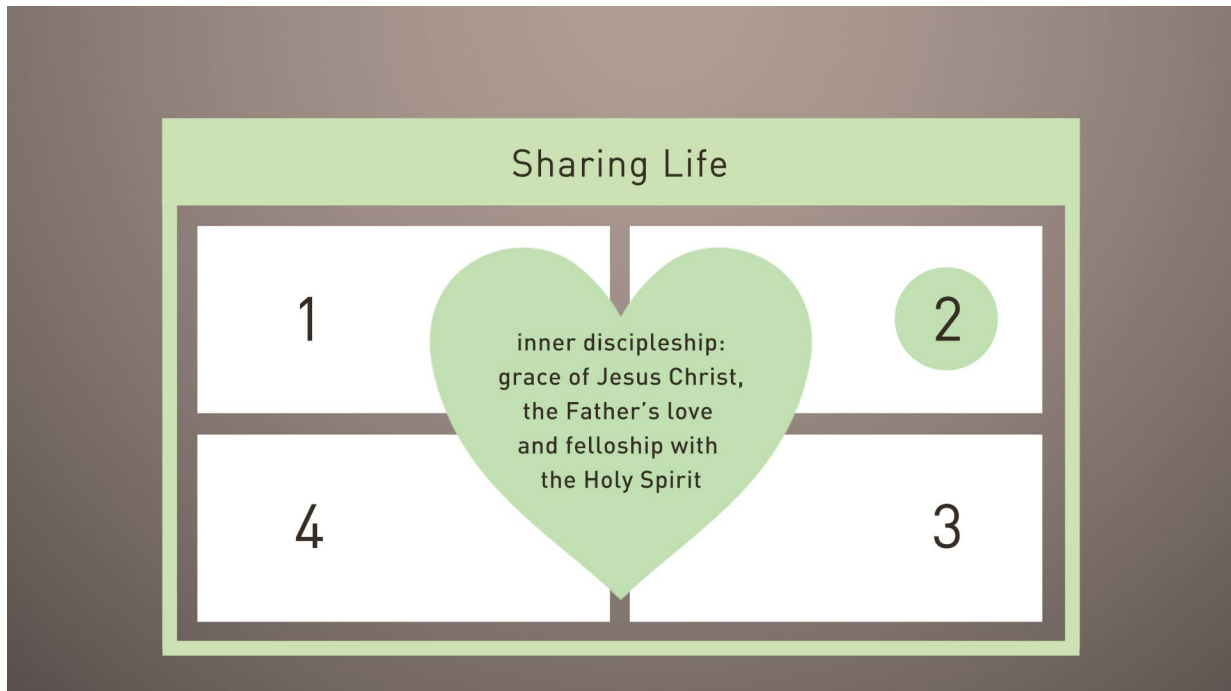
1 Thessalonians 2:11-12

For you know that we dealt with each of you as a father deals with his own children, encouraging, comforting and urging you to live lives worthy of God, who calls you into his kingdom and glory.

Acts 20:31

So be on your guard! Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you night and day with tears.

B) The part of discipleship that happens in community (koinonia)



- ⇒ The Lord **intended fellowship** with other followers of Jesus **to form our character**.
- ⇒ This part of discipleship can **only** happen **in real** fellowship with others.
- ⇒ If such a fellowship does not exist, **this part of character forming does not take place** or only in a very limited form.
- ⇒ **Diamonds can only be cut by other diamonds**, or as the scripture says: iron sharpens iron!

Proverbs 27:17

As iron sharpens iron, so one person sharpens another.

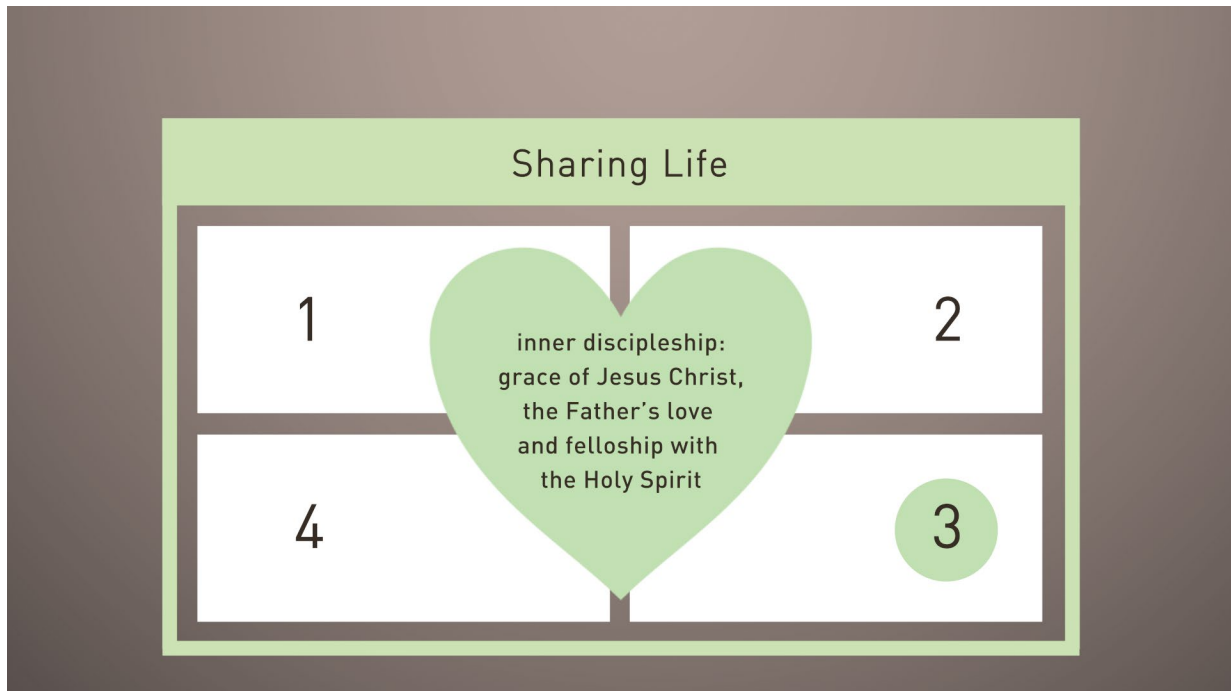
- ⇒ The New Testament describes this part of discipleship with “**one another**”-verses:

20 ONE-ANOTHER or EACH-OTHER verses:

1. Love one another: John 13:34
2. Honor one another above yourselves: Romans 12:10
3. Accept one another just as Christ accepted you: Romans 15:7
4. Instruct one another: Romans 15:14
5. Have equal concern for one another: 1 Corinthians 12:25
6. Carry each other's burden: Galatians 6:2
7. Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other: Ephesians 4:32
8. Submit to one another: Ephesians 5:21
9. In humility value each other above yourselves: Philippians 2:3
10. Bear with each other: Colossians 3:13
11. Encourage one another: 1 Thessalonians 4:18
12. Build each other up: 1 Thessalonians 5:11
13. Look after one another: Hebrews 10:24
14. Spur one another on toward love and good deeds: Hebrews 10:24
15. Admonish one another not to miss the meetings: Hebrews 10:25
16. Confess your sins to each other: James 5:16
17. Pray for each other: James 5:16
18. Offer hospitality to one another: 1 Peter 4:9
19. Serve each other your gifts: 1 Peter 4:10
20. Have fellowship with one another: 1 John 1:7

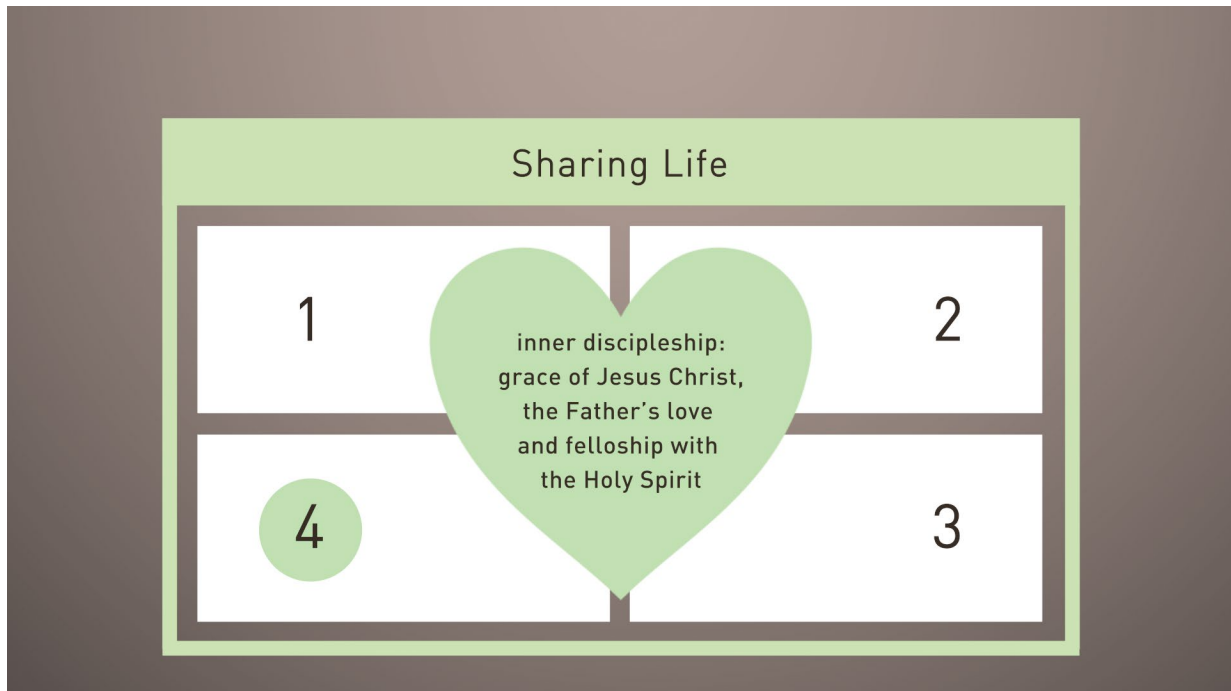
Discipleship groups that are actively practicing these one another verses naturally have many sources of friction. This sometimes produces squeaks during these sharpening processes.

C) The part of discipleship that is trained by demonstration and joint practice.



- ⇒ This part also happens in community most of the time.
- ⇒ In this discipleship part the disciples are trained to do the “deeds of Jesus”.
- ⇒ The deeds of a disciple include for example:
 1. Going
 2. Giving testimony
 3. Proclaiming the gospel
 4. Casting out evil spirits
 5. Healing
 6. Searching for persons of peace
 7. Baptizing...
- ⇒ Additionally, it is also about practicing the spiritual disciplines:
 1. Praying
 2. Fasting
 3. Keeping watch
 4. Reading the Bible
 5. Hearing God's voice
- ⇒ Trainers meet with disciples at home for the training of the spiritual life.
- ⇒ Training the deeds of a disciple usually takes place outside (training in the field) in order to show the disciples very practically how they can do the deeds of a disciple.
- ⇒ This was and is the model of Jesus.

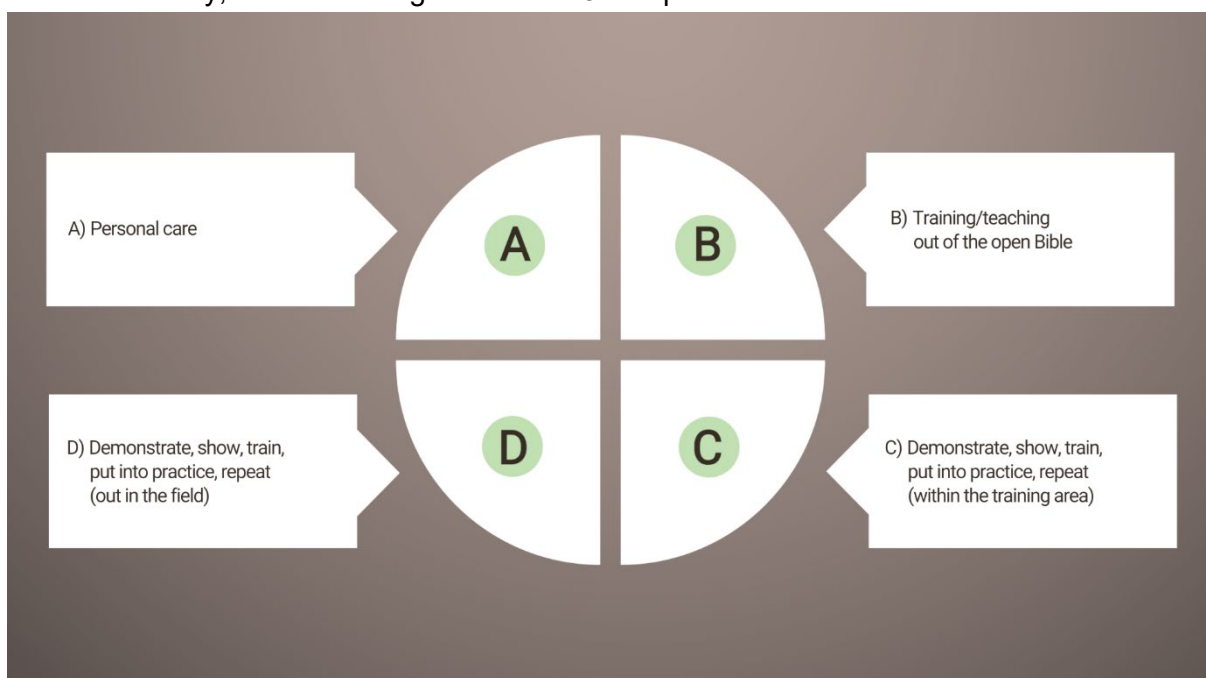
D) The part of discipleship that happens through everyday life



- ⇒ This part of discipleship can take place in a group or alone.
- ⇒ In his grace our Heavenly Father continues to use:
 - Situations, experiences and everyday events, to train us as disciples.
 - This can include things like: reading a book, hearing sermons, having conversations, visiting conferences, etc.

How does a discipleship training meeting look like practically?

- Specifically training single disciples or, even better, groups of disciples requires a strong commitment.
- Basically, such a training consists of 3 to 4 parts:



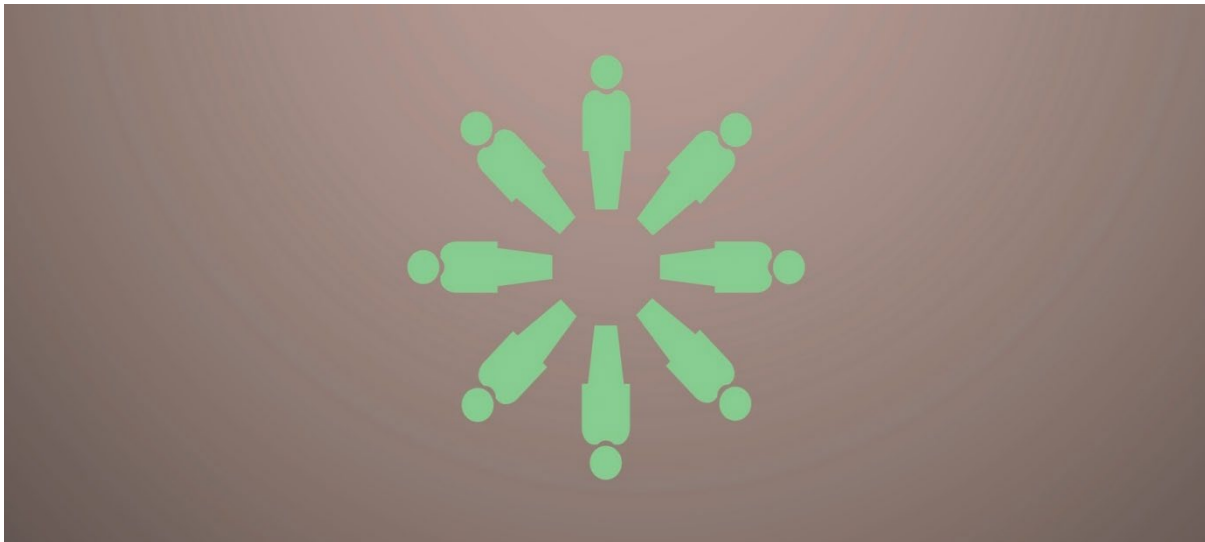
- A) Personal care
- B) Training/teaching from the open Bible
- C) Demonstrate, show, train, put into practice, repeat – Implementation in the training room
- D) Demonstrate, show, train, put into practice, repeat – Implementation in the field

In discipleship, it is very important to put a strong focus on the third and fourth part: put into practice.

- Note: There may be so-called “self-starters” at discipleship trainings.
- These are disciples that are able to immediately start practicing things they have heard, without the help of a discipleship maker.
- However, this does not correspond to the model of Jesus and should therefore not be seen as normal but as an exception.

A) First part of the meeting: personal care

We can have this part of discipleship **at home or in a training room.**



Personal care includes the following areas:

1. Questions about personal condition

- How are you?
- What did you learn from God this week?
- How is your relationship with God?
- What does your prayer life look like?
- What are your needs?

2. Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men

- How are you obeying the word of God?
- How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
- Are you a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Do they believe?
- Are they training others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the contents of the last lesson!



➔ **Do not give a task without asking about it the next time!**

Hebrews 10:24

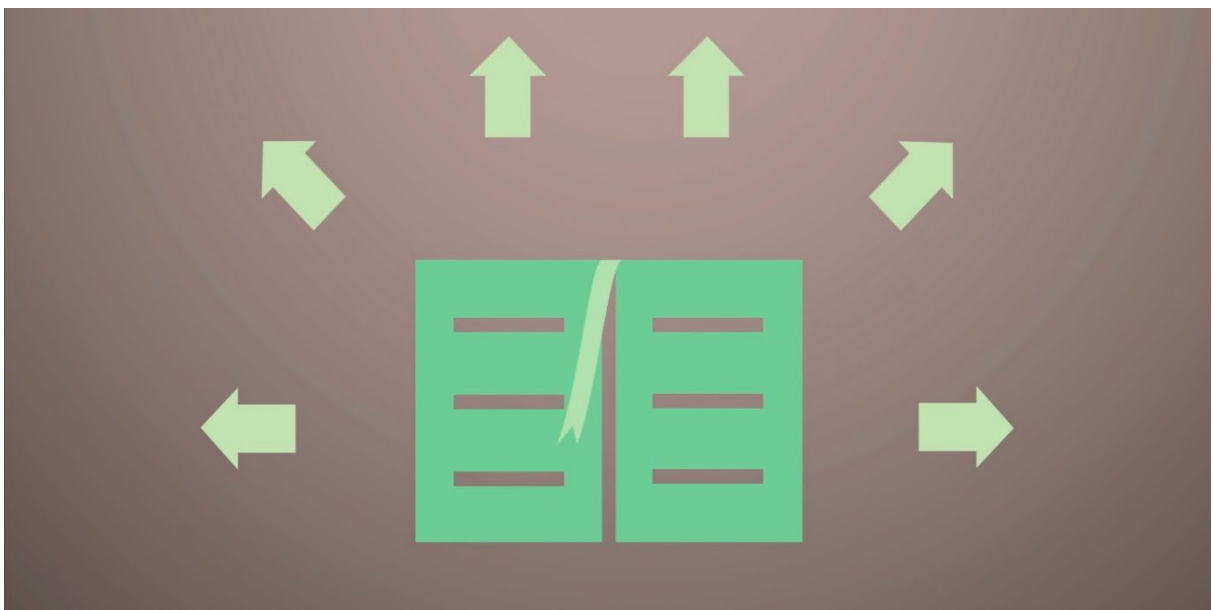
And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.

3. Praying together and for each other

➔ We plan 30 minutes for this first part (A) of the meeting

B) Second part of the meeting: training and teaching from the open Bible

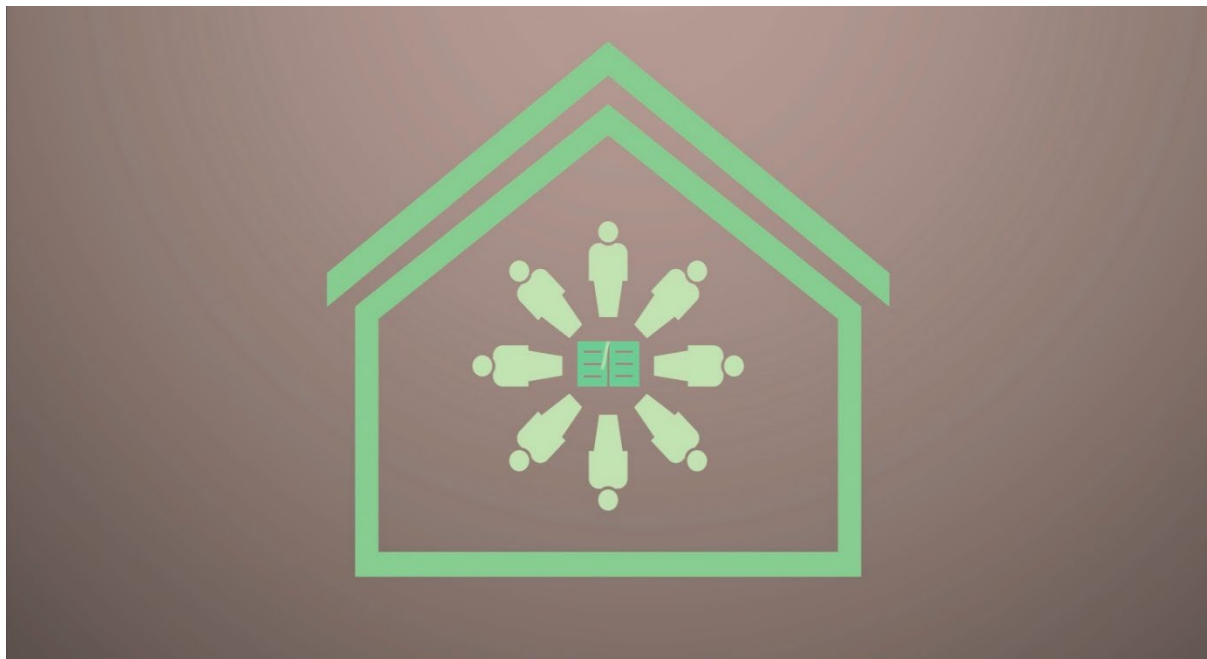
Even this discipleship part can take place at home or in the training room.



- The three topics of inner discipleship
 - 1. The **grace** of the Lord Jesus Christ
 - 2. The **love** of the Father
 - 3. The **fellowship** of the Holy Spirit
- And the 3x5 discipleship areas
 - **5** about the **spiritual life** of a disciple
 - **5** about the **character** of a disciple
 - **5** about the **deeds** of a disciple
- These lessons should be reproducible basic discipleship units.
- This means that the disciple not only learns them for himself but that he is also able to pass them on to his disciples.
- All units are taught from an open Bible.
- The disciple should discover the truths about a topic himself from the word of God (=Discovery Bible Study DBS = inductive Bible study).
- We need about 1 year for these 3+15 training units. - About 3 weeks for one topic: 3x18 = 54 weeks.
- Afterwards we can continue to train further discipleship areas with our disciples.
- However, at the same time disciples can discover further truths or discipleship lessons themselves and in mutual transparency through DBS/inductive Bible study and put them into practice through obedience.

Training/teaching from the open Bible means:

- Core text: There are one or more core texts from the Bible about every discipleship topic.
- The disciples read them at least twice and then summarize in their own words.
- The disciple searches the texts for key elements and notes them down or memorizes them.
- If the text includes a suitable verse for memorizing, the disciple learns it by heart.
- We use about 45 minutes for the second part of this meeting.



C) Third part of the meeting: demonstrate, show, train, put into practice, repeat – in the training room

This discipleship part takes place at home or in the training room.

- Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating in the training room and in the field is very important.
- If this part is neglected or comes short, the ability to replicate it suffers.
- The goal of this third step in a training unit is to transform disciples from hearers to doers of the Word.
- We place much emphasis on obedience-oriented discipleship. This is discipleship that is oriented on obedience, implementation and practice.



- Only by doing the word of God are we true disciples of Jesus!
- Only by doing the word of God can we become good trainers for others!

Matthew 28:20

teaching them to OBEY everything that I commanded you.

This part of discipleship (demonstrating, showing, training, practicing, repeating) includes the following elements:

- The disciples retell the lesson of today's training/teaching.
- As disciple makers we speak about our practice.
- As disciple makers we demonstrate the learned things in a role-play.
- The discipleship group is divided into several smaller groups of 2 to 3 persons to make another role-play together.
- Goal setting: the disciples define what they want to share with someone during the next week.
- The disciple is encouraged to share the lesson with his own spiritual family.
- Prayer:
 - The trainees are encouraged to pray expectantly in the name of Jesus for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 - They are also encouraged to pray for those (list names) God tells them to share the training units with.
 - The trainees should hear in prayer, which goals they should reach until the next meeting.
 - Prayer for every trainee and for the commission to put into practice what they have heard from God.
- We use 45 minutes for this third part of the meeting.

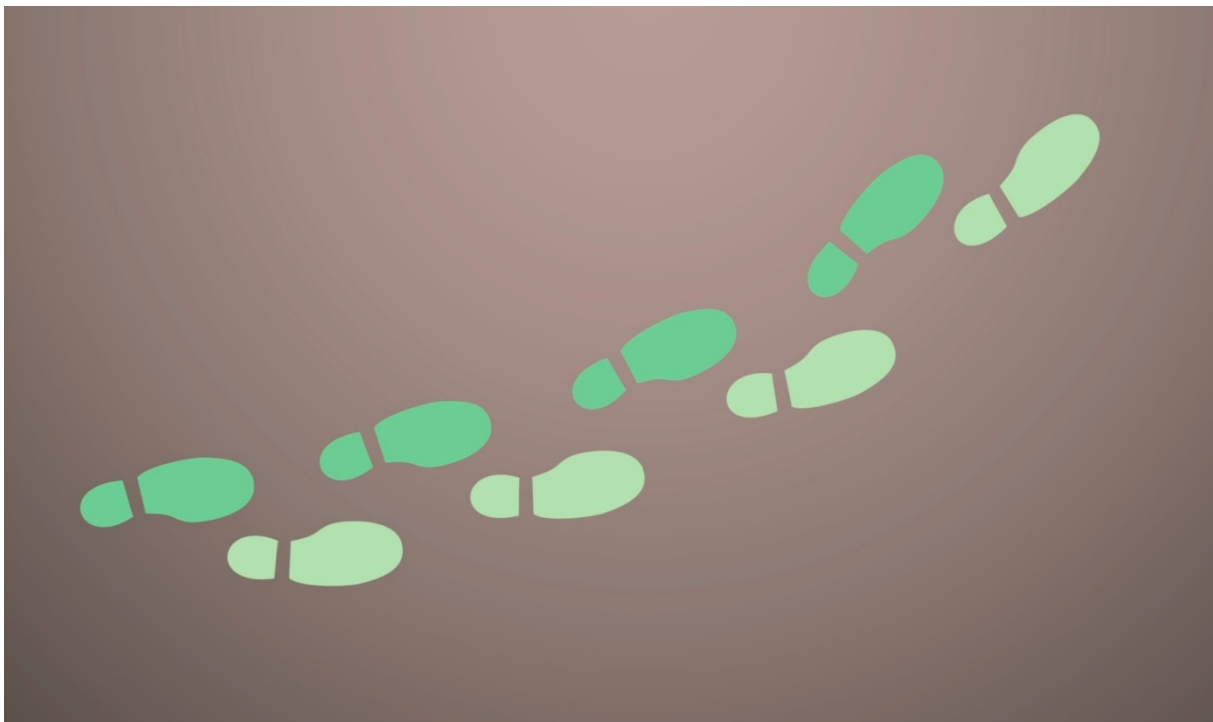
Such a discipleship training meeting can last up to 2 hours until it is time to go outside to practice.

➤ 1 st part: Personal care	30`
➤ 2 nd part: Teaching from the open Bible	45`
➤ 3 rd part: Role-play (dry run) in the training room	45`
<u>TOTAL</u>	<u>120`</u>

D) Fourth part of the meeting: Demonstrating, training, practicing, repeating – in the field

During this discipleship part we do not stay in the training room but go OUT:

- To people (unbelievers) to practice the discipleship units “in the field”.
- Or we go to the disciples with whom we want to train these discipleship parts.



- As mentioned, the goal of this phase is that the trainees DO and practice the discipleship topics.
- And that they would gain the competence and confidence to train other groups. Here some practical examples:
- **It is about an “in the field” training.**



- This is one of the most important parts of discipleship:
- As disciple makers we take our disciples along and go with them, if possible, to the harvest field.
- In that way we train our disciples by demonstrating, showing, practicing and repeating the training unit.

The Jesus model:

1. Jesus demonstrated something and his disciples watched and learned.
 2. The disciples practiced and Jesus watched (and corrected them if necessary).
 3. The disciples demonstrated something and their disciples watched...
- It may be that in some areas we often have to repeat certain things with our disciples (10, 20, 50 times), demonstrating, showing, training, practicing, repeating until the disciple has the courage to do it himself.
 - The principle and goal is clear: we continue to demonstrate, show, train, practice and repeat the individual parts of discipleship as long and as often, until the disciple can practice this part clearly, without hesitating and without doubting.
 - For the practical discipleship training it is very important and helpful to continually affirm and show appreciation to the disciple.
- Here we come to an absolute important aspect of discipleship.
 - We must practice the discipleship lessons we want to teach our disciples together with them as long as needed until they can do them themselves.
 - This means practically that we go out with our disciples like Jesus did and demonstrate and practice the deeds (going, preaching, giving testimony, healing, casting out demons, etc.).
 - We also do this regarding the spiritual life (praying, reading the Bible, listening...). We go to the disciples and practice it together until they practice it themselves.

The discipleship scorecard to memorize

A) Personal care

Personal condition

- How are you?
- What did you learn from God this week?
- How is your relationship with God?
- What does your prayer life look like?
- What are your needs?

Prayer

Giving an account of following Jesus and the fishing of men

- How are you obeying the word of God?
- How did you put the last training unit into practice?
- What is God doing in your life?
- Have you been a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Do they believe? Do they train others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
How many new groups were started?
- Retell the story of the last unit.

B) Teaching from the open Bible

- Topic
- Reading core texts twice
- Summarizing core texts with your own words
- Finding the key elements & learning points in the texts
- Learning the memory verse by heart

C) Implementation in the training room

- As disciple makers we tell of our own experiences
- As disciple makers we demonstrate things in role-play
- Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 or 3 persons and do role-play again
- Retelling the training/teaching
- Goal Setting: what they want to share with someone in the course of the next week...
- Encouraging to share the unit with their own spiritual family

Prayer

- For the needs of the people you want to share your testimony with or with whom you want to share the training unit
- Listening in prayer which goals to aim for until the next meeting
- Prayer for every trainee and commission

D) Implementation in the field

- We go and demonstrate – the disciple comes along, watches and learns
- The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
- The disciples demonstrate and their disciples watch...
- It may be that we need to demonstrate some things often (10, 20, 50 times).

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application (outreach).

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with the team and a partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
 - Go on 1 to 2 treasure hunts ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Pray intensely that the Lord would show you which persons you can call into discipleship. Naturally, it is best when you can disciple the same person of peace you found and baptized (in water and in the Spirit). ☐
15. Call this person into discipleship. ☐

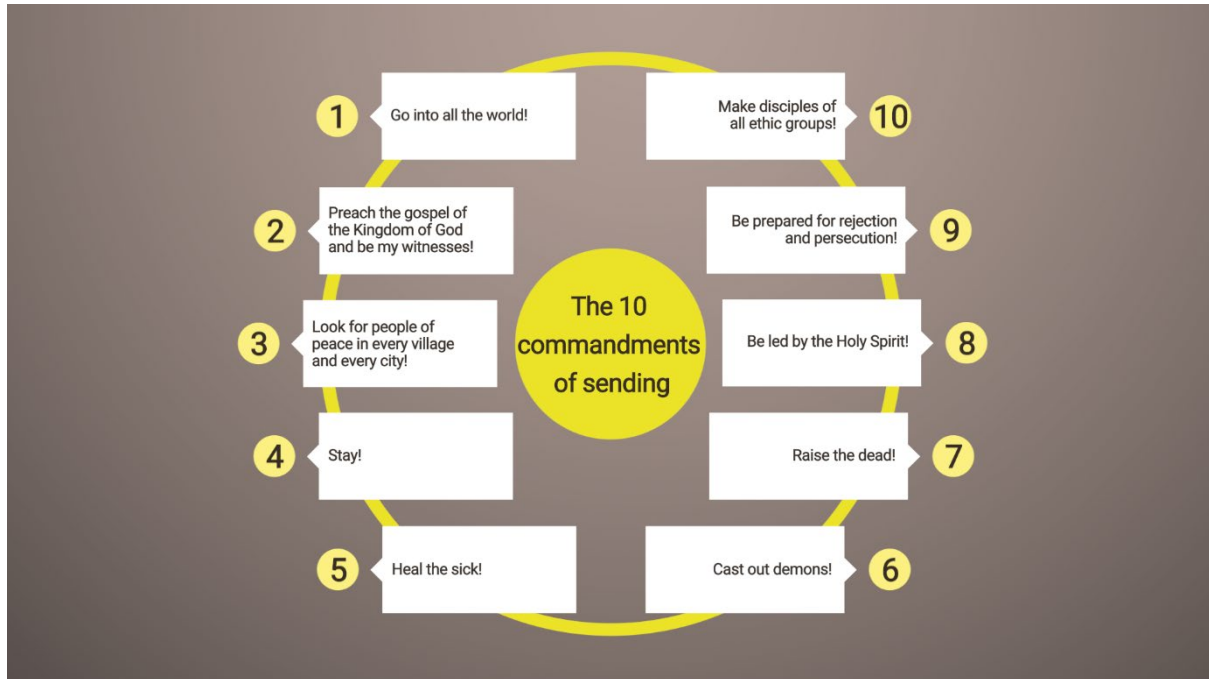
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 23

Make disciples IV:

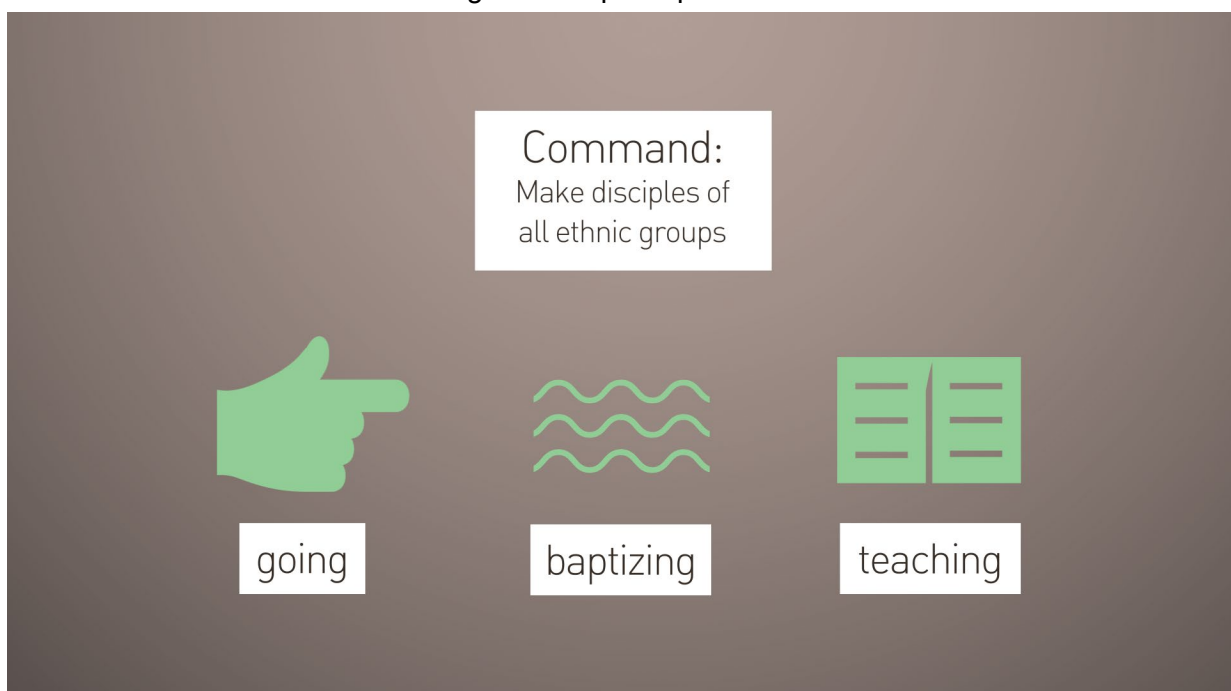
Disciplemaking movements



Matthew 28:18-20

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

- The Great Commission is a great discipleship commandment.



Discipleship is a big trend in the Kingdom of God. The Holy Spirit has been putting a strong emphasis on it and wants to return it to us. We have defined discipleship as the Lord himself defined it in the command to make disciples:

- Discipleship means **doing everything** He commanded.

Matthew 28:20

...and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you.

Today we often have a way of dealing with the word of God that does not emphasize doing but only knowledge.

Example: The story of the lost sheep

A Christian couple and their son Nathanael. The parents familiarized their son with the Word of God. At bedtime, they tell their son the story of the lost sheep. Later, Nathanael goes to Sunday school and hears the same story again. This time they also make a craft and Nathanael proudly presents his sheep craft to his parents, who then hang it on a wall. After some years, Nathanael joins the kid's group. This time, they act the story out by wearing a white towel and running around. As a teenager, Nathanael enacts the story again, this time with more action out in a forest. Nathanael hears the story again as a young adult but this time at a conference. By the time he is an adult he will have heard the story 10 to 15 times and the story will be preached many more times at church.

- **However, no one would have thought to actually DO what Jesus meant with this story.**

→ ... because so often it is only about knowing the story and not about putting it into practice.

Luke 15:3-4

Then Jesus told them this parable: "Suppose one of you has a hundred sheep and loses one of them. Doesn't he leave the ninety-nine in the open country and go after the lost sheep until he finds it?"

- Knowing the word of God **yet not doing** or practicing it in one's life is something that Jesus condemns very strongly.
- There are hardly any **sharper words of the Lord** than his words to people who know the word but do not do it.

Matthew 7:21-29

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only the one who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name and in your name drive out demons and in your name perform many miracles?' Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evil-doers!' "Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash." When Jesus had finished saying these things, the crowds were amazed at his teaching, because he taught as one who had authority, and not as their teachers of the law.

Romans 2:12-13

All who sin apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who sin under the law will be judged by the law. For it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God's sight, but it is those who obey the law who will be declared righteous.

James 1:17 and 22-25

Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows. Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says. Anyone who listens to the word but does not do what it says is like someone who looks at his face in a mirror and, after looking at himself, goes away and immediately forgets what he looks like. But whoever looks intently into the perfect law that gives freedom, and continues in it—not forgetting what they have heard, but doing it—they will be blessed in what they do.

These are all **judging words** about people who know the word of God and do NOT do it!

Matthew 25:45-46

“He will reply, ‘Truly I tell you, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these, you did not do for me. “Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.”

Matthew 23:3 and 13-14

So you must be careful to do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach. Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the door of the kingdom of heaven in people's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to.

Revelations 3:1-2

“To the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead. Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have found your deeds unfinished in the sight of my God.

Romans 2:24

As it is written: “God's name is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you.”

John 4:34

“My food,” said Jesus, “is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work.

Matthew 6:10

Your kingdom come, your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven.

- Discipleship clearly means to hear the commandments of Jesus and to **do** them!
- That is why the focus of discipleship lies on demonstrating, showing, training, practicing, repeating!

Question: Should one begin discipleship with one's own family, children, brothers and sisters?

- Yes, absolutely.
- **The fathers** are responsible.

Ephesians 6:4

Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord.

- Family is a community in which discipleship happens.
- One can well start to disciple children when they are 3 or 4 years old because if they have given their lives to Jesus then they have the full Holy Spirit– and not a “light version” of him.
- When one starts to disciple his own children early on then they are fully disciplined when they are 13 (at the onset of the teenage phase) and can start to disciple others themselves (see also how the Jews do it).
- During the unprecedented spiritual breakthroughs in China and India most of the members of the evangelism and revival teams were teenagers.

Question: How long does it take for a born-again Christian to become a mature disciple?

- In the natural life, young adults come of age with **18 years** in many countries.
- When Jesus called and trained his disciples he spent **three years** with them until he sent them out.
- Also the Apostle Paul needed **three years** to train the leaders in Ephesus.

Acts 20:31

So be on your guard! Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you night and day with tears.

- There is a tendency today to **shorten this time a lot**, justified by the argument that the disciples of Jesus had not received the Holy Spirit.
- Some only disciple new believers for **1 year**, others for only **9 months** and some only for **3 months**.
- Thus there are **very different definitions of spiritual maturity** expected from mature disciples.
- Aiming for a **very thorough and deep discipleship does not mean** that new believers could not start making disciples themselves from the beginning on.
- On the contrary! They can pass on to others **what they received from the first day on**:
 - Whoever has heard the gospel and grasped it in faith, can now pass on the gospel to others...
 - Whoever is baptized can baptize others...
 - Whoever has received the gift of the Holy Spirit, can lead others into community with the Holy Spirit too...

In this way, more **lines of discipleships** are created while we discipline people.

Paul practiced this openly:

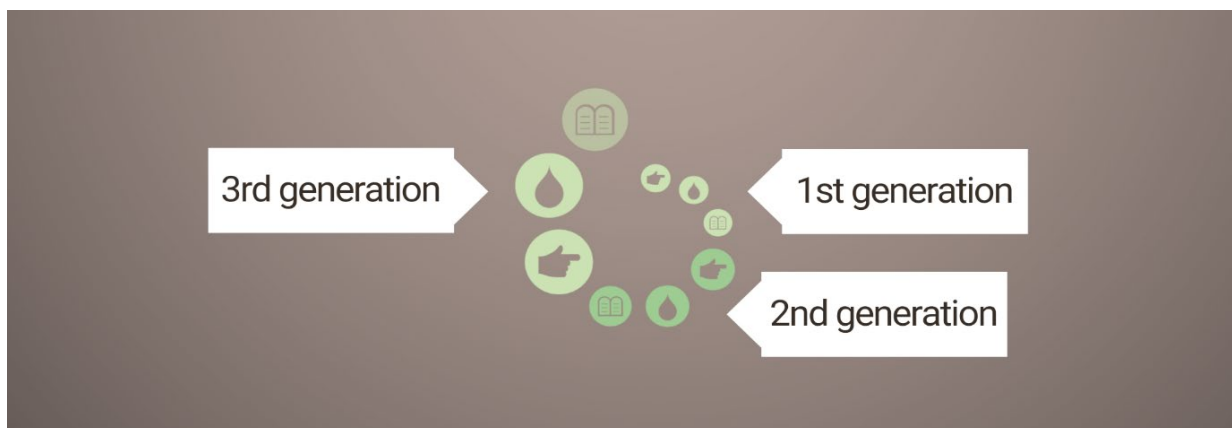
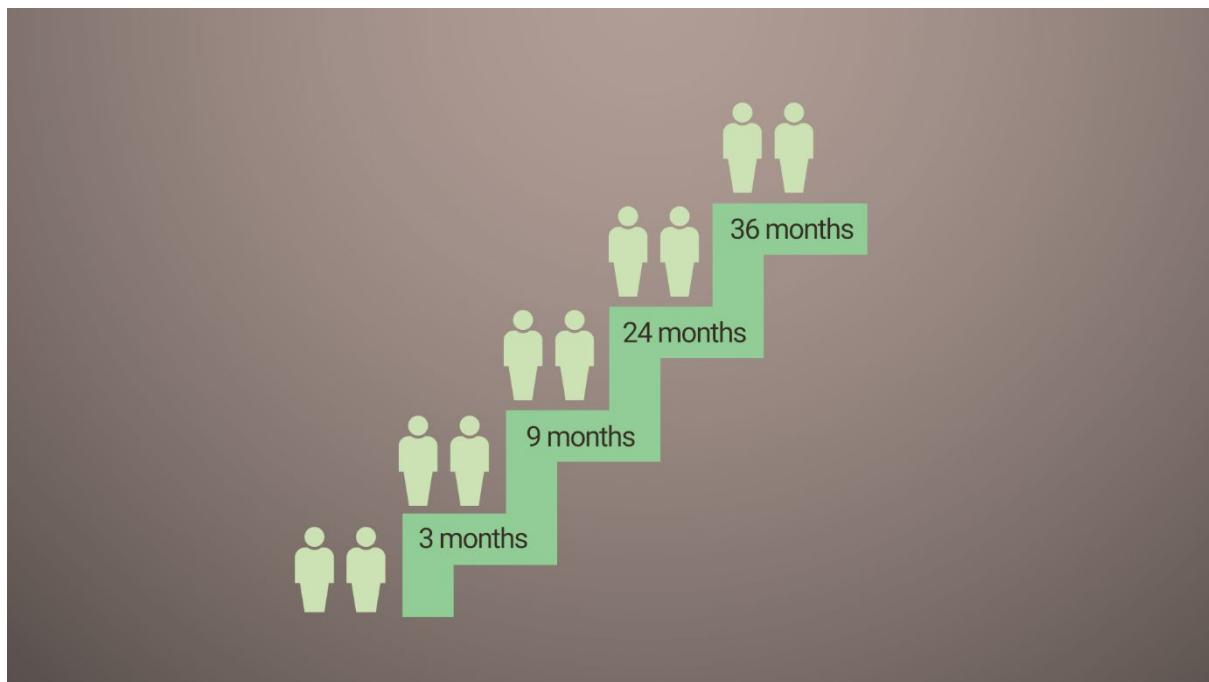
2 Timothy 2:2

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

- The secret: The things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses is **NOW** entrusted to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

Not only Paul showed this principle of the Kingdom of God (the **discipleship lines**), **we can also find it with Jesus**.

- For the commandment to make disciples actually is a discipleship multiplication commandment.
- The commandment to make disciples contains the instruction to start a **discipleship movement**.



Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Consider and discuss who you could disciple in your family.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application (outreach).

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week) and going and preaching (6 to 9 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with the team and a partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
 - Go on 1 to 2 treasure hunts ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Pray intensely that the Lord would show you which persons you can call into discipleship. Naturally, it is best when you can disciple the same person of peace you found and baptized (in water and in the Spirit). ☐
15. Call this person into discipleship NOW. ☐
16. If possible, call someone from your family (husband, wife, child) into discipleship. ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 24

1. Discipleship training lesson:

Inner discipleship

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of the Father and the fellowship with the Holy Spirit

Summary of the main points about discipleship

After his death and resurrection, Jesus passed on his last will, his legacy, to his disciples.

Discipleship commandment:

Matthew 28:18-20:

Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

The most important commandment in the Old Testament is the double commandment to love.

And you shall love the LORD, your God, with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your strength (Deuteronomy 6:5). This is the highest and first commandment. The other is equal to it: You shall love your neighbour as yourself (Leviticus 19:18).

The greatest New Testament commandment is the discipleship commandment. With discipleship it is the same as with all other commandments of sending. **Jesus is the example.** We follow the discipleship model of Jesus.

The model of Jesus, how he trained disciples

1. Principle: The disciples of Jesus were an answer to prayer: He prayed intensely for a whole night before he began calling the 12 men into discipleship.
2. Principle: Jesus called the 12 disciples, formed a community with them and shared his life with them: Life in community was the natural setting for discipleship. Community and discipleship meant the same thing for Jesus. Jesus did not differentiate between discipleship and sharing lives / living in community.
3. Principle: Jesus called the 12 disciples and released them for the sake of discipleship. Jesus called them to himself so that they could really focus on becoming disciples after his heart.
4. Principle: The training community with the disciples was his spiritual family, his spiritual home, his "faith community", his church.
5. Principle: Jesus only had three years. He needed these three years to properly disciple 12 men. However, after about one year he SENT them out alone so that they could gain sending experience of their own. Jesus needed three years to thoroughly disciple the 12.
6. Principle: He trained three to 12 people and thereby started a movement. He trained a few (12 men) so as to reach many (all peoples). Jesus started a movement through the 12 disciples.
7. Principle: Jesus gave commandments. The discipleship of Jesus is an obedience-orientated discipleship.

8. Principle: Discipleship pattern: Jesus trained in theory (teaching) AND practice (field training).
 Jesus teaches.
 Jesus demonstrates, models and his disciples watch him.
 The disciples imitate it and Jesus watches/coaches.
 Jesus sends the disciples out to do the same thing with others.
 Jesus trained in theory (teachings) and practice (demonstrating)
9. Principle: Train in a group (12 people) and one-on-one – both at home and outside.
 Jesus trained his disciples both one-on-one and in the group.
10. Principle: At the end of the discipleship training Jesus sent them out to do the same: after the coming of the Holy Spirit on Pentecost, the disciples established communities of disciples (churches). After 3 years Jesus sent out his disciples to do the same.

What is discipleship?

Definition: Teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you.

Every baptized follower of Jesus should live discipleship and make disciples of others. Besides the double commandment to love, this is the most important commandment in the New Testament.

There are **684** commandments in the New Testament, **382** commandments of Jesus, **50** key commandments and **6 to 8** key commandments for discipleship. These 6 to 8 are a form of short discipleship that are internationally known.

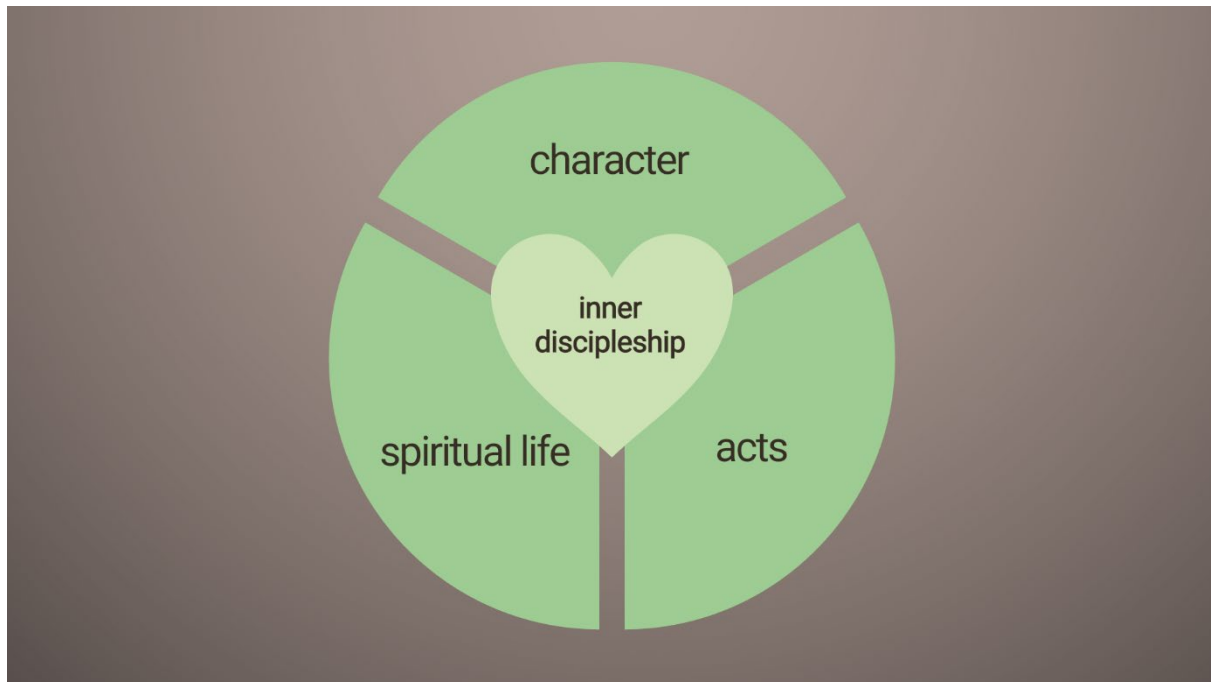
1. **Repent and believe!**
2. Be **baptized!**
3. Receive the **Holy Spirit!**
4. **Love** God, your neighbour and your enemies!
5. **The Lord's Supper**
6. **Prayer and the word of God**
7. As a steward give your time, treasures, talents, etc. generously
8. Go in teams of two and **make disciples** by giving your testimony, teaching God's word, discipling new believers and training leaders.

However, discipleship means more. It means to keep all commandments.

We in our ministry of sending are striving for a deep and solid discipleship that covers four areas in the life of a disciple.

The four discipleship areas of the BESENT training

Inner discipleship



In a first step we want to start with inner discipleship with new followers of Jesus. The issues of inner discipleship are the same as the areas that Paul mentions in 2 Corinthians 13,14:

2 Corinthians 13:14

May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

- 1.1. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ
- 1.2. The love of the Father
- 1.3. The fellowship of the Holy Spirit

The first discipleship training lesson is special. It covers inner discipleship and the three topics, the grace of Jesus Christ, the love of the Father and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit. All three areas are central for a healthy, Biblical experience of God or relationship with God. These three topics are taught in the first discipleship training lesson. Thus there is 1 training lesson on inner discipleship and 3x5 topics on outer discipleship in the BEsent training, which makes a total of 16 discipleship training lessons.

The outer discipleship covers three main discipleship areas:

2. The spiritual life of a disciple
3. The deeds of a disciple
4. The character of a disciple

During the first 6 to 12 months of discipleship we cover three times five topics of the whole discipleship.

The 16 discipleship training lessons

A. Inner discipleship

- 1.1 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ
- 1.2 The love of the Father
- 1.3 The fellowship of the Holy Spirit

B. Spiritual life of a disciple

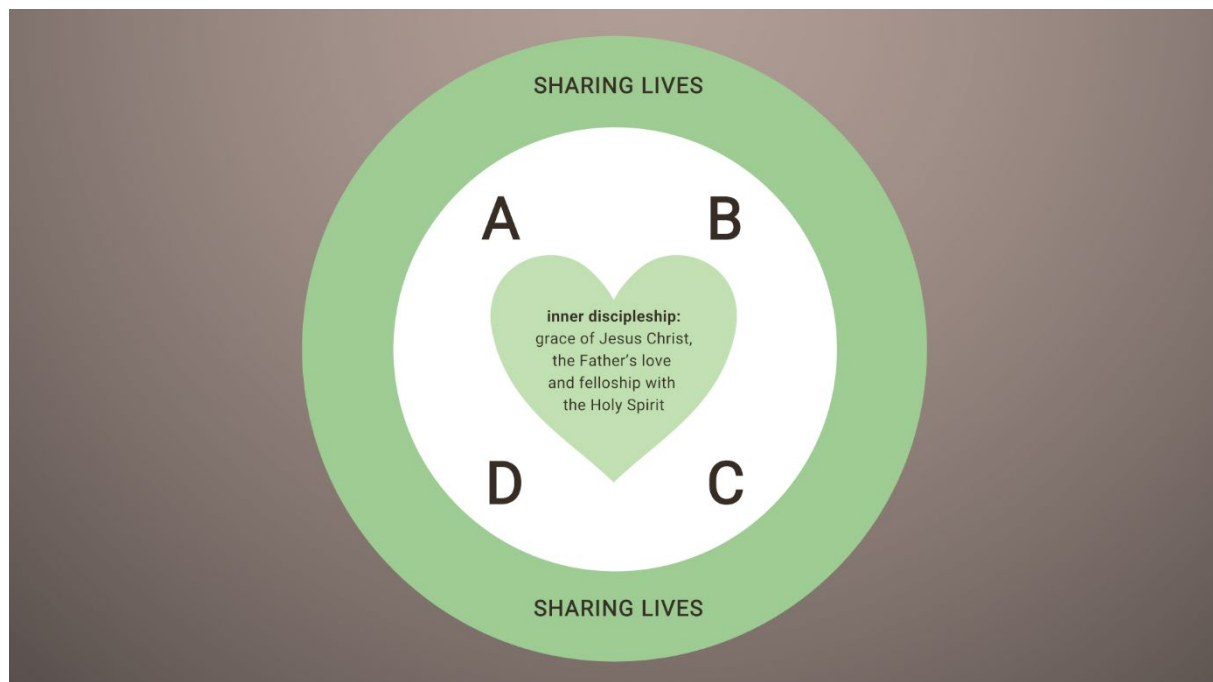
2. Discovery Bible Study
3. Personal prayers
4. Assurance of salvation
5. Being filled with the Holy Spirit
6. Church – community

C. Character of a disciple

9. Loving God and neighbours
10. Transformational ministry: get rid of – put on
11. Forgiveness
12. Serving – a serving heart
13. Living by faith

D) Deeds of a disciple

12. Giving testimony
13. Going and preaching
14. Ministry of the Holy Spirit
15. Giving and sharing
16. Making disciples



1. Area: discipleship happens in **one-on-one** times, in conversations and in prayer
2. Area: discipleship happens in community (koinonia), in a **group**
3. Area: discipleship happens **in the field** through demonstration and doing together
4. Area: discipleship happens in **everyday life**

How does a discipleship training meeting look like practically?

The discipleship scorecard

A) Personal care

Personal condition

- How are you?
- What did you learn from God this week?
- How is your relationship with God?
- What does your prayer life look like?
- What are your needs?

Prayer

Giving an account of following Jesus and the fishing of men

- How are you obeying the word of God?
- How did you put the last training unit into practice?
- What is God doing in your life?
- Have you been a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Do they believe? Do they train others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the story of the last unit.

B) Teaching from the open Bible

- Topic
- Reading core texts twice
- Summarizing core texts with your own words
- Finding the key elements & learning points in the texts
- Learning the memory verse by heart

C) Implementation in the training room

- As disciple makers we tell of our own experiences
- As disciple makers we demonstrate things in role-play
- Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 or 3 persons and do role-play again
- Retelling the training/teaching
- Goal Setting: what they want to share with someone in the course of the next week...
- Encouraging to share the unit with their own spiritual family

Prayer

- For the needs of the people you want to share your testimony with or with whom you want to share the training unit
- Listening in prayer which goals to aim for until the next meeting
- Prayer for every trainee and commission

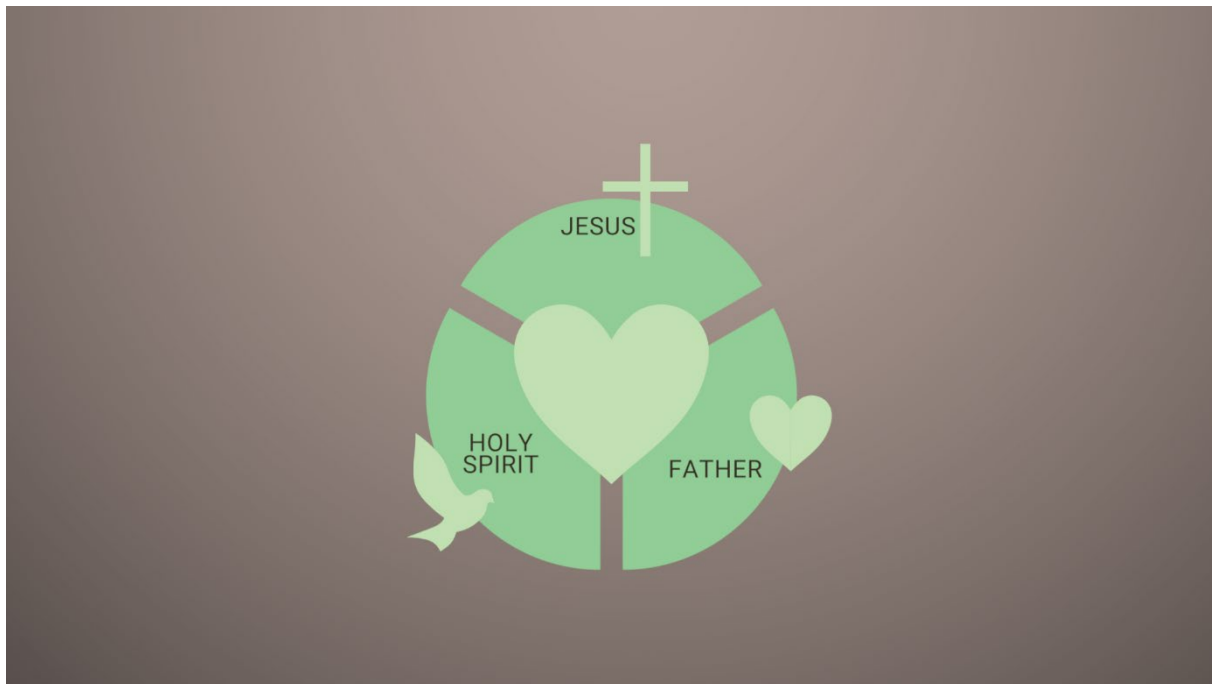
D) Implementation In the field

- We go and demonstrate – the disciple comes along, watches and learns
- The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
- The disciples demonstrate and their disciples watch...
- It may be that we need to demonstrate some things often (10, 20, 50 times).

How are new believers disciplined?

Inner discipleship is the most fundamental part of discipleship. Inner discipleship means that the disciple establishes a living relationship with the triune God. This includes knowing and experiencing the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ**, the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit** daily. It is not about head knowledge or the trinity doctrine. It is about the living out this relationship.

- If this foundation does not exist, all discipleship attempts will be fruitless.
- When we start to disciple a person, it is crucial to check whether the spiritual foundation is right.
- This means that we check whether a true conversion/rebirth has taken place.
- For this we use a triple check:



Does the person really personally:

- The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ?
- The love of God the Father?
- The fellowship of the Holy Spirit?

This foundation is the central requirement for really discipling a person. If this relational life exists minimally or not at all, then this person is spiritually sick or even dead. This daily, personal and living relationship, this inner knowing of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit, is the true spiritual and eternal life.

John 17:3

Now this is eternal life: that they know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.

Grasping and experiencing the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of the Father and the living fellowship of the Holy Spirit are absolutely central. Without these heart values discipleship turns into mere demanding and dead legal works.

Hebrews 9:14

How much more, then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself unblemished to God, cleanse our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God!

However, if a disciple really is connected with the Lord Jesus, the Heavenly Father and the Holy Spirit in a living relationship, then the important discipleship steps happen directly through the Holy Spirit.

1 John 2:27

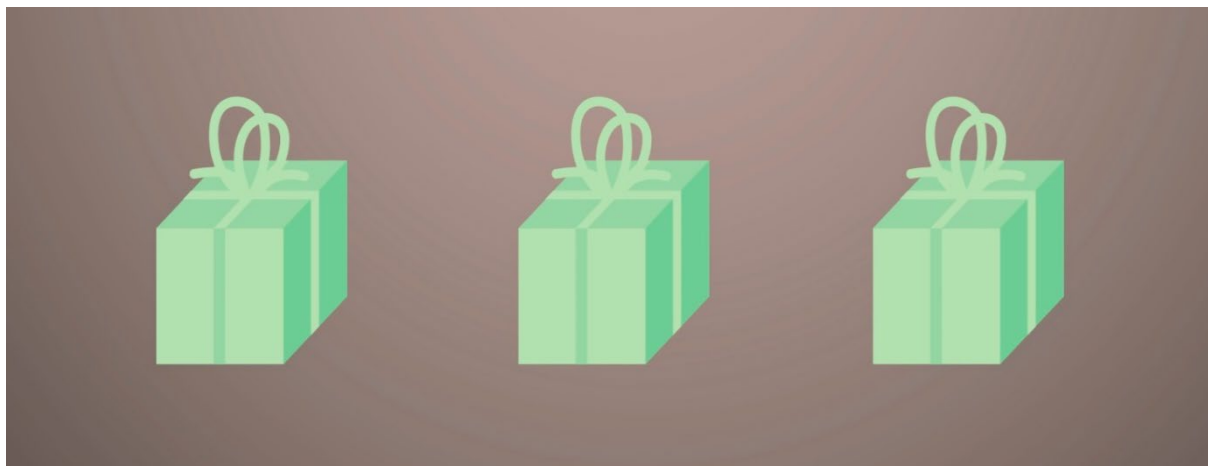
As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit—just as it has taught you, remain in him.

When a disciple is in the presence of the Lord and contemplates the nature, character and heart of God as revealed in the word of God, then something significant happens in his heart.

1 John 3:2

Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when Christ appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

Our disciples and us experience a transformation through the living activity of the Holy Spirit when we “look” at the gift of grace that Jesus is for us as we experience the love of the Father. Our hearts are captured by this gift and we can accept it.

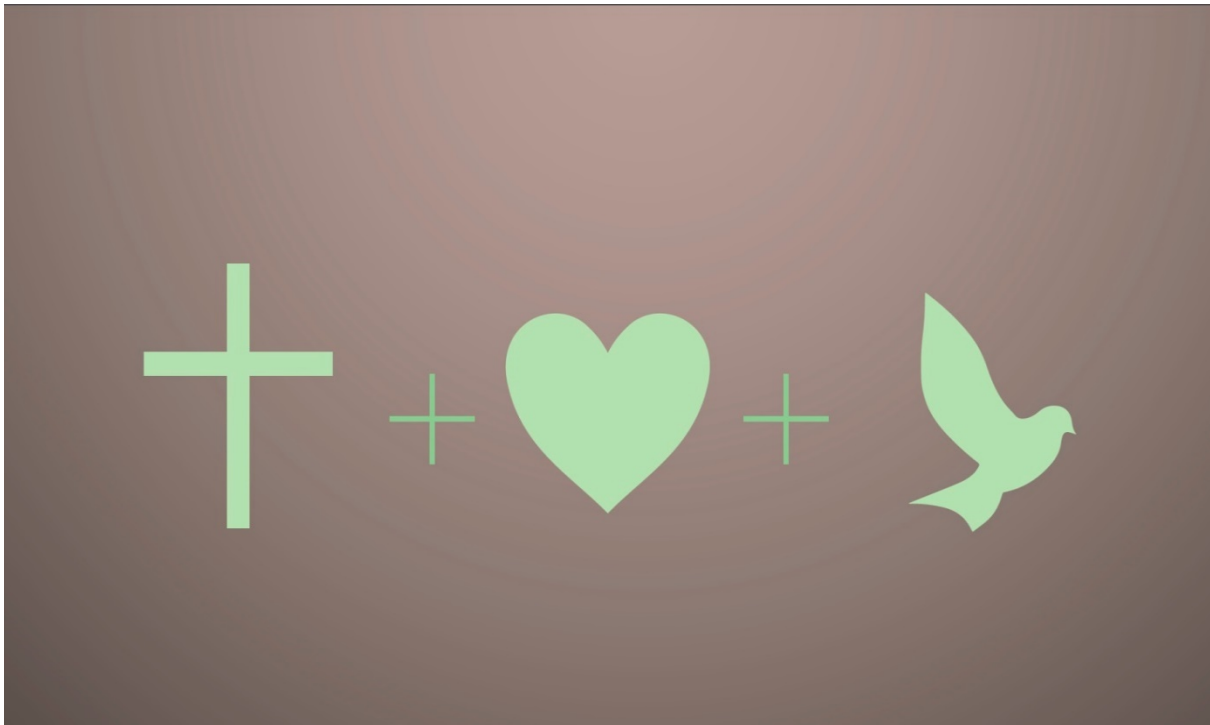


It is like unpacking three big gifts that we take and keep for ourselves. If the disciple lives in a living relationship with the Holy Spirit, then the Holy Spirit works strongly in his heart:

1 John 2:27

As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit—just as it has taught you, remain in him.

Paul has the same wish for his “most difficult church” and it is God’s desire for every disciple of Jesus.



The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God, the Father, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit

1. Discipleship training lesson

For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together? Jesus disciplined twelve. We can disciple groups of three, five or seven people.

Answer: The first discipleship training lesson can be taught in a group!

This first discipleship part is about testing whether our disciples know, experience and live in the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of the Father and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit.

We want to find out, whether our disciples really have a real, living relationship with Jesus, our Saviour and Lord.

- and with the Heavenly Father, who has poured out God's love into our hearts (Romans 5:5) and continues to pour it out.
- and with the Holy Spirit, which whom we have been sealed and who is our spiritual life companion leading us into all truth.

How can we find this out? We do it like the Apostle Paul in Acts 19:1-7, when he met some disciples. **He asked them!**

Acts 19:1-7

While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul took the road through the interior and arrived at Ephesus. There he found some disciples and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?" They answered, "No, we have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." So Paul asked, "Then what baptism did you receive?" "John's baptism," they replied. Paul said, "John's baptism was a baptism of repentance. He told the people to believe in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus." On hearing this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied. There were about twelve men in all.

Paul had to examine the foundation first when he met these men. They did believe in Jesus and as disciples of John, they certainly repented a lot already. However, they had not been baptized in the name of JESUS and did not know the fellowship of the Holy Spirit. Paul completed the conversions and led the twelve men into a real relationship with Jesus and his grace and also into the fellowship of the Holy Spirit.

Illustration 1:

First of all, no matter where in the world, we check-up with the trainees. We determine if their conversion was complete and if not, then complete what is necessary.

Illustration 2:

I once asked a woman during such a check-up how her relationship to Jesus was. Through her answer I realized that she did not know the grace of Jesus and I explained it to her. She then realized that she was not yet in a relationship with him and was able to experience it when we prayed for her.

Illustration 3:

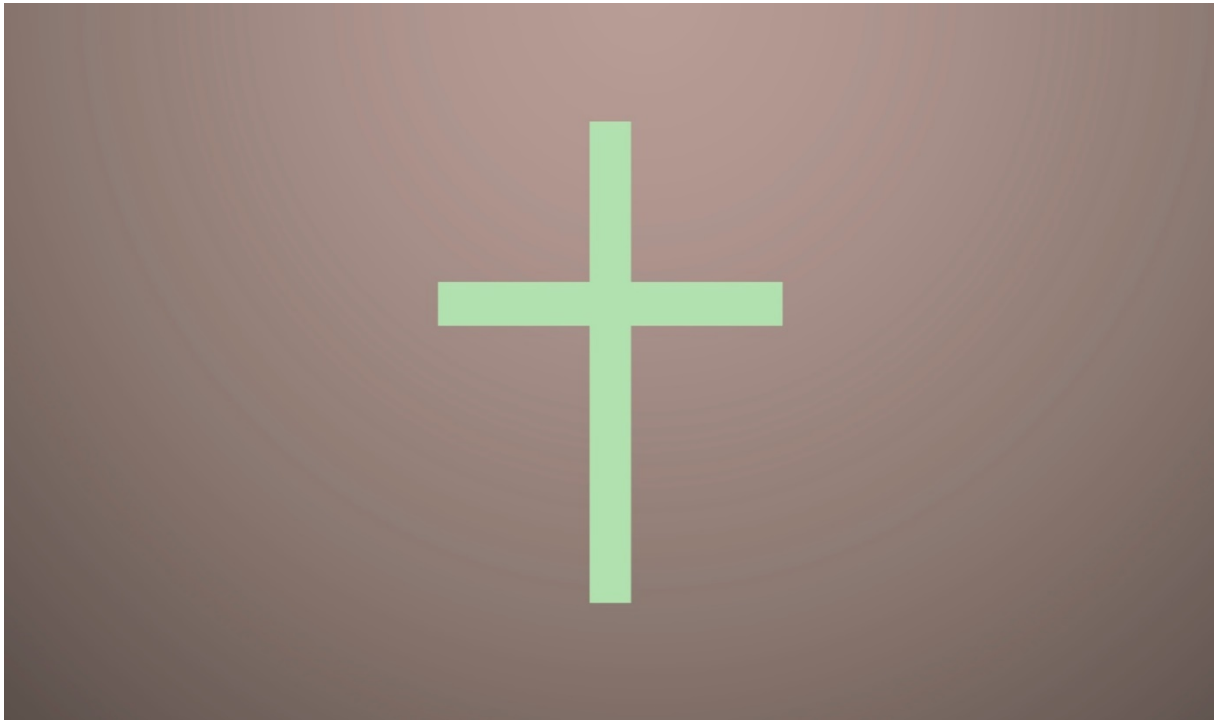
It took 19 years in my life until I came into all three areas (grace of Jesus Christ, love of the Father, fellowship of the Holy Spirit). I did not have anyone who led me deeper into it.

1. Forgiveness of sins through Jesus
2. Then 8 years later a deep revelation and experience of the grace of Jesus Christ
3. Again 7 years later an absolute central experience of the love of the Father
4. And another 4 years later a real breakthrough towards experiencing the Holy Spirit

If your disciple has a deficit in these basic experiences, then you need to go through the Word and show:

- who Jesus is and what his grace means
- who God the Father is and what it means that his love is being poured out into our hearts
- who the Holy Spirit is and how to live in fellowship with the Holy Spirit.

1) Lack of basic experience about who Jesus is and what his grace means



If your disciple has not experienced Jesus and his grace, then you need to teach him once more the gospel of the Kingdom of God, like we learned in the training units preach 8 to 11 and 13 (by grace through faith).

Training unit 8: the gospel of the Kingdom of God

Training unit 9: the way of salvation «from creation to salvation»

Training unit 10: Repentance, Baptism in water and Holy Spirit

Training unit 11: the call to repentance and into discipleship

Training unit 13: you will be my witnesses

Ephesians 2:8-9

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast.

2) Lack of basic experience about who God the Father is



If your disciple has not experienced the Father and his love, then you need to “show him the Father” in the Scripture.

1 John 4:8

Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love.

Illustration Anwar:

A young Muslim man came to me and told me he wanted to grow spiritually. I began reading the Quran and then the New Testament with him. I noticed that he did not understand God as Father. Then I looked at Luke 15 with him, at how the Father deals with the two lost sons. Then we read Ezekiel 16, where God took in a lost girl and makes her a queen. After he saw these verses, he began to cry and was able to receive the love of the Father.

This is the difference between the true God, the Heavenly Father, and all other idols, the so-called gods, the nothings. Our Heavenly Father is love, **he does not only have love but he is love**. In all he does there is love.

- Out of love God gave us life
- Out of love God created the world and gave it to us
- Out of love our Heavenly Father created a plan for our salvation
- Out of love our Heavenly Father gave his Son to pay for our sins on the cross
- Out of love our Heavenly Father gave us forgiveness of sins and eternal life
- Out of love our Heavenly Father gave us his Holy Spirit
- Out of love our Heavenly Father gave us everything as an inheritance
- Out of love our Heavenly Father will give us Jesus as bridegroom
- Out of love our Heavenly Father will give us a new earth
- Out of love our Heavenly Father will live with us and we will rule with him and serve him for all eternity

Faith rises in our hearts through the proclamation of what the Heavenly Father did for us. The Holy Spirit fills the words of proclamation with his life and power. Words are only shells, but they are filled with Spirit and life. This living faith, this trusting in the loving and merciful promises of God, **grasps the great gift** of the love of the Heavenly Father and absorbs it into the heart and life.

Ephesians 3:17

so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith. And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love...

Further suitable texts for getting to know God as loving Father:

- Luke 15:11-32 The Father's heart and the two lost sons
- Ezekiel 16:1-18 The Father's heart and the lost daughter
- Psalm 103:1-22 The ultimate song about the mercies of God
- 2 Chronicles 33:1-16 Unlimited love and forgiveness for Manasseh

John 14:23

Jesus replied, "Anyone who loves me will obey my teaching. My Father will love them, and we will come to them and make our home with them."

We receive the Father with Jesus and the Holy Spirit into our hearts. They then live there.

God's grace and love are not only a gift. They become a joy, strength and an inner motor that move us to follow Jesus. Grace and love are active.

Titus 2:11-12

For the grace of God has appeared that offers salvation to all people. It teaches us to say "No" to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age.

1 Corinthians 15:10

But by the grace of God I am what I am, and his grace to me was not without effect. No, I worked harder than all of them—yet not I, but the grace of God that was with me.

2 Corinthians 5:14-15

For Christ's love compels us, because we are convinced that one died for all, and therefore all died. And he died for all, that those who live should no longer live for themselves but for him who died for them and was raised again.

1 John 2:27

As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit—just as it has taught you, remain in him.

3) Lack of basic experience, who the Holy Spirit is what his fellowship is

If a disciple is not familiar with the living fellowship with the Holy Spirit, then this needs to be made up for. (See training units 3 and 4 about the power of the Holy Spirit Part I and II). We can do this using Scripture:

Romans 8:11

And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies because of his Spirit who lives in you.

Out of love and grace, the Father, Christ and the Holy Spirit live in our hearts. The Holy Spirit in us is very alive. He refreshes and forms our whole spiritual life. What exactly does he do?

1. He pours the love of God into our hearts whereby we understand and experience God as loving Father.
2. He brings us the life of Jesus.
3. He brings us the power of Jesus.
4. He is our spiritual life companion and leads us on our spiritual and natural way.
5. He shows us and explains us things about God.
6. He works in us and through us in his power.
7. He is the crucial person and helps us in all areas of evangelism.

1 John 2:27

As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit—just as it has taught you, remain in him.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ and the love of God and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with US all! This experience is the fundamental requirement for all discipleship. We can't end this training unit until every disciple has experienced God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit. After that, we can start with outer discipleship.

Application

a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.

b) Group discussion – examine yourselves and ask each other if you

1) have experienced and are experiencing the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ

2) have experienced and are experiencing the love of the Father

3) regularly experience the fellowship of the Holy Spirit.

If there are deficits in the threefold experience of God then help each other to complete them as Paul did with the disciples of John in Ephesus.

c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

d) Tell the group who you have called into discipleship and who you want to train.

e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application (out-reach).

Outreach

Regular prayer walks (4 to 6 hours/week), going, preaching (6 to 9 hours/week) and discipleship (3 to 4 hours/week). Practicing...

1. PRAYER: prayer walks with the team and a partner ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the Gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested persons ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit
→ Go on 1 to 2 treasure hunts ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Pray intensely that the Lord would show you which persons you can call into discipleship. Naturally, it is best when you can disciple the same person of peace you found and baptized (in water and in the Spirit). ☐
15. Call this person into discipleship NOW. ☐
16. Start working very practically on the inner discipleship with your disciples. ☐

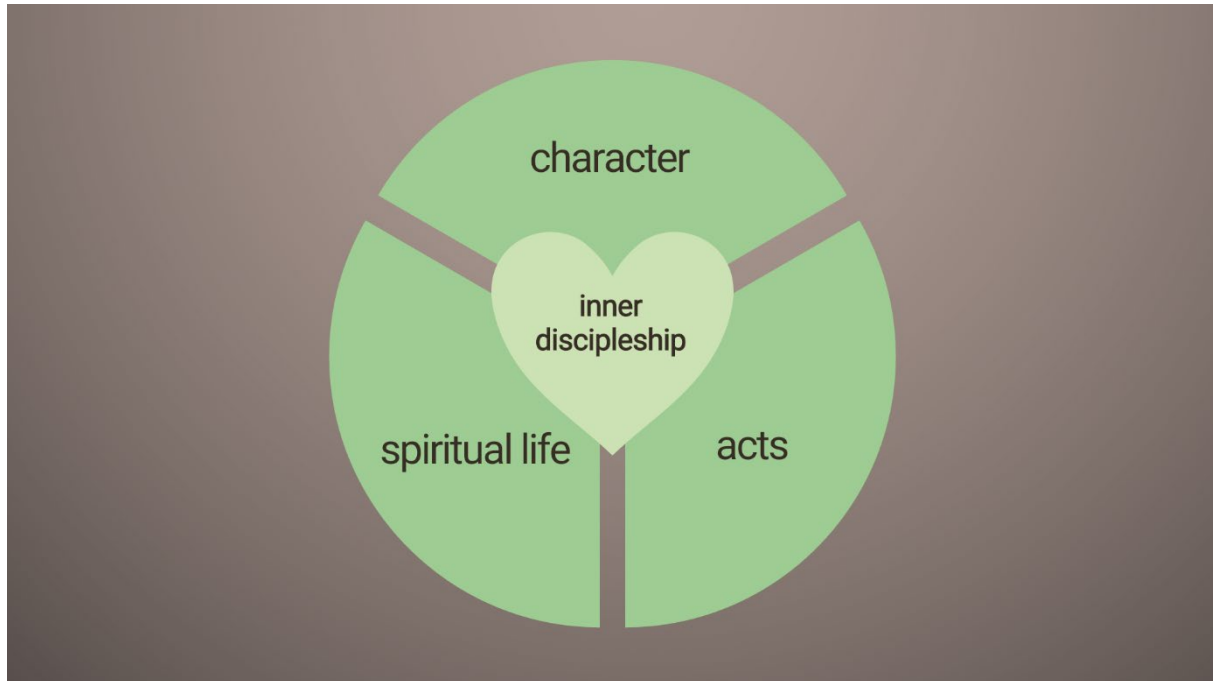
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 25



2. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life

A) Bible reading: DBS – Discovery Bible Study



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This second discipleship lesson can be taught in a group according to the following pattern:

The discipleship scorecard to memorize

A) Personal care

Personal condition

- How are you?
- What did you learn from God this week?
- How is your relationship with God?
- What does your prayer life look like?
- What are your needs?

Prayer

Giving an account of following Jesus and the fishing of men

- How are you obeying the word of God?
- How did you put the last training unit into practice?
- What is God doing in your life?
- Have you been a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Do they believe? Do they train others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the story of the last unit.

B) Teaching from the open Bible

- Topic
- Reading core texts twice
- Summarizing core texts with your own words
- Finding the key elements & learning points in the texts
- Learning the memory verse by heart

C) Implementation in the training room

- As disciple makers we tell of our own experiences
- As disciple makers we demonstrate things in role-play
- Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 or 3 persons and do role-play again
- Retelling the training/teaching
- Goal Setting: what they want to share with someone in the course of the next week...
- Encouraging to share the unit with their own spiritual family

Prayer

- For the needs of the people you want to share your testimony with or with whom you want to share the training unit
- Listening in prayer which goals to aim for until the next meeting
- Prayer for every trainee and commission

D) Implementation In the field

- We go and demonstrate – the disciple comes along, watches and learns
- The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
- The disciples demonstrate and their disciples watch...
- It may be that we need to demonstrate some things often (10, 20, 50 times).

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

Personal care

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. **Reading core texts twice**
2. **Summarizing core text(s) with your own words**
3. **Finding the key elements in the texts**
4. **Learning memory verse(s) by heart**

We follow this pattern for the second step. Since we want to introduce the so-called Discovery Bible Study method here, we are going to teach it to our disciples.



We introduced DBS in detail in the **12th unit**. Now you can teach the DBS method to your disciples just as you learned it.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 persons. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: what they want to share with someone in the coming week.
5. Encouragement, to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Praying together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Praying that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Praying together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: which goals they want to reach until the next meeting.
10. Praying together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending
 - During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to tell of our own practice, how we practice DBS and what we experience thereby.
 - Then we do a DBS on Luke 15,11-24 for demonstration.
 - Afterwards, our disciples should do a DBS themselves on Luke 15,25-32.
 - In doing so we follow the pattern we learned.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

The demonstrating, modelling, training, practicing and repeating does not happen outside in the streets and places in this situation, but at the disciple's home or at the discipleship-meeting place. It is important to practice DBS as often until the disciple can practice it on his own and is able to teach others to DO it.

After we went through the discipleship lessons in theory and practice with our disciples, our disciple should advance further and deeper into the treasures of the word of God himself. Of course, he should also practice what he learned.

Matthew 13:52

He said to them, "Therefore every teacher of the law who has become a disciple in the kingdom of heaven is like the owner of a house who brings out of his storeroom new treasures as well as old."

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

From here on we need to divide our time in a new way: prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐

B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐

2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐

3. Look for persons of peace ☐

4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐

5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐

6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐

7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐

8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐

9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐

10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐

11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐

12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit

→ Go on 1 to 2 treasure hunts ☐

13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐

14. Continue to teach this second lesson to the discipleship group ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Examples of suitable texts for a Discovery Bible Study for disciples

Commandments of Christ

Matthew 3:9 | Matthew 4:7 | Matthew 4:10 | Matthew 4:17 | Matthew 4:19 | Matthew 5:12 | Matthew 5:16 | Matthew 5:23-4 | Matthew 5:25 | Matthew 5:27-28 | Matthew 5:29-30 | Matthew 5:31 | Matthew 5:32 | Matthew 5:33 | Matthew 5:34-37 | Matthew 5:38-41 | Matthew 5:4 | Matthew 5:44 | Matthew 5:45 | Matthew 5:48 | Matthew 6:1 | Matthew 6:2 | Matthew 6:3 | Matthew 6:4 | Matthew 6:5 | Matthew 6:6 | Matthew 6:7 | Matthew 6:8 | Matthew 6:9 | Matthew 6:10 | Matthew 6:11 | Matthew 6:12 | Matthew 6:13 | Matthew 6:16 | Matthew 6:17 | Matthew 6:18 | Matthew 6:19 | Matthew 6:20 | Matthew 6:24 | Matthew 6:25 | Matthew 6:26 | Matthew 6:31 | Matthew 6:34 | Matthew 7:1 | Matthew 7:3 | Matthew 7:4 | Matthew 7:5 | Matthew 7:6 | Matthew 7:7 | Matthew 7:12 | Matthew 7:13 | Matthew 7:15 | Matthew 9:37 | Matthew 9:38 | Matthew 10:7 | Matthew 10:8 | Matthew 10:9 | Matthew 10:10 | Matthew 10:11 | Matthew 10:12 | Matthew 10:14 | Matthew 10:16 | Matthew 10:17 | Matthew 10:19 | Matthew 10:23 | Matthew 10:26 | Matthew 10:27 | Matthew 10:28 | Matthew 10:29 | Matthew 10:30 | Matthew 10:31 | Matthew 11:15 | Matthew 11:28 | Matthew 11:29 | Matthew 13:9 | Matthew 13:43 | Matthew 16:6 | Matthew 16:24 | Matthew 18:8 | Matthew 18:9 | Matthew 18:10 | Matthew 18:15 | Matthew 18:16 | Matthew 18:17 | Matthew 18:21 | Matthew 18:22 | Matthew 19:4 | Matthew 19:5 | Matthew 19:6 | Matthew 19:14 | Matthew 19:17 | Matthew 19:19 | Matthew 19:21 | Matthew 20:25 | Matthew 20:26 | Matthew 20:27 | Matthew 22:9 | Matthew 22:20 | Matthew 22:21 | Matthew 22:37 | Matthew 22:38 | Matthew 22:39 | Matthew 23:8 | Matthew 23:9 | Matthew 23:10 | Matthew 23:11 | Matthew 23:23 | Matthew 23:26 | Matthew 24:4 | Matthew 24:15 | Matthew 24:16 | Matthew 24:17 | Matthew 24:18 | Matthew 24:20 | Matthew 24:23 | Matthew 24:26 | Matthew 24:32 | Matthew 24:33 | Matthew 24:42 | Matthew 24:43 | Matthew 24:44 | Matthew 25:13 | Matthew 26:26 | Matthew 26:27 | Matthew 26:41 | Matthew 28:19 | Matthew 28:20 | Mark 1:3 | Mark 1:15 | Mark 4:9 | Mark 4:23 | Mark 4:24 | Mark 6:8 | Mark 6:9 | Mark 6:10 | Mark 6:11 | Mark 8:15 | Mark 8:34 | Mark 9:7 | Mark 9:35 | Mark 9:38 | Mark 9:39 | Mark 9:40 | Mark 9:43 | Mark 9:45 | Mark 9:47 | Mark 9:50 | Mark 10:6 | Mark 10:7 | Mark 10:8 | Mark 10:9 | Mark 10:14 | Mark 10:21 | Mark 10:42 | Mark 10:43 | Mark 10:44 | Mark 11:22 | Mark 11:23 | Mark 11:24 | Mark 11:25 | Mark 12:17 | Mark 12:28 | Mark 12:29 | Mark 12:30 | Mark 12:31 | Mark 12:38 | Mark 12:39 | Mark 13:5 | Mark 13:7 | Mark 13:9 | Mark 13:11 | Mark 13:14 | Mark 13:15 | Mark 13:16 | Mark 13:18 | Mark 13:21 | Mark 13:23 | Mark 13:28 | Mark 13:29 | Mark 13:33 | Mark 13:35 | Mark 13:37 | Mark 14:38 | Mark 16:15 | Luke 3:8 | Luke 3:11 | Luke 3:12 | Luke 3:13 | Luke 3:14 | Luke 4:8 | Luke 4:12 | Luke 6:23 | Luke 6:27 | Luke 6:28 | Luke 6:29 | Luke 6:30 | Luke 6:31 | Luke 6:35 | Luke 6:36 | Luke 6:37 | Luke 6:38 | Luke 6:41 | Luke 6:42 | Luke 8:8 | Luke 8:18 | Luke 9:3 | Luke 9:4 | Luke 9:5 | Luke 9:23 | Luke 9:49 | Luke 9:50 | Luke 10:2 | Luke 10:3 | Luke 10:4 | Luke 10:5 | Luke 10:6 | Luke 10:7 | Luke 10:8 | Luke 10:9 | Luke 10:10 | Luke 10:11 | Luke 10:20 | Luke 10:27 | Luke 10:28 | Luke 10:36 | Luke 10:37 | Luke 11:2 | Luke 11:3 | Luke 11:4 | Luke 11:9 | Luke 11:34 | Luke 11:35 | Luke 11:41 | Luke 11:42 | Luke 12:7 | Luke 12:11 | Luke 12:12 | Luke 12:15 | Luke 12:22 | Luke 12:24 | Luke 12:27 | Luke 12:29 | Luke 12:31 | Luke 12:32 | Luke 12:33 | Luke 12:35 | Luke 12:36 | Luke 12:40 | Luke 12:58 | Luke 13:24 | Luke 14:8 | Luke 14:10 | Luke 14:12 | Luke 14:13 | Luke 14:14 | Luke 14:34 | Luke 14:35 | Luke 16:9 | Luke 17:3 | Luke 17:4 | Luke 17:31 | Luke 17:32 | Luke 18:6 | Luke 18:7 | Luke 18:16 | Luke 20:24 | Luke 20:25 | Luke 20:46 | Luke 20:47 | Luke 21:8 | Luke 21:9 | Luke 21:14 | Luke 21:20 | Luke 21:21 | Luke 21:28 | Luke 21:29 | Luke 21:30 | Luke 21:31 | Luke 21:34 | Luke 21:36 | Luke 22:17 | Luke 22:18 | Luke 22:19 | Luke 22:20 | Luke 22:26 | John 1:23 | John 3:7 | John 4:24 | John 4:35 | John 6:27 | John 7:24 | John 7:37 | John 10:38 | John 12:15 | John 12:26 | John 12:35 | John 12:36 | John 13:14 | John 13:15 | John 13:34 | John 14:1 | John 14:11 | John 14:15 | John 14:23 | John 14:27 | John 15:4 | John 15:7 | John 15:9 | John 15:12 | John 15:16 | John 15:17 | John 15:20 | John 16:24 | John 16:33 | John 20:21 | John 20:22 | Acts 1:8 | Revelation 2:7 | Revelation 2:11 | Revelation 2:17 | Revelation 3:22 | Revelation 18:4 | Revelation 18:5 | Revelation 18:20 | Revelation 19:5 | Revelation 19:7 | Revelation 22:10 | Revelation 22:11 | Revelation 22:17

Acts and the letters of the Apostles

Acts 1:6-8 Being Jesus' witnesses to the ends of the earth
 Acts 1:12-14 Give yourself to prayer
 Acts 3:1-4:22 Obey God, not people
 Acts 5:17-42 Obey God, not people
 Acts 10:1-42 Treat all people equally
 Romans 1:16 Do not be ashamed of the gospel
 Romans 1:17 Live out of faith in God
 Romans 2:1-6 Do not judge, leave judgment to God
 Romans 5:1-5 Rejoice in the fruit of tribulation
 Romans 6:1-19 Be a slave to righteousness, not sin
 Romans 8:1-17 Die to yourself and live for God
 Romans 12:1-2 Offer your body as a living sacrifice
 Romans 12:3-8 Use your gifts in humility
 Romans 12:9-21 Be like Jesus (in different aspects)
 Romans 13:1-8 Submit yourself to authorities
 Romans 13:9-11 Love your neighbour as yourself
 Romans 13:12-14 Do not make provisions for the flesh
 Romans 14:1-23 Build your brother up instead of destroying him
 Romans 15:1-3 Care about others, not only about yourself
 Romans 15:7-12 Accept each other
 Romans 16:17-18 Turn away from those who hinder you in the faith
 Romans 16:19-20 Be wise about what is good and innocent about what is evil
 1 Corinthians 2:6-3:9 Act as a spiritual, not a carnal man
 1 Corinthians 3:10-23 Build only on the foundation of Christ
 1 Corinthians 4:1-2 Be a good steward of what God has given you
 1 Corinthians 4:3-5 Do not judge
 1 Corinthians 4:6-13 Do not be proud of your spiritual condition
 1 Corinthians 5:9-13 Have nothing to do with disobedient believers
 1 Corinthians 6:1-8 Do not bring your brother before court
 1 Corinthians 6:12-20 Avoid immorality
 1 Corinthians 7:7-24 Follow God's guidelines regarding marriage
 1 Corinthians 7:17-24,39 Embrace the situations God has allowed
 1 Corinthians 8:1-13 Do not let your freedom be a stumbling block for others
 1 Corinthians 9:1-23 Voluntarily lay down your rights to benefit others
 1 Corinthians 9:24-27 Discipline yourself for maximal spiritual success
 1 Corinthians 10:1-12 Do not repeat the mistakes of Israel
 1 Corinthians 10:14 Avoid idolatry
 1 Corinthians 10:23-33 Seek the best for others
 1 Corinthians 11:1 Follow those who are following Christ
 1 Corinthians 11:23-34 The Lord's Supper is the moment for self-examination
 1 Corinthians 12:1-11 Use your spiritual gifts for the benefits of others
 1 Corinthians 12:12-31 Consider all parts of the body of equal value and importance
 1 Corinthians 13:1-13 More than anything, chase after love
 1 Corinthians 14:1-19 Strive for the gifts of the Spirit for the benefit of the church
 1 Corinthians 14:20-33 Use your spiritual gifts to build up others
 1 Corinthians 16:1-4 Give God faithfully from what he has given you
 2 Corinthians 1:3-11 Let your comfort be a comfort for others
 2 Corinthians 5:20-21 Call people to be reconciled to God
 2 Corinthians 6:3-10 Do not be a stumbling block for others
 2 Corinthians 6:14-18 Do not be yoked together with unbelievers
 2 Corinthians 7:1 Cleanse yourself of every sin
 2 Corinthians 8:1-15 Meet the needs of others
 2 Corinthians 9:6-15 Give generously
 2 Corinthians 10:3-5 Use spiritual weapons to fight against spiritual enemies
 2 Corinthians 10:17-18 Boast only in the Lord
 2 Corinthians 12:7-13 Be content in your weakness

2 Corinthians 13:1-14 Continue to examine your faith
 Galatians 1:6-10 Everything opposed to the gospel must be rejected
 Galatians 5:13-26 Live in the Spirit
 Galatians 6:1 Restore someone who has sinned
 Galatians 6:2 Carry each other's burdens
 Galatians 6:3-5 Examine your own work and carry your own burden
 Galatians 6:6 Share with your teachers
 Galatians 6:7-8 Sow to please the Spirit
 Galatians 6:9-10 Do good to all people
 Ephesians 4: 22-32 Get rid of your old self and put on your new self
 Ephesians 5:1-16 Be imitators of God
 Ephesians 5:22-33 Marital relationship
 Ephesians 6:1-4 Children and parents
 Ephesians 6:10-17 Put on the spiritual armour
 Ephesians 6:18-20 Pray without ceasing
 Philippians 1:12-20 God uses difficult circumstances for his glory
 Philippians 1:21-26 Live for Christ
 Philippians 1:29-30 Suffering for Christ is a privilege
 Philippians 2:1-8 Honour others above yourself
 Philippians 3:1-10 Give up everything to gain Christ
 Philippians 4:6-7 Replace worries with prayer and thanksgiving
 Philippians 4:8-9 Practice what you saw in me
 Philippians 4:10-13 Be content with all things
 1 Timothy 4:12 Show others how God is like
 1 Timothy 4:13 Read the scripture in public and teach
 1 Timothy 4:14 Do not neglect your spiritual gifts
 1 Timothy 4:15-16 Give yourself wholly to the matters of God
 1 Timothy 5:1-2 Treat others as members of the family of God
 1 Timothy 5:3-16 Take care of the widows
 1 Timothy 5:8 Take care of your family
 1 Timothy 6:1-2 Serve those well who are in authority over you
 1 Timothy 6:6-10 Be content
 1 Timothy 6:11-16 Fight the good battle of faith
 1 Timothy 6:20-21 Guard yourself from knowledge-based religion
 2 Timothy 2:2 Keep on making disciples
 2 Timothy 2:3-4 Live as a good soldier/athlete
 2 Timothy 2:14 Stay away from unnecessary discussion
 2 Timothy 2:15-18 Study the word of God and avoid distractions
 2 Timothy 2:22 Flee evil things and strive for good things
 2 Timothy 2:23-25 Stay away from useless discussion and teach what is right
 2 Timothy 3:1-16 Have nothing to do with people who have a bad influence
 2 Timothy 3:10-16 Expect persecution as a result of your God-pleasing lifestyle
 2 Timothy 3:14-16 Continue in what you have learned
 2 Timothy 4:1-5 Teach the word of God without ceasing
 Titus 3:1 Be obedient to authorities
 Titus 3:2-7 Be considerate of everyone
 Titus 3:8 Do good works
 Titus 3:9-11 Keep away from foolish discussions
 Hebrews 2:1-4 Diligently pay attention to your spiritual growth
 Hebrews 3:12-14 See to it that no one turns away
 Hebrews 13:3 Remember the prisoners
 Hebrews 13:4 Married couples, be faithful to each other
 Hebrews 13:5 Do not love money
 Hebrews 13:7-9 Imitate the faith of your leaders
 Hebrews 13:16 Do good and share
 Hebrews 13:17 Obey your leaders
 James 1:2-4 Rejoice in troubles

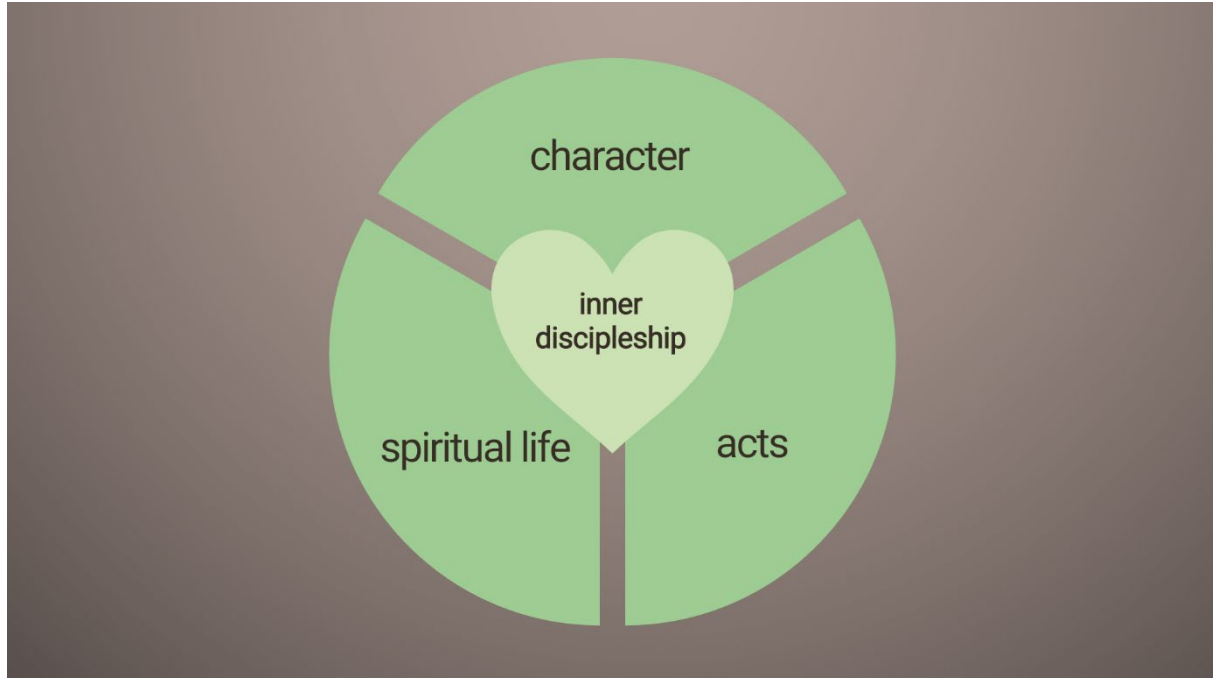
James 1:5-8 Ask God for wisdom
 James 1:13-15 Resist the temptation that leads to evil desires and sin
 James 1:19-20 Be slow to anger and quick to listen
 James 1:21-25 Be doers of the word
 James 1:26 Watch your tongue
 James 1:27 Care for widows and orphans
 James 2:14-18 Show your faith in good works
 James 3:1-12 Watch your tongue
 James 4:1-10 Give yourself to God – resist greed, pride and the devil
 James 4:11-12 Do not judge your brother
 James 4:13- 17 Trust in God for your daily life
 James 5:14-18 Pray for the sick
 1 Peter 1:13-19 Be holy in your conduct
 1 Peter 2:1 Eat the word of God
 1 Peter 2:11 Flee fleshly desires
 1 Peter 2:12 Lead a righteous life amongst pagans
 1 Peter 2:13-20 Submit to authorities
 1 Peter 3:1-7 Honour God in your marriage
 1 Peter 3:8-12 Turn away from evil and do good
 1 Peter 3:13-18 Be ready to suffer for doing good
 1 Peter 4:8-10 Fervently love each other
 1 Peter 5:8-10 Resist the devil
 1 John 1:8-10 Confess your sins
 1 John 2:1-6 Obey God's commandments
 1 John 2:7-11 Love your brother
 1 John 2:15-17 Do not love the world
 1 John 3:10-12 Love your brother
 1 John 3:14-18 Love your brother
 1 John 4:1-6 Test every doctrine if it is of God
 1 John 4:7-11 Love one another
 1 John 5:14-15 Pray according to the will of God
 2 John 4-6 Obey God's commandments and love each other
 2 John 7-11 Do not welcome someone who does not follow the teachings of Christ
 3 John 5-8 Support those, who carry the gospel to unreached places
 3 John 11 Do not imitate what is evil but what is good
 Jude 3-4 Fight eagerly for your faith

Training Unit 26



3. Discipleship training lesson: spiritual life

B) Personal prayer



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This third discipleship lesson can be taught in a group according to the following scorecard pattern:

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Do you regularly do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?

- What is God doing in your life right now?
- Are you a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Are they training others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

After the disciples have a living relationship...

- with Jesus and his grace and
- with the Father and his love and
- with the Holy Spirit
- and after the disciples can feed themselves from the word of God,

...we want to introduce the disciples to one of the greatest gifts in the Kingdom of God.

Jesus taught his disciples how they should pray

Matthew 6:5-13

“And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by others. Truly I tell you, they have received their reward in full. But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you. And when you pray, do not keep on babbling like pagans, for they think they will be heard because of their many words. Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him. “This, then, is how you should pray: “Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven. Give us today our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. For yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Memory verse(s): It would be good to learn all of the Lord's Prayer by heart.

The Lord's Prayer already contains some forms of prayer:

- The address «Our Father» is the introduction to a conversation with the Father
- «Hallowed be your name, yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever» is praise and worship.
- «Your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven» prayers that conform to the will of God will be answered.
- «Give us today our daily bread» is a prayer of supplication
- «Forgive us our debts» is a prayer of repentance

Besides the Lord's Prayer we show the disciples other forms of prayer.

• Supplication	Memory verse:	Luke 18:1-8; Matthew 7:7-8
• Thanksgiving	Memory verse:	Ephesians 5:20
• Intercession	Memory verse:	1 Timothy 2:1
• Prayer for authorities	Memory verse:	1 Timothy 2:2
• Praise – Worship	Memory verse:	Acts 2:47
• Psalms	Memory verse:	Acts 16:22-34/Matthew 4:10
• Praying in tongues	Memory verse:	1 Corinthians 14:1-18
• Praying and fasting	Memory verse:	Mark 2:20
• For the harvest and workers	Memory verse:	Luke 10:2

Jesus completed the Father's will 100%, therefore we can pray to the Father in the name of Jesus.

John 16:23

In that day you will no longer ask me anything. Very truly I tell you, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.

There are many more ways to pray. This is a selection for a good foundation for the spiritual life of a disciple.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 persons. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: what they want to share with someone in the coming week.
5. Encouragement, to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Prayer together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Praying that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Praying together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: which goals they want to reach until the next meeting.
10. Praying together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending

- During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to tell of our own practice, how our prayer life looks like and what we experience.
- Then we want to pray with the disciples concretely and in different ways.
- The disciples themselves should pray in groups.
- Then someone from the group should summarize the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: who will they share it with?
- Encouragement to share the prayer with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Prayer together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Prayer for every trainee and for their sending.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

The demonstrating, modelling, training, practicing and repeating does not happen outside in the streets and places in this situation, but at the disciple's home or at the discipleship-meeting place.

Matthew 18:19-20

"Again, truly I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything they ask for, it will be done for them by my Father in heaven. For where two or three gather in my name, there am I with them."

It is important to practice prayer often until the disciple can practice it on his own and is able to teach others to DO it.

After going through the discipleship lessons in theory and practice with our disciples, our disciples should pray at home by themselves. They should learn more of the secrets of prayer. For this, we can regularly share prayer requests with our disciples.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with others ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this third lesson to the discipleship group ☐

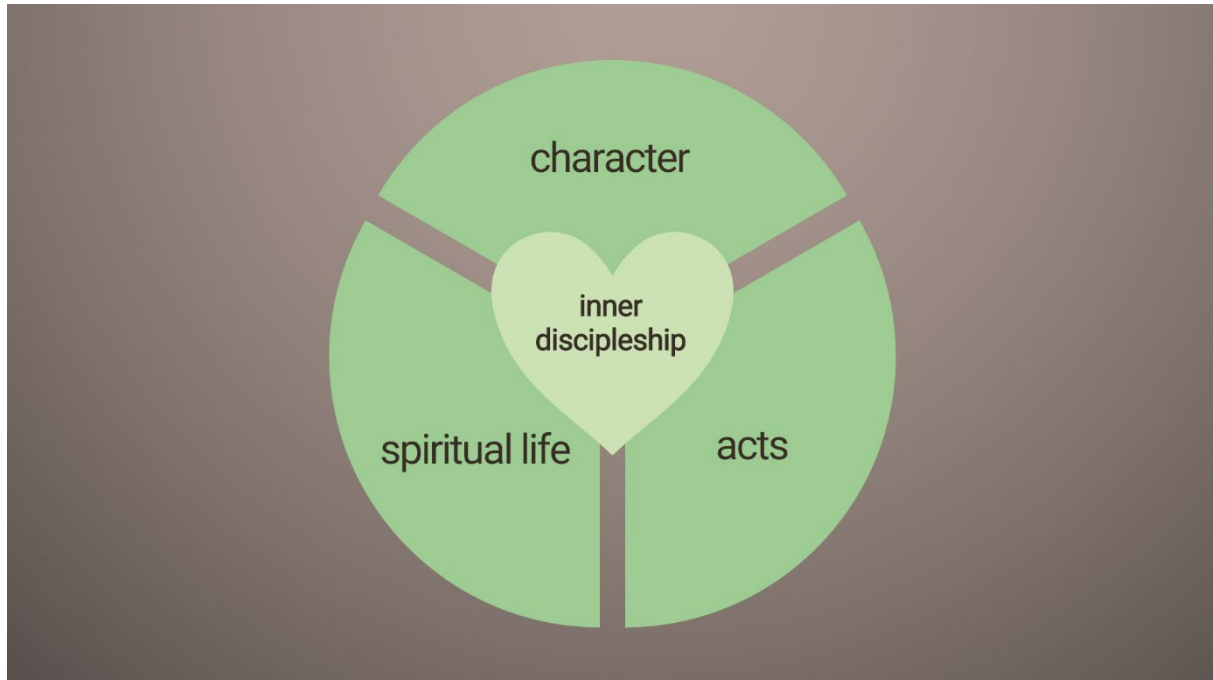
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 27



4. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life

C) Assurance of salvation



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This fourth discipleship lesson can be taught in a group. However, it also makes sense to ask every single disciple if he has the assurance of salvation. After that, we go through this lesson according to the pattern in the scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?

- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?
- How is your **prayer** life?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
- Are you a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Are they training others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

About assurance of salvation

After the disciples have a living relationship

- with Jesus and his grace and
- with the Father and his love and
- with the Holy Spirit
- and after the disciples can feed themselves from the word of God
- and cultivate a prayer life,

we want our disciples to embrace this wonderful treasure called **assurance of salvation** personally. It is about the deep knowledge in our heart:

- that we are children of God
- that our sins have been forgiven
- that we have eternal life

This knowledge is one of the greatest gifts of God to our hearts. In no world religion do people have an assurance of salvation. Everywhere I traveled I asked people: do you know that you will be saved or are saved? Do you know you have eternal life? Do you know if you are going to heaven? Neither Muslims nor Hindus nor Buddhists have assurance regarding this. Even some Christian denominations (Catholic Church) deny that one can have assurance of salvation.

The assurance of salvation and the joy coming from it is one of the strongest forces in the heart of a believer. That is why the devil wants to steal this assurance of salvation from as many children of God as possible.

1 John 5:13

I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.

1 John 3:14

We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love each other. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

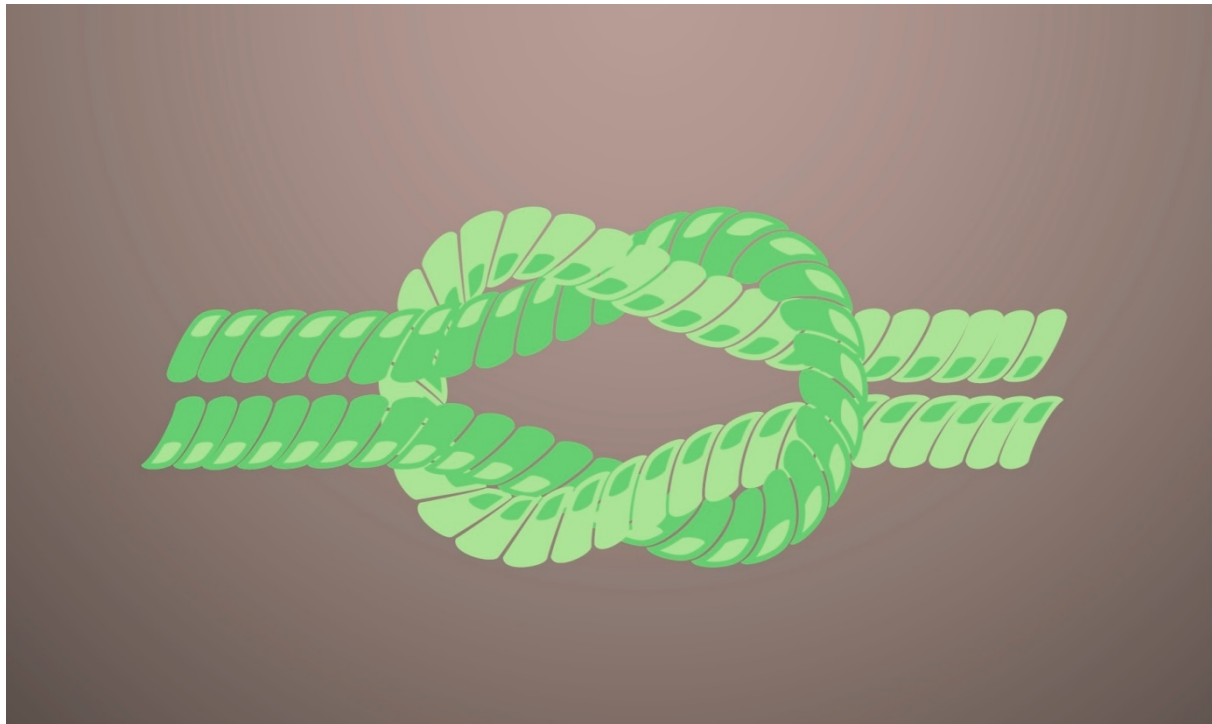
Romans 8:16

The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children.

Job 19:25

I know that my redeemer lives, and that in the end he will stand on the earth.

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

**Assurance of salvation stays**

A follower of Jesus can know that he is saved. It is like loving someone; you know that inside your heart. It is knowledge in the heart. We know inside our hearts that we are saved because it is written. Some people experience physical manifestations and have strong feelings when they give their lives to God and experience him for the first time. These experiences and feelings can go away again. However, the assurance of salvation stays because it is written in the word of God and it comes into our hearts through the word of God. It is a knowing and trusting in the word of God.

1 John 1:9

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

John 1:12

Yet to all who did receive him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God.

We know that we have been saved because the Spirit of God himself gives testimony together with our spirit that we are children of God. The memory verse for this lesson is:

Romans 8:16

The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson**C) Implementation in the training room**

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 persons. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: what they want to share with someone in the coming week.
5. Encouragement, to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Praying together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people, they want to share their testimony with.
7. Praying that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Praying together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: which goals they want to reach until the next meeting.
10. Praying together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending
 - During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to tell of our own practice of what assurance of salvation is for us and how we experience this.
 - Then we want to show the disciples what we do, when doubts attack our assurance of salvation.
 - Examining whether the person without assurance of salvation is really saved. Without salvation one cannot have assurance of salvation.
 - Reviewing whether sin in their lives is clouding their joyful assurance of salvation.
 - When in doubt, confront the devil with words of promises from the scripture: "It is written..."

I myself know these doubts very well and experienced them strongly for some time. I was often overcome with such strong doubts when I was supposed to preach that I was not even sure anymore whether God existed. As soon as I started preaching, the assurance came back. This was an attack of the devil trying to hinder me to joyfully speak about Jesus. When these doubts came again, I decided to confront the devil with the promises of the word of God. The following time, I opened my Bible and read aloud: "It is written that I have the right to be a child of God." In this way the attacks were silenced. "Resist the devil and he will flee from you."

- The disciples should share in groups about their assurance of salvation and their dealings with doubt.
- Then someone from the group summarizes the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: What did they learn and who do they share it with?
- Encouragement to share one's testimony of assurance of salvation with their own (spiritual) family.
- Prayer together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Prayer for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating assurance of salvation

- We go out and ask people around us (unbelievers: Muslims, Buddhists, nominal Christians) if they have assurance of salvation – if they are sure to be saved and that they would go to heaven. We then tell them how we got our assurance of salvation.
- We go out and ask people around us (disciples/believers) if they have joyful assurance of salvation or if they have doubts, and we tell them how we got assurance of salvation.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this fourth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

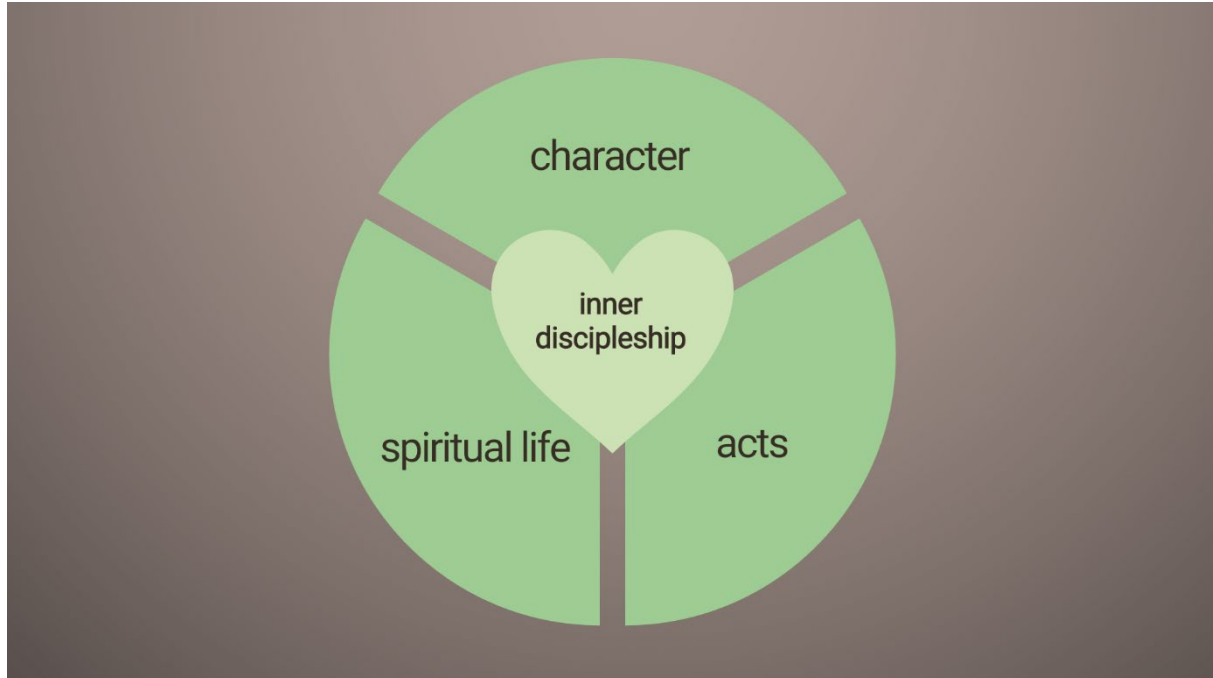
BEsent is a training – without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 28



5. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life

D) Be filled with the Holy Spirit!



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This fifth discipleship lesson can be taught in a group according to the pattern on our scorecard:

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?

– Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?

- What is God doing in your life right now?
- Are you a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Are they training others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

The Holy Spirit in us

With our conversion, we have received the gift of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit now lives in us and we are even sealed with him. He will not go away again. No Question: we have received the all of the Holy Spirit.

Therefore, the question is no longer: do we have the Holy Spirit or not? The Question is: **has the Holy Spirit filled us completely?**

- Can he fill us?
- Can he work undividedly in us? Can he bring forth the fruit of the Holy Spirit in us?
- Can he work through us by the gifts?
- Can he work through us with his power?

The Holy Spirit can be quenched through our disobedience and our sins.

1 Thessalonians 5:19

Do not quench the Spirit.

Being filled anew with the Holy Spirit

We should not quench the Holy Spirit in our spiritual life. On the contrary, we should be filled by him again and again.

Ephesians 5:18-20

Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit. Sing and make music from your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Luke 11:9-13

"So I say to you: Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; the one who seeks finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. "Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? Or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart



- Being filled with the Holy Spirit is a commandment and a promise.
- We can quench the Spirit through our sins.
- How can we be filled again and again with the Holy Spirit?
 - √ Repent
 - √ Expect by faith
 - √ Ask by faith
 - √ A) Being in the presence of God and B) through worship (singing and making music in the heart) and C) staying thankful and letting oneself be filled

Ephesians 5:18-19

Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit. Sing and make music from your heart to the Lord.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 persons. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: what they want to share with someone in the coming week.
5. Encouragement, to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Praying together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Praying that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Praying together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: which goals they want to reach until the next meeting.
10. Praying together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending
 - During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to give testimony about the way we are letting ourselves be filled again and again with the Holy Spirit.

Bill Bright once used the illustration of breath. One can compare being filled with the Holy Spirit with breathing. There is breathing out of used up oxygen and breathing in of fresh oxygen. We should confess and breathe out all sins and everything that has accumulated. Then we should breathe in the fresh wind of the Holy Spirit.

- We want to show the disciples concretely, how we can be filled anew with the Holy Spirit.
- The disciples should share in groups about being filled with the Holy Spirit.
 - Examine whether a disciple needs to be filled with the Holy Spirit anew
 - Examine whether there is sin or shadow in his life and if repentance is necessary.
 - Showing the words of promises in the scripture ("how much more will the Heavenly Father give his Spirit to those who ask him" Luke 11,13)
 - Receive and be filled in worship and thanksgiving
- Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: What did they learn and who do they share it with?
- Encouragement to share one's testimony about being filled with the Holy Spirit with the own (spiritual) family.
- Prayer together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Prayer for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We have already demonstrated being filled with the Holy Spirit.
- We meet the disciples again to demonstrate and repeat the process of daily being filled with the Holy Spirit.
- We repeat this until the disciple lets himself be filled with the Holy Spirit on his own.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this fifth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

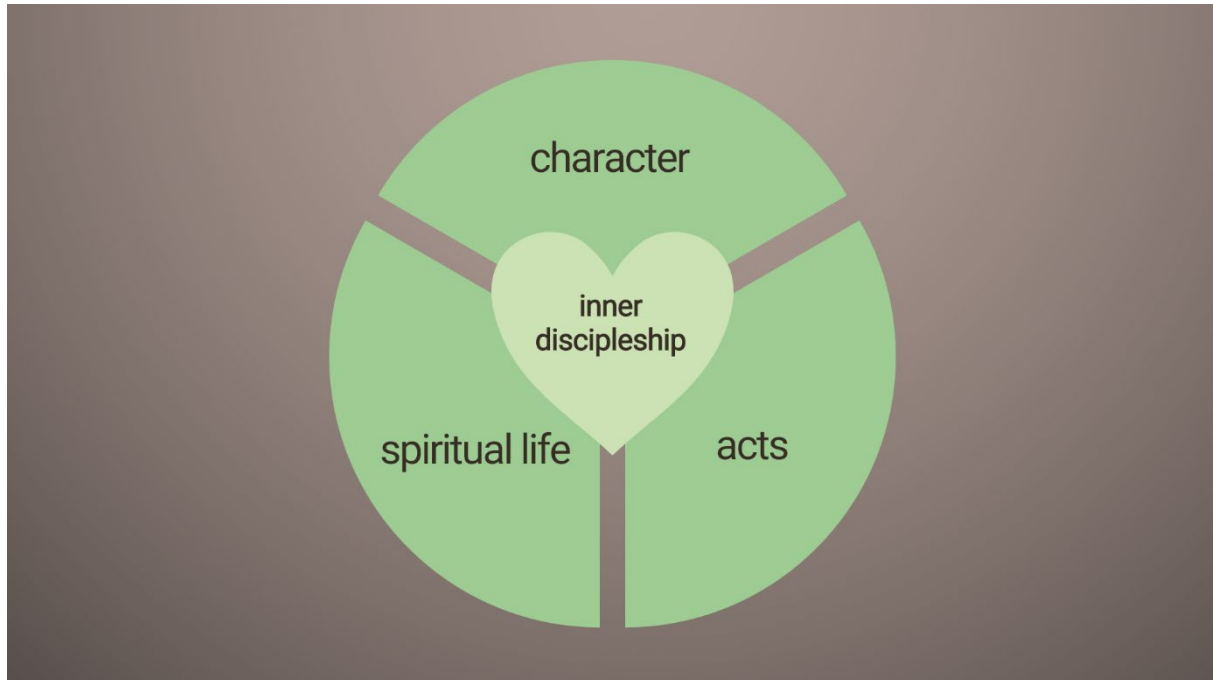
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 29



6. Discipleship training lesson: Spiritual life

E) Living in community



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This sixth discipleship lesson has to be taught in the group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Questions for giving an account on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?

- How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful **assurance of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Living in community

- The Jesus Model: he called a group of disciples and started a discipleship community with them.
- God himself lives in community: God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. They live in a loving relationship and work together.
- We have been created in the image of God. Therefore, we as disciples should live in purposeful relationships with other disciples as soon as possible. This is an important part of being human and being a disciple.
- Furthermore, certain parts of discipleship can only take place in community, specifically all parts in the New Testament that talk about “**each other**” and “**one another**”.
- That is why, if possible, we teach/practice discipleship in a group from the very beginning. This is already an important form of fellowship.
- We begin as early as possible to live in a discipleship community.

Acts 2:42

They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching and to fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer.

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Core values to take out of Acts 2:42

1. Staying in the word of God together. Practicing Discovery Bible Studies together.
2. Having spiritual and natural fellowship. Sharing from the heart: What are the victories, joys and successes? What are challenges, needs, prayer requests? Where is help required?
3. Celebrating the Lord's Supper together, if possible integrating it into the so-called Agape meal (eating together).
4. Praying together in different ways.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers, we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: which goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting.
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending
 - During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to give testimony about the way we live in community in the four areas mentioned above.
 - For demonstration purposes, we then want to have a common community meeting with the disciples according to the 4 key elements.
 - The disciples should share in groups and then organize a group meeting
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: What did they learn and who will they share it with?
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We meet the disciples again in order to demonstrate and practice community meetings.
- The disciples organize community meetings themselves while we watch and correct.
- We repeat this until the disciples do regular community meetings without our help.

At this point we form of the discipleship group into a community of faith (according to L. 41-42).

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this sixth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

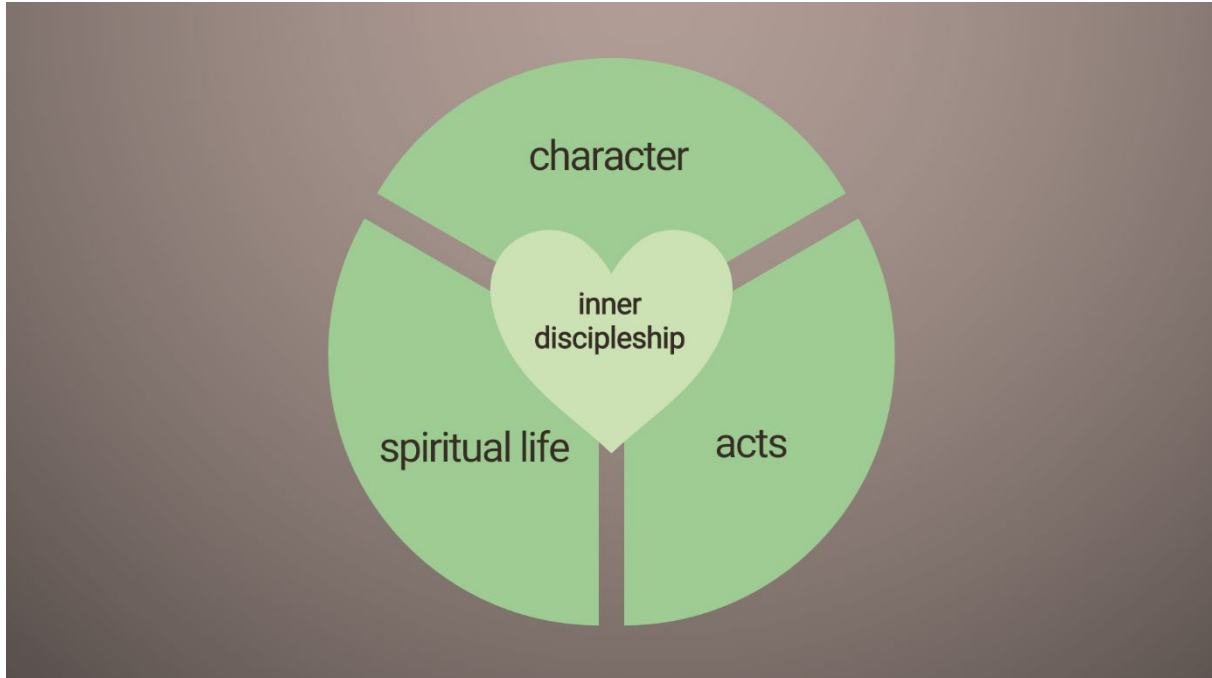
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 30



7. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple

A) Giving testimony



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This seventh discipleship lesson should be taught in the group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?

- How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Teach your disciples to share their testimony

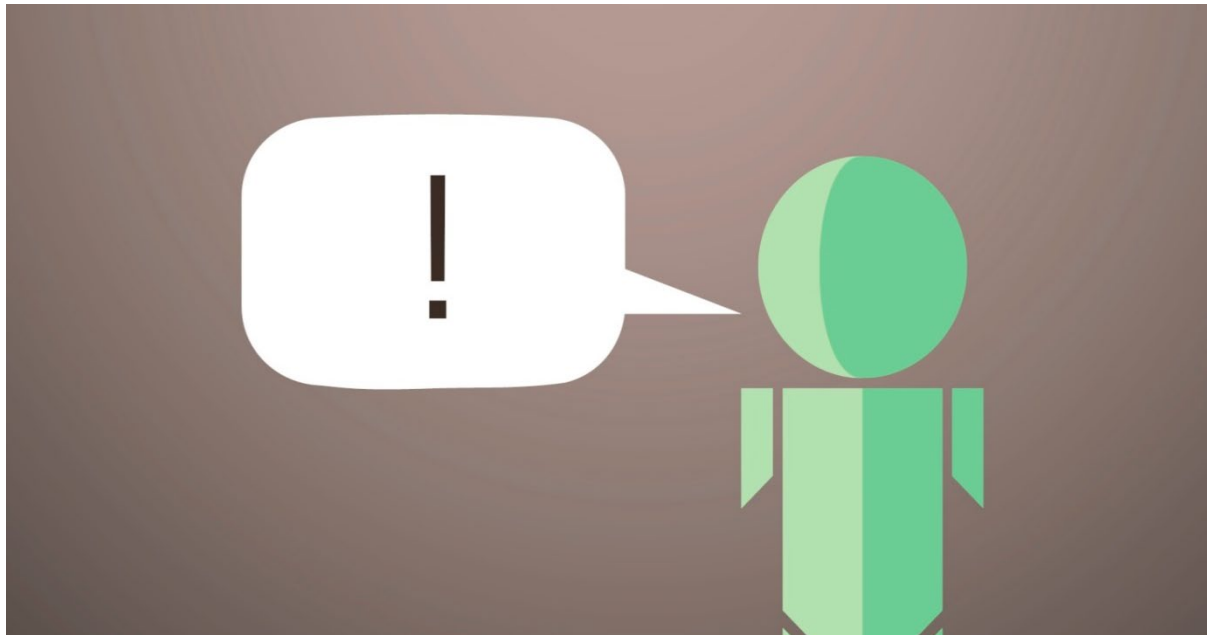
- We spoke in great detail about “giving testimony” in lesson 13.
- Now you can teach your disciples just as you learned it yourself in lesson 13.
- Sharing the personal testimony of giving one’s life to Jesus is a powerful form of preaching the gospel because you experienced it yourself.
- It is almost impossible to speak against one’s personal testimony because we have witnessed things with our eyes, ears and our lives. To illustrate: witnesses testifying in court are asked according to the same criteria.

Matthew 10:32-33

“Whoever acknowledges me before others, I will also acknowledge before my Father in heaven. But whoever disowns me before others, I will disown before my Father in heaven.”

Acts 1:4+8

On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: “Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.”



- Jesus loves it when we confess him
- The Holy Spirit empowers us and helps us to give testimony
- We can learn from Paul about how to share our testimonies
 - Important points from his life before his conversion: his background, education and how he persecuted the Christians (Acts 26:4-11).
 - How Paul got to know Jesus Christ: his experience with Christ outside of Damascus and the healing from blindness. This part is about the impact (Acts 26:12-18).
 - The consequences that getting to know Christ had in his life: the task of God, his baptism and his ministry for Christ (Acts 26:19-23).

Memory verses to learn by heart:

Acts 1:8

"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

- During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to tell how we share our testimonies.
- Then we demonstrate to our disciples by putting their testimonies into words with them, ask them questions and then share their personal testimony.
- The disciples should share in groups and tell each other their testimonies.
- Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: Who will they share their testimony with in the coming week?
- Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Pray for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10x, 20x, 50x).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We meet the disciples again to go out with them and we share our testimony.
- We go out together and the disciple shares his testimony.
- The disciple goes and shares his testimony in his Jerusalem (family), in his Judea (neighbourhood, village) and in his Samaria (his region).

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are so led ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this seventh lesson to the discipleship group ☐

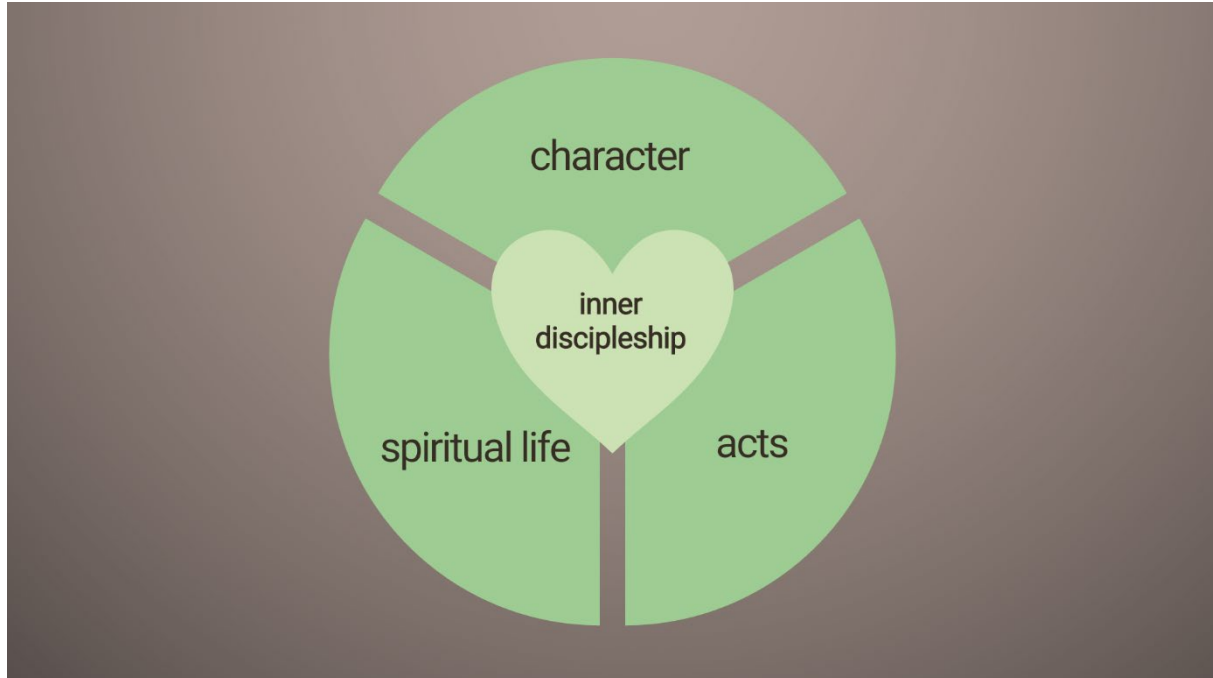
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 31

8. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple

B) Go and preach the Gospel



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This eighth discipleship lesson should be taught in the group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
 - 2) Praise and worship
 - 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the open Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Teach your disciples to preach

- We looked in detail at “preaching the gospel of the Kingdom of God” in lessons 8 to 12.

Session 8: Preach the gospel of the Kingdom of God

Session 9: The way of salvation “from creation to salvation”

Session 10: Repentance, baptism: water and Holy Spirit

Session 11: The call to repentance and to follow Jesus

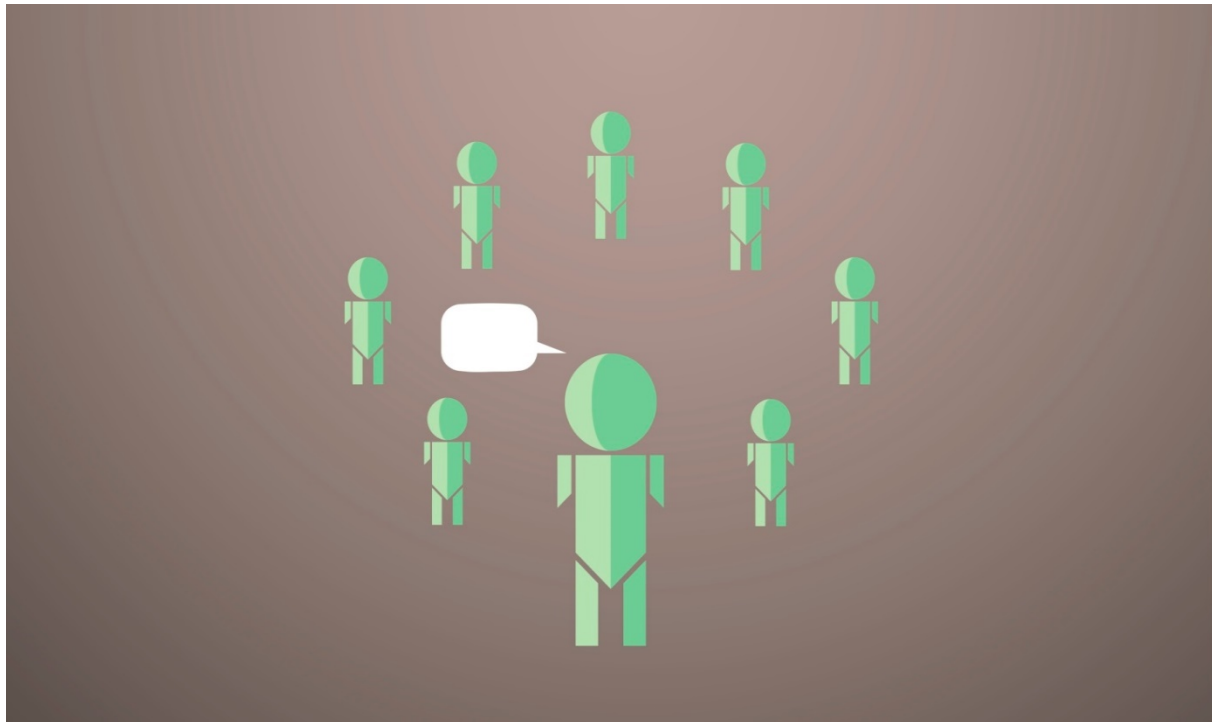
Session 12: Methods of evangelism: evangelistic Discovery Bible Study DBS

- Now you can teach your disciples just as you learned it yourself in lessons 8 to 12.
- Proclaiming the word of God and proclaiming the gospel is absolutely central in the Kingdom of God.
- For faith only comes from the proclamation of the word of God.

Mark 16:15-20

He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well.” After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at the right hand of God. Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Further texts: 1 Timothy 2:3-4; Matthew 24:14; 2 Timothy 4:1-5



- Proclaiming the gospel means proclaiming a person: Jesus
Compare this to the ten characteristics of Jesus in Acts 10,36-48
- Way of salvation: from creation to salvation
- 4 doors: faith, repentance, baptism, receiving the Holy Spirit
- Call to repentance and to follow Jesus
- Evangelistic proclamation as a process: evangelistic Discovery Bible Study DBS

Memory verses to learn by heart:

Mark 16:15

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation."

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

- During this training lesson, we as disciple makers want to show how and where we preach the gospel.
- Then we want to think about how to proclaim the gospel together with our disciples and preach them the gospel. The disciples listen while we preach the gospel and explain the way of salvation.
This is an extensive training part. Every step requires a lesson each (1st lesson: Introducing Jesus, 2nd lesson: way of salvation, etc.).
We also lead an evangelistic Bible Study for demonstration purposes.
- The disciples should share in groups, preach the gospel to each other and lead each other to faith in a role-play (repentance, baptism, receiving of the Holy Spirit).
- Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: whom will they share their testimony with in the coming week?
- Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We meet the disciples again and go out with them to preach the gospel.
- We go out together, the disciples preach while we watch and correct.
- We do this together until they can do it on their own.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this eighth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

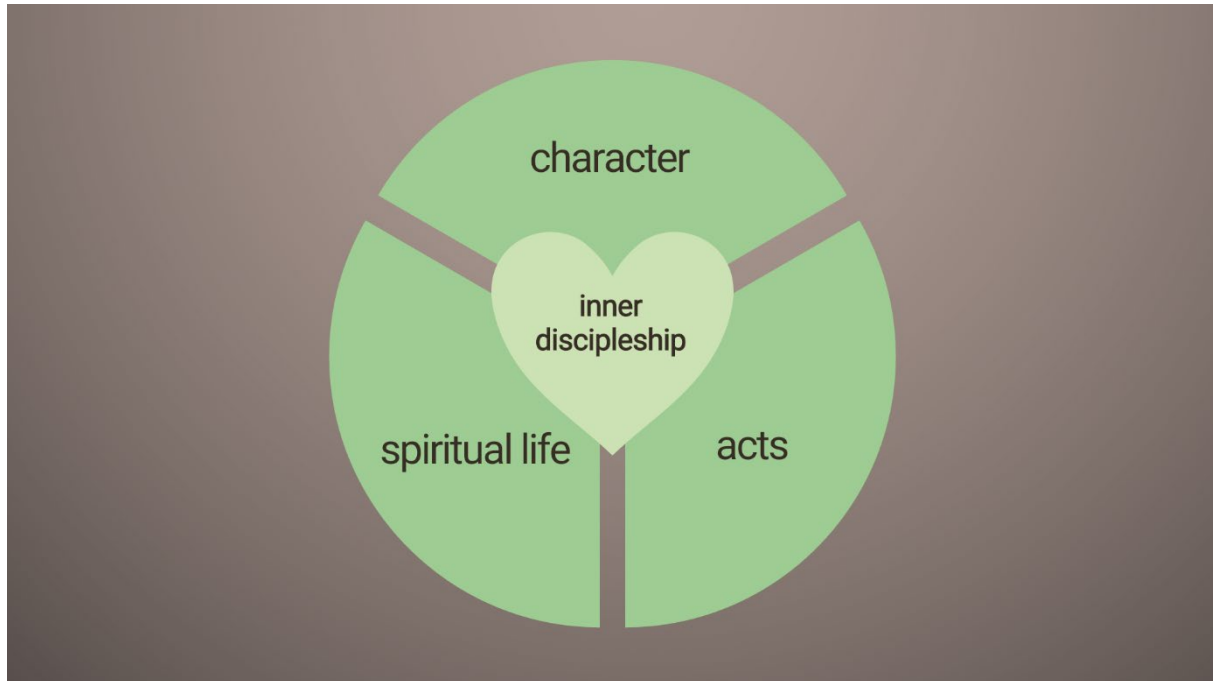
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 32



9. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple

C) The ministry of the Holy Spirit



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This ninth discipleship lesson should be taught in the group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
 - 2) Praise and worship
 - 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Teach your disciples to heal the sick

- We looked in detail at the four areas of the ministry of the Holy Spirit in lessons 15 to 19: 1. Healing, 2. Delivering, 3. Raising the dead, 4. Being led by the Spirit.

Lesson 15: Heal the sick!

Lesson 16: Cast out evil spirits!

Lesson 17: Raise the dead!

Lesson 18: Let yourselves be led by the Holy Spirit!

- Now you can teach your disciples just like you were taught in lessons 15 to 18.
- Proclaiming the word of God and proclaiming the gospel is absolutely central in the Kingdom of God.
- For faith only comes from the proclamation of the word of God.
- However, in the ministry and model of Jesus we clearly see that the ministry of the Holy Spirit usually goes together with proclamation.

Matthew 4:24

News about him spread all over Syria and people brought to him all those who were ill with various diseases, those suffering severe pain, the demon-possessed, those having seizures, and the paralyzed; and he healed them.

Matthew 8:16

When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick.

It should also be this way in our ministry and in the ministry of our disciples from the start. Jesus gave us this task.

Mark 16:15-20

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well." After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at the right hand of God. Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Key texts:

Romans 15:15-21

Yet I have written you quite boldly on some points to remind you of them again, because of the grace God gave me to be a minister of Christ Jesus to the Gentiles. He gave me the priestly duty of proclaiming the gospel of God, so that the Gentiles might become an offering acceptable to God, sanctified by the Holy Spirit. Therefore I glory in Christ Jesus in my service to God. I will not venture to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished through me in leading the Gentiles to obey God by what I have said and done—by the power of signs and wonders, through the power of the Spirit of God. So from Jerusalem all the way around to Illyricum, I have fully proclaimed the gospel of Christ. It has always been my ambition to preach the gospel where Christ was not known, so that I would not be building on someone else's foundation. Rather, as it is written: "Those who were not told about him will see, and those who have not heard will understand."

Matthew 10:7-8

As you go, proclaim this message: 'The kingdom of heaven has come near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give.

John 16:13

But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth.

- The proclamation of the gospel will happen with signs and miracles and in the power of the Spirit of God.
 1. Heal the sick!
 2. Cast out evil spirits!
 3. Raise the dead!
 4. Let yourselves be led by the Holy Spirit!

Memory verses to learn by heart:

Romans 15:18-19

I will not venture to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished through me in leading the Gentiles to obey God by what I have said and done—by the power of signs and wonders, through the power of the Spirit of God. So from Jerusalem all the way around to Illyricum, I have fully proclaimed the gospel of Christ.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
 2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
 3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
 4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
 5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
 8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
 9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
 10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.
- During this training lesson we as disciple makers want to tell about how we experience the ministry of the Holy Spirit as we obey the discipleship commandment. This lesson is also not meant to be taught in one session.
 - Afterwards we want to practice the four ministries of the Holy Spirit together with our disciples. If someone is sick, then act upon it. This means we will do a role-play as a dry run:
 - Healing
 - Deliverance
 - Raising the dead
 - Being led by the Holy Spirit
 - The disciples should share their thoughts on these things in groups and do the role-play.
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: who do they want to explain the gospel to and who do they want to serve in the Holy Spirit during the week?
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We meet the disciples again and go out to practice the ministry of the Holy Spirit. We do this several times.
- We go out together and the disciples practice the ministry of the Holy Spirit while we watch and correct.
- The disciples go and practice the ministry of the Holy Spirit in their Jerusalem (family), in their Judea (neighbourhood, village) and in their Samaria (their region) while their disciples go with them and watch them.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this ninth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

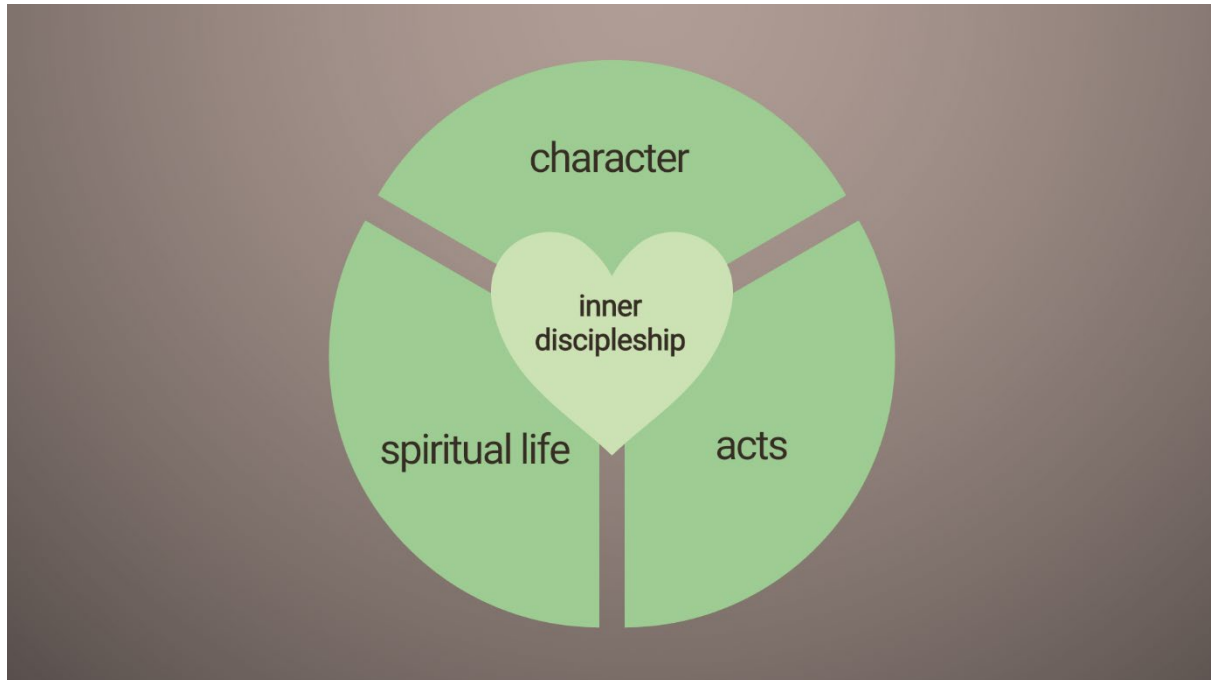
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 33



10. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple

D) Giving and sharing



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This tenth discipleship lesson should be taught in the group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Questions for giving an account on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?

Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 How is your **prayer** life?
 Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?

- What is God doing in your life right now?
- Are you a witness for Jesus?
- With whom did you share what you learned?
- Are they training others?
- Is there something I can help you with?
- How many new groups were started?
- Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Introductory thoughts on giving

- Giving is one of the foundational principles and basic rules in the Kingdom of God
- Whoever gives, receives!
- Giving is also a secret in the Kingdom. To be specific: whoever receives something and keeps it to himself, will lose it. It loses its splendour and power.

Matthew 16:25

For whoever wants to save their life will lose it, but whoever loses their life for me will find it.

- Only he who passes on what he received, receives it back for good.

Luke 6:38

Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you."

Acts 4:32-37

All the believers were one in heart and mind. No one claimed that any of their possessions was their own, but they shared everything they had. With great power the apostles continued to testify to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus. And God's grace was so powerfully at work in them all that there were no needy persons among them. For from time to time those who owned land or houses sold them, brought the money from the sales and put it at the apostles' feet, and it was distributed to anyone who had need. Joseph, a Levite from Cyprus, whom the apostles called Barnabas (which means "son of encouragement"), sold a field he owned and brought the money and put it at the apostles' feet.

Mark 12:41-46

Jesus sat down opposite the place where the offerings were put and watched the crowd putting their money into the temple treasury. Many rich people threw in large amounts. But a poor widow came and put in two very small copper coins, worth only a few cents. Calling his disciples to him, Jesus said, "Truly I tell you, this poor widow has put more into the treasury than all the others. They all gave out of their wealth; but she, out of her poverty, put in everything—all she had to live on."

John 3:16

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.

Romans 15:18-19

...in leading the Gentiles to obey God by what I have said and done—by the power of signs and wonders, through the power of the Spirit of God.

- In the Kingdom of God to love means to give.
- In the Kingdom of God, it is more blessed to give than to receive.
- In the Kingdom of God there is a direct connection between giving and receiving.
- They placed the gifts at the feet of the Apostles, who then gave to those in need. Gifts are given for the ministry of sending and for people in need.
- Even poor people (widows) should give.
- Giving can mean different things: money, time, talents, or other things.
- Deeds make the Word more credible.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

Luke 6:38

Give, and it will be given to you.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson**C) Implementation in the training room**

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

- During **this training lesson** we as disciple makers want to explain how we live giving and sharing practically.
- To demonstrate, we want to give something to the disciple with the greatest need.
- The disciples should find out themselves, who in their group is in need. Then they should give something to those with the greatest need. This practice breaks the attitude of keeping things for oneself.
- Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: who do they want to explain the Gospel to and give something to during the next week?
- Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- We meet the disciples again to go out with them and we, as stewards, demonstrate the generous giving of our time, treasures, talents, etc. very practically with everyone who needs it!
- We go out together and the disciples practice the generous giving of their time, treasures, talents, etc. We watch and correct.
- The disciples go and as stewards practice generous giving of their time, treasure, talents, etc. in their Jerusalem (family), in their Judea (neighbourhood, village) and in their Samaria (their region), while their disciples go along and watch them.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this tenth lesson to the discipleship group ☐

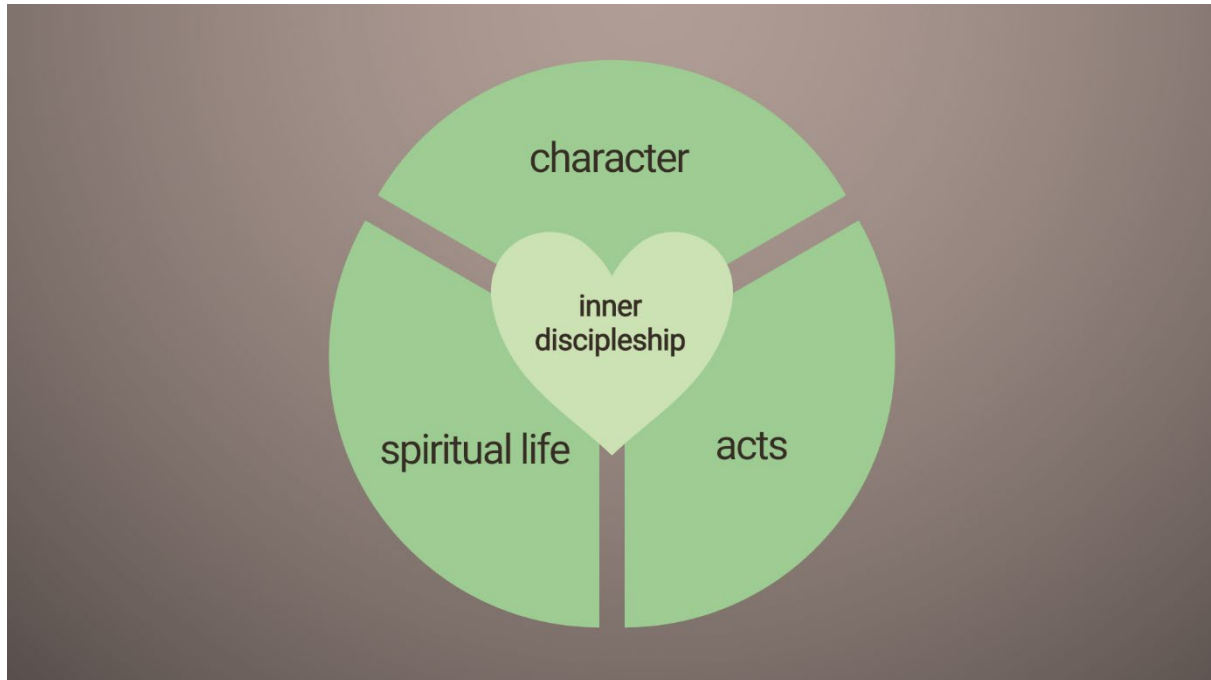
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 34



11. Discipleship training lesson: Deeds of a disciple

E) Making disciples



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship, or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This eleventh discipleship lesson can be taught in a group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
 - 2) Praise and worship
 - 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Introductory thoughts on making disciples

- A main task of a disciple of Jesus is to make disciples of others.
- The main commandment of the Old Testament is the commandment to love God, one's neighbour and one's enemies.
- The main commandment of the New Testament is to make disciples.
- This eleventh discipleship training lesson, in which we train our disciples to make disciples themselves, is one of the most important lessons.

Key texts:

Matthew 28:19-20

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you.

2 Timothy 2:2

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

- The discipleship commandment comes directly from Jesus.
- It is valid at all times, for all baptized followers of Jesus.
- Every disciple should pass on what he received from his disciple maker to others, who are then able to pass it on to others.
- Paul -> Timothy -> reliable people -> others
We want to create a discipleship chain.
- Discipleship means to keep the commandments of Jesus.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

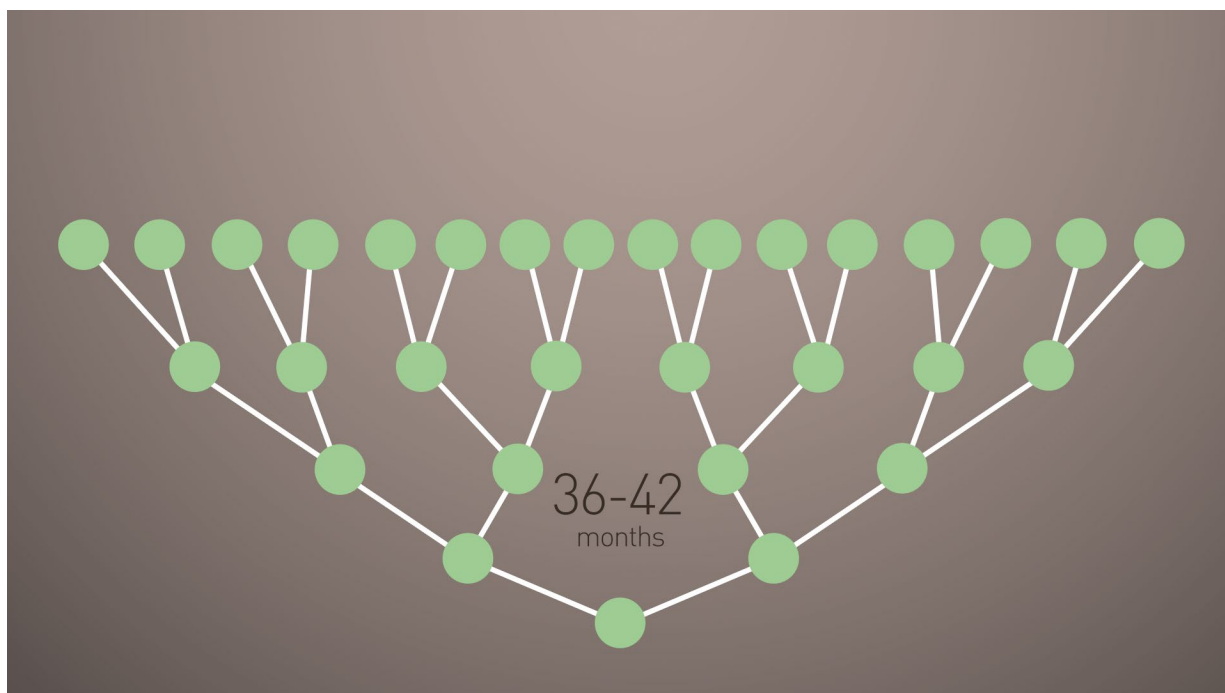
2 Timothy 2:2

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
 2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
 3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
 4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
 5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
 8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
 9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
 10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.
- This eleventh training lesson is about your disciple doing with his disciples, what you as disciple makers did with him during the past 10 discipleship training lessons.
 - Practically, this means that your disciple teaches, demonstrates and practices with his disciples, what and as you have showed him.
 - In this way, the multiplication of discipleship takes place. This is the actual goal of the whole training. Whole discipleship movements start in this way.
 - The disciples share their thoughts in groups about making disciples.
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: who do they want to explain the Gospel to and with whom do they want to start a discipleship process during the week?
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.



Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this eleventh lesson to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

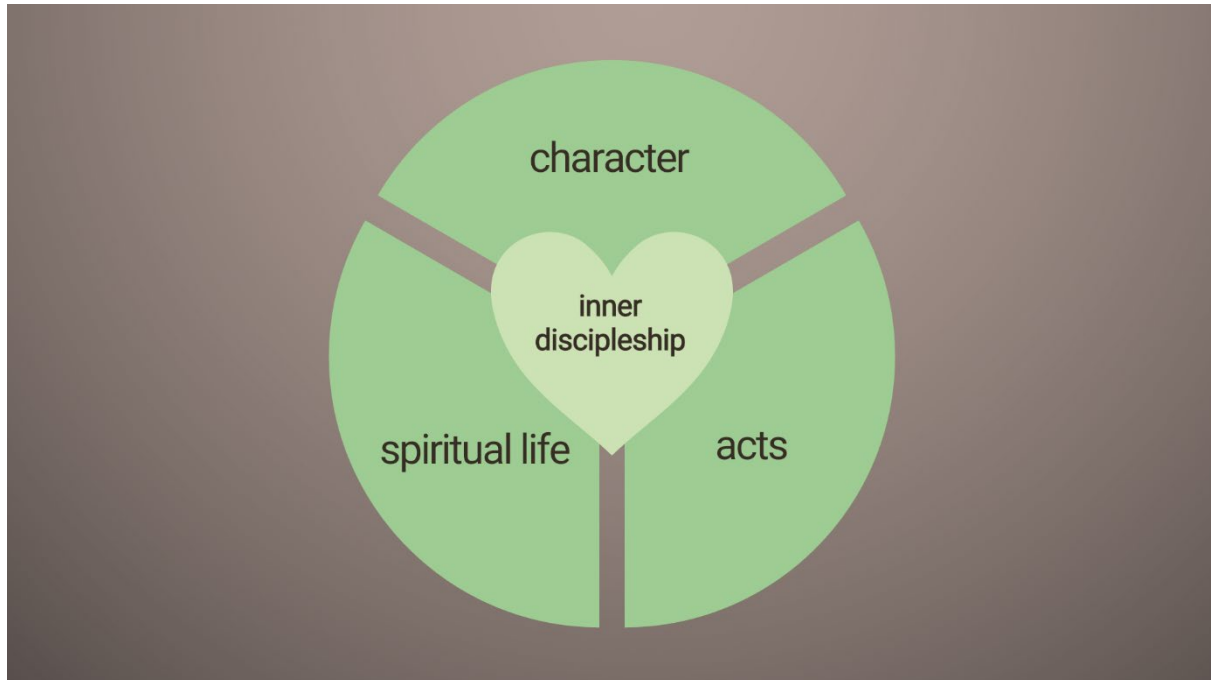
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 35

12. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple

A) You shall love God and your neighbour



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This twelfth discipleship lesson can be taught in a group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually filled with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community with other followers of Jesus**?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
 - Are you making **disciples of others**?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Introductory thoughts on loving God and neighbour

- Jesus said that the double commandment to love God and one's neighbour is the greatest commandment.
- To continually grow in the love towards God and people is a lifelong process of every follower of Jesus. It is the most important goal and the purpose of our lives.
- Of course, we cannot lead our disciples into the whole breadth, length, height and depth of love within one discipleship training. However, we can show them what it means to live a life for God and our neighbours instead of leading a selfish lifestyle.
- Since the commandment to love is so central, we should address it **AT EVERY** gathering.



1 John 4:16

And so we know and rely on the love God has for us. God is love. Whoever lives in love lives in God, and God in them.

Matthew 22:37-39

Jesus replied: “‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’

Revelation 2:4-5

Yet I hold this against you: You have forsaken the love you had at first. Consider how far you have fallen! Repent and do the things you did at first. If you do not repent, I will come to you and remove your lampstand from its place.

1 John 5:3

In fact, this is love for God: to keep his commands. And his commands are not burdensome.

Ephesians 5:1-2

Follow God’s example, therefore, as dearly loved children and walk in the way of love, just as Christ loved us and gave himself up for us as a fragrant offering and sacrifice to God.

1 John 3:16

This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers and sisters.

- God himself is love therefore love is the greatest.
- To love God means to give him the first place in everything.
- Love means to give, to give oneself, to dedicate oneself to someone with all that we are and all that we have. For God loved the world so much that he gave his one and only son...

Ephesians 5:25

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her.

- To love God means to keep his commandments. Love is a commandment. (Yes, it is possible to command love!)
- We should not only love God but also our neighbours and even our enemies.
- To love one's neighbour means to give one's life for him.

John 15:13

Greater love has no one than this: to lay down one's life for one's friends.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

Matthew 22:37-39

Jesus replied: "‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’"

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson**C) Implementation in the training room**

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

- In this training lesson we as disciple makers want to share from our experiences:
 - Give an example where you are struggling to put God in first place.
 - Give an example where you are struggling to keep the commandments.
 - Give a testimony (5 examples) of where you specifically practiced love in your spiritual life.
- We as disciple makers demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
Show your disciples a deed of love, for example: encourage everyone or honour every one of them.
- The disciples now share with each other in small groups:
 - Where God does not yet have the first place in their lives.
 - In which areas they are struggling to keep the commandments.
 - They too should practice a deed of love in the group.
 - Then they should pray for each other.
- Afterwards, someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: what they want to share with someone during the week.
- Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- This 12th lesson is about the core of our whole lives and ministries. It is about the deepest motives, why we live as we do and why we do what we do.
- Since the commandment to love is so central, we should address it during every meeting and during every ministry with our disciples, doing a love check so to speak.
- In this way we show our disciples that we live our lives and conduct our ministries out of love towards God and people. Perhaps much training is required to practice a life-style of love. We go out together and look for someone, to whom we can show love to or for whom we can do something good. Then our disciples do the same.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this 12th lesson to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

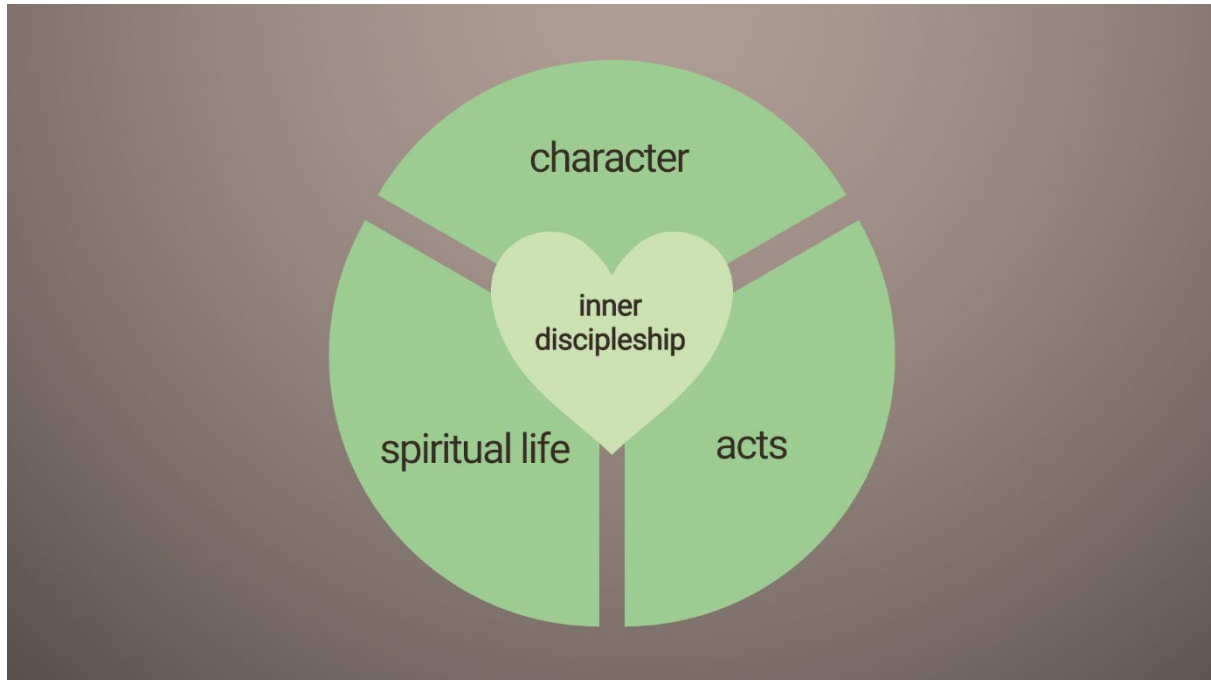
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 36



13. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple

B) Transformational ministry



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: This 13th lesson deals with deep character deficits and patterns of sin. It is better to teach this lesson in a one-on-one setting. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?

- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually filled with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
 - Are you making **disciples of others**?
 - Are you obeying the great commandment to **love**?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Introductory thoughts on transformational ministry

- Practical discipleship is about our disciples doing everything the Lord commanded.
- This part of discipleship is about transforming our character into the character of Christ.
- When dealing with bigger character deficits, it is often necessary to “take off” patterns of sin, flesh or ties before being able to “put on” Biblical character patterns.
- Smaller character transformations can take place in a group, since we sharpen and form each other in such a setting. However, patterns of sin, persistent fleshly behaviour and ties often require a one-on-one discipleship.
- The Apostle Paul did it this way. He explicitly describes the one-on-one discipleship in 1 Thessalonians 2:11-12 and in Acts 20:31.

1 Thessalonians 2:11-12

For you know that we dealt with each of you as a father deals with his own children, encouraging, comforting and urging you to live lives worthy of God, who calls you into his kingdom and glory.

Acts 20:31

So be on your guard! Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you (one-on-one) night and day with tears.

- We call this one-on-one part “transformational ministry”, “take off – put on” or “cycle of renewal”.

Introduction to the transformational ministry

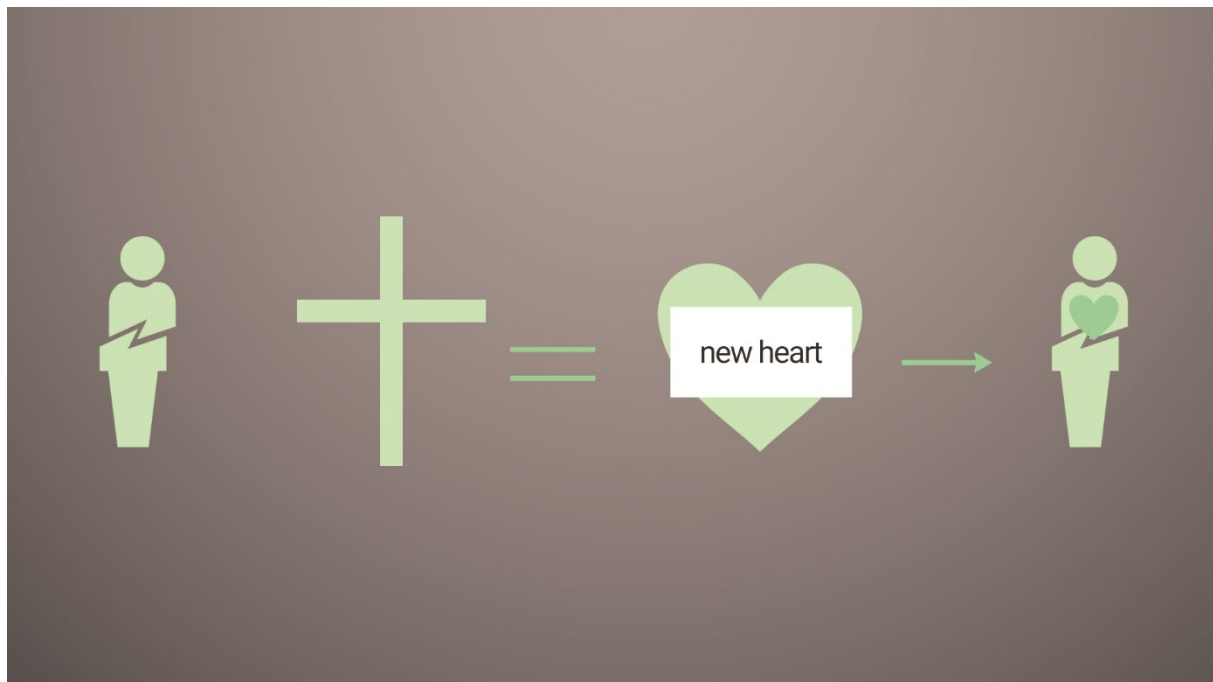
The day of conversion

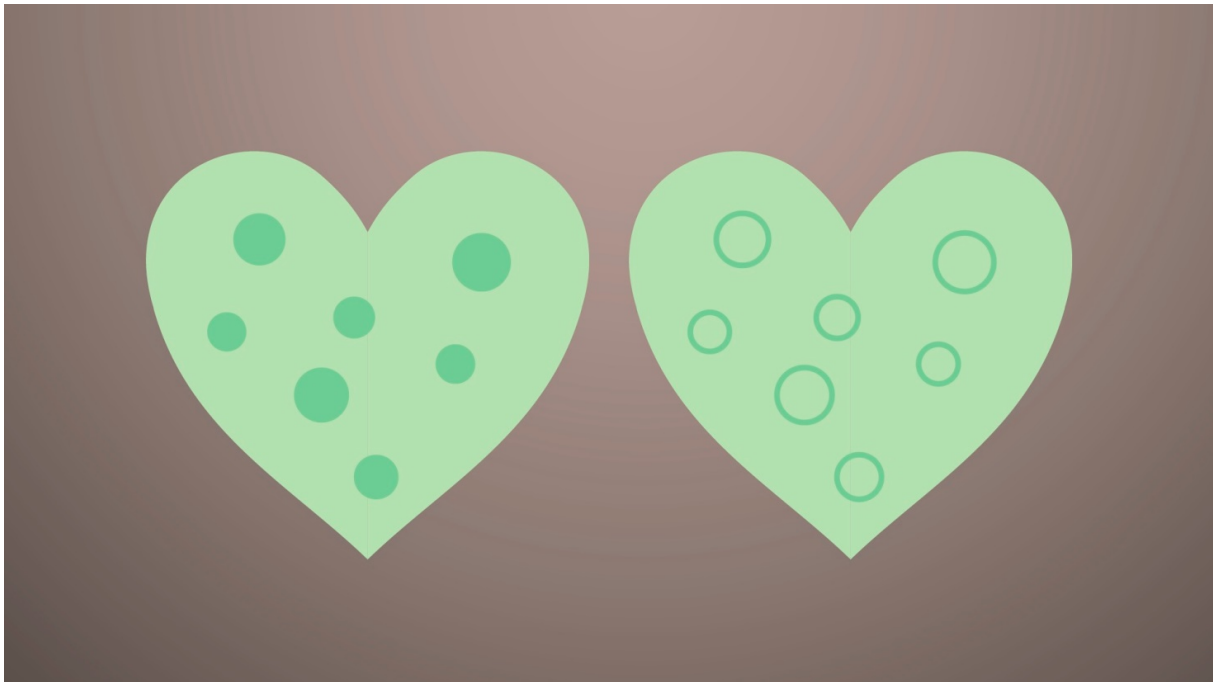
With our conversion we become a new creature. Something totally new begins and Christ comes into our lives.

2 Corinthians 5:17

Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, the new creation has come: The old has gone, the new is here!

- The Greek original text does not say that **everything** became new, but that **something new** began, and this is a new heart.



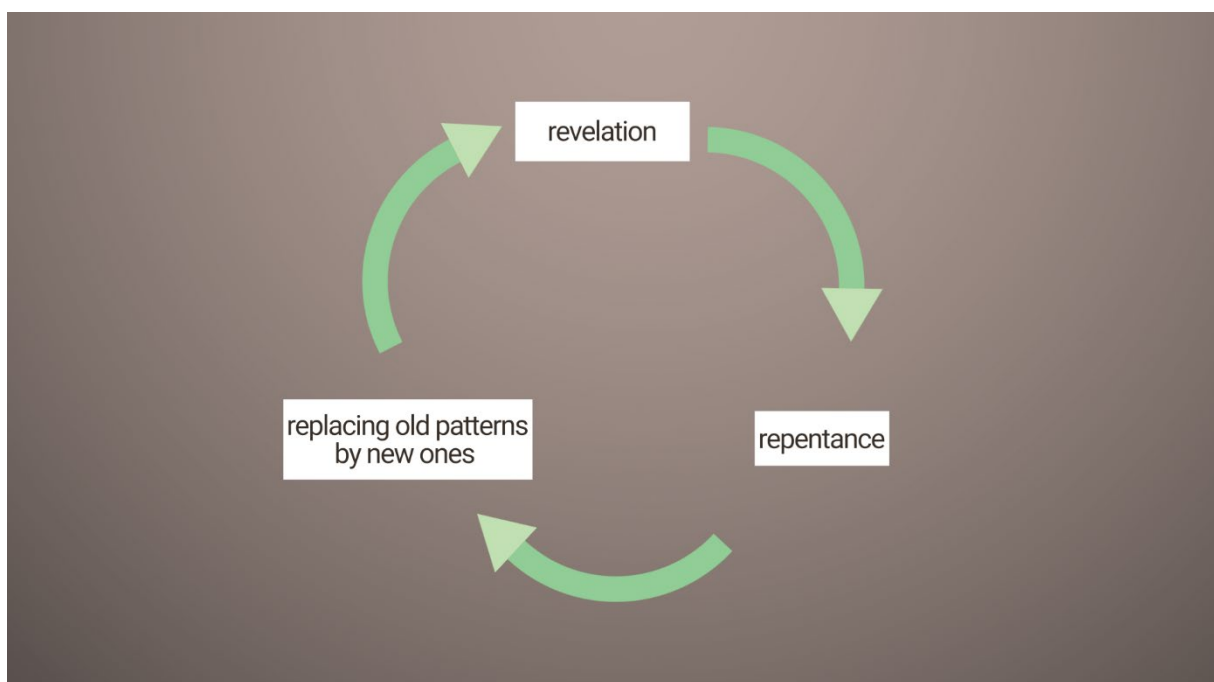


Although the heart was made new (all sins were forgiven), many old patterns of sin, of the flesh and ties still remain.

In order to take off these old patterns of sin, of the flesh and ties, and to put on new, Biblical character patterns, we need to guide our disciples through the cycle of renewal.

Acts 26:16-20

'Now get up (Paul) and stand on your feet. I have appeared to you to appoint you as a servant and as a witness of what you have seen and will see of me. I will rescue you from your own people and from the Gentiles. I am sending you to them to open their eyes and turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me.' "So then, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the vision from heaven. First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and then to the Gentiles, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and demonstrate their repentance by their deeds.

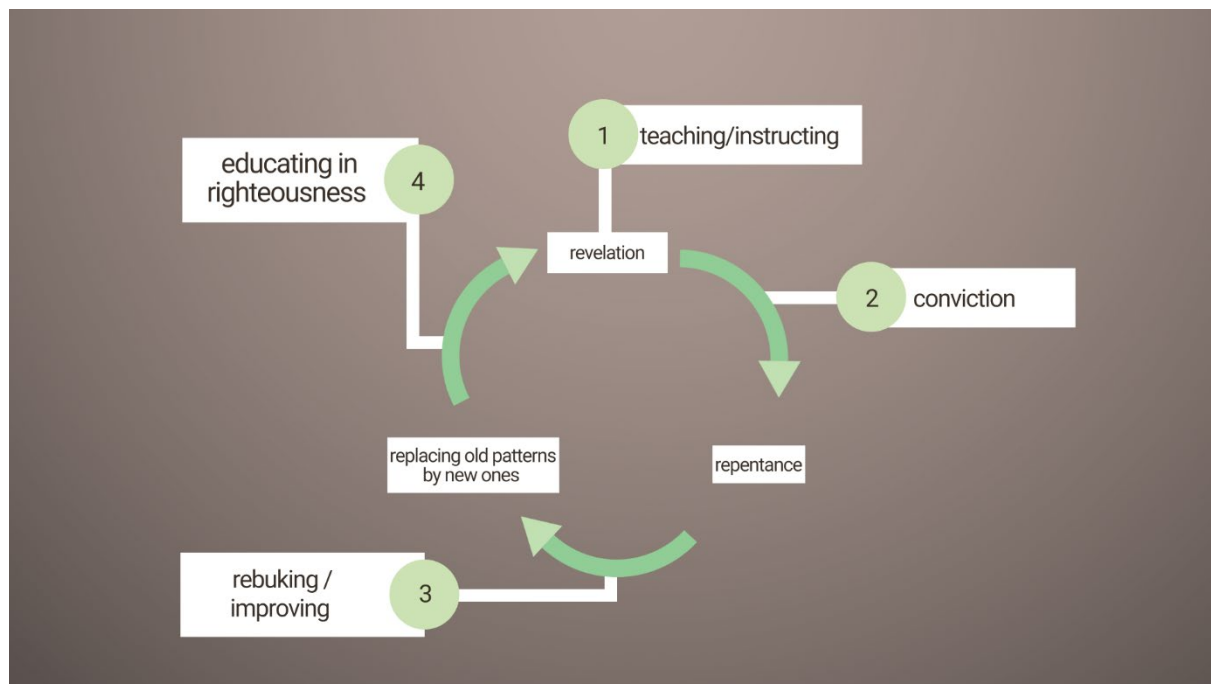


Here are the steps of the cycle of renewal:

2 Timothy 3:16-17

"All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful:"

1. for teaching → opening of eyes/revelation (the good we should do)
 2. for rebuking → repentance (the bad things we should stop doing)
 3. for correcting → improvement (what we should do better)
 4. and for training in righteousness → training (what we should keep working on)
- ... so that the servant of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.



1. Teaching

- The word of God together with the Spirit of God shows what Biblical and healthy conduct would look like and in which areas the disciples still have patterns of sin, flesh and ties.
- The wrong and the right behaviour are explained.
- The disciple is either convicted by Scripture while studying it, or we as disciple makers show them these patterns in their lives using the Word.

2. Rebuke

- The Holy Spirit then rebukes us and gives us the strong conviction that it is necessary to repent. In repenting, we then put off these patterns of sin, flesh and ties.

3. Correction

- The Spirit of God now fills these areas and awakens a desire in us to live a righteous life that pleases God.

4. Training in righteousness

- The Holy Spirit now gives us the strength to train and live out the new character patterns that please God.

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Key text:

Ephesians 4:17-32

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, and they are full of greed. That, however, is not the way of life you learned when you heard about Christ and were taught in him in accordance with the truth that is in Jesus. You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness. Therefore each of you must put off falsehood and speak truthfully to your neighbor, for we are all members of one body. "In your anger do not sin": Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold. Anyone who has been stealing must steal no longer, but must work, doing something useful with their own hands, that they may have something to share with those in need. Do not let any unwholesome talk come out of your mouths, but only what is helpful for building others up according to their needs, that it may benefit those who listen. And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, with whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger, brawling and slander, along with every form of malice. Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

Description of the old self

*So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live **as the Gentiles do (1)**, in the **futility of their thinking (2)**. They are **darkened in their understanding (3)** and **separated from the life of God (4)** because of the **ignorance that is in them (5)** due to the **hardening of their hearts (6)**. Having **lost all sensitivity (7)**, they have **given themselves over to sensuality (8)** so as to **indulge in every kind of impurity (9)**, and they are **full of greed (10)**.*

Knowing Christ – yet a lot of the old self remains in us

That, however, is not the way of life you learned when you heard about Christ and were taught in him in accordance with the truth that is in Jesus.

Taking off the old self and putting on the new self in 3 steps

1. Step: Conviction and repentance – take off

Verse 22: You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires.

2. Step: Renewal of the mind

Verse 23: ...to be made new in the attitude of your minds

Romans 12:2

Do not conform to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is—his good, pleasing and perfect will.

3. Step: Practicing the new – put on

Verse 24: ...and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

Ephesians 4:22-24

You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
 2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
 3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
 4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
 5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
 8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
 9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
 10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.
- In this training lesson, we as disciple makers want to tell from our own experience. We want to share, in all honesty, our experience with "put off – put on" in our spiritual lives. We tell them how it was in our lives and how it is today.
 - We as disciple makers demonstrate the things learned in a role-play. We tell of a current situation, in which we are in the process of putting off an old pattern and putting on a new one.
 - The disciples share in small groups and practice the cycle of renewal using a concrete example.
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: what they want to share with someone during the week.
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- This 13th lesson is about the process of holiness. This is a lifelong spiritual process.
- Since holiness is so central, we want to check the aspect of holiness and the “put off – put on” at every meeting with a short question.
- In this way we show our disciples that we chase after holiness, without which no one will see the Lord, our whole lives.

Hebrews 12:14

Make every effort to live in peace with everyone and to be holy; without holiness no one will see the Lord.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐

B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐

2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐

3. Look for persons of peace ☐

4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐

5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐

6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐

7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐

8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐

9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐

10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐

11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐

12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐

13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐

14. Continue to teach this 13th lesson to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

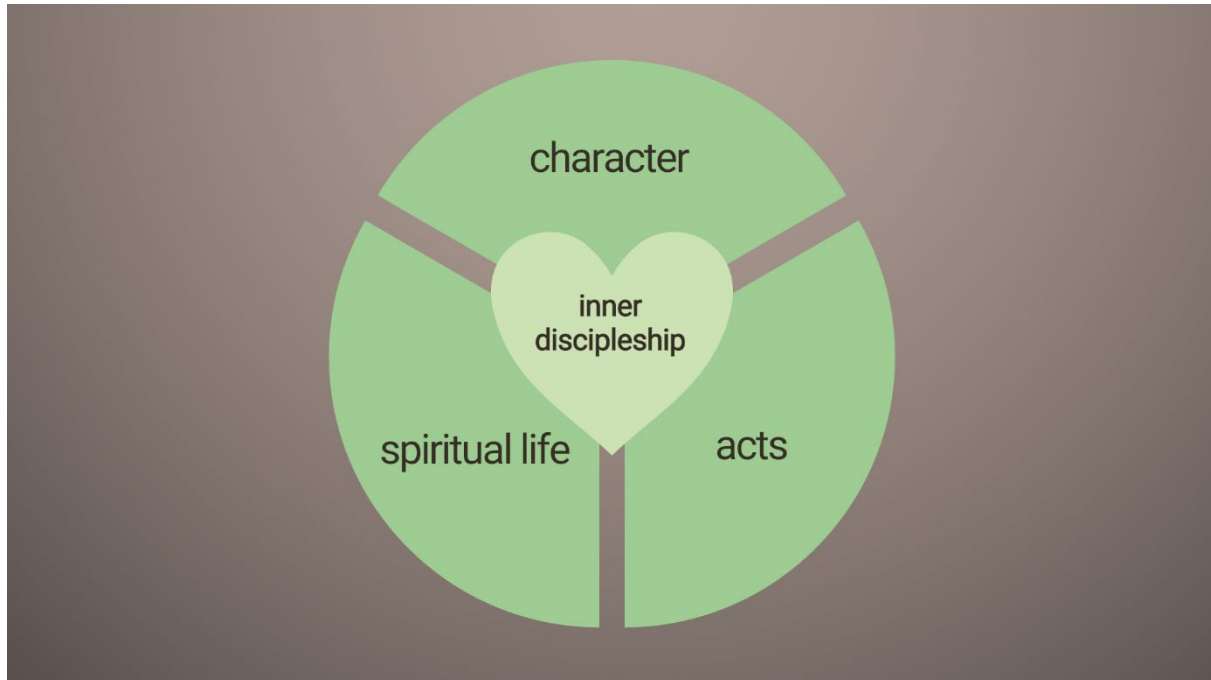
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 37

14. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple

C) Forgiveness



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: The topic of the 14th discipleship training lesson is a pastoral topic. Therefore, this part should take place in a one-on-one discipleship. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?
 - Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?

- Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
 - Are you making **disciples of others**?
 - Are you obeying **the great commandment to love**?
 - Do you strive for holiness (**take off – put on**) in your life?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Key texts on forgiveness

Matthew 18:21-35

Then Peter came to Jesus and asked, "Lord, how many times shall I forgive my brother or sister who sins against me? Up to seven times?" Jesus answered, "I tell you, not seven times, but seventy-seven times. "Therefore, the kingdom of heaven is like a king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. As he began the settlement, a man who owed him ten thousand bags of gold was brought to him. Since he was not able to pay, the master ordered that he and his wife and his children and all that he had be sold to repay the debt. "At this the servant fell on his knees before him. 'Be patient with me,' he begged, 'and I will pay back everything.' The servant's master took pity on him, canceled the debt and let him go. "But when that servant went out, he found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred silver coins. He grabbed him and began to choke him. 'Pay back what you owe me!' he demanded. "His fellow servant fell to his knees and begged him, 'Be patient with me, and I will pay it back.' "But he refused. Instead, he went off and had the man thrown into prison until he could pay the debt. When the other servants saw what had happened, they were outraged and went and told their master everything that had happened. "Then the master called the servant in. 'You wicked servant,' he said, 'I canceled all that debt of yours because you begged me to. Shouldn't you have had mercy on your fellow servant just as I had on you?' In anger his master handed him over to the jailers to be tortured, until he should pay back all he owed. "This is how my heavenly Father will treat each of you unless you forgive your brother or sister from your heart."

Matthew 6:14-15

For if you forgive other people when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive others their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins.

Forgiveness – Disciples forgive others just as God forgives them

- God, through Jesus, forgave a guilty sinner like me. In the same way, we should completely forgive those who sinned against us.
- If we do not forgive, the Heavenly Father will also withdraw his forgiveness and not forgive us.
- Forgiveness does not mean that what happened to us was right. Forgiveness means to surrender my “right” to take revenge on those who sinned against me. I surrender my “right” to repay wrong with wrong.
- Forgiveness is not a feeling but rather a decision. It is a step of obedience.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

Matthew 6:14-15

For if you forgive other people when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive others their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson**C) Implementation in the training room**

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.

- In this training lesson, we as disciple makers want to give a testimony about our experience with forgiveness in our spiritual lives.
- As disciple makers, we demonstrate the things learned in a role-play. Demonstrate a concrete situation in which you forgive someone right now.
- The disciples share in groups of two and practice forgiveness using a concrete example.
- Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
- Goal setting: what they want to share with someone during the week.
- Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
- Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
- Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
- Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- Go with a disciple through the practical process of forgiveness in his life.
- If necessary, go with your disciple to a person your disciple needs to forgive and coach him in this process of forgiveness.
- This 14th training lesson is about forgiveness in situations in which we were hurt. Since this will happen over and over, forgiveness remains a lifelong process.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this 14th lesson to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

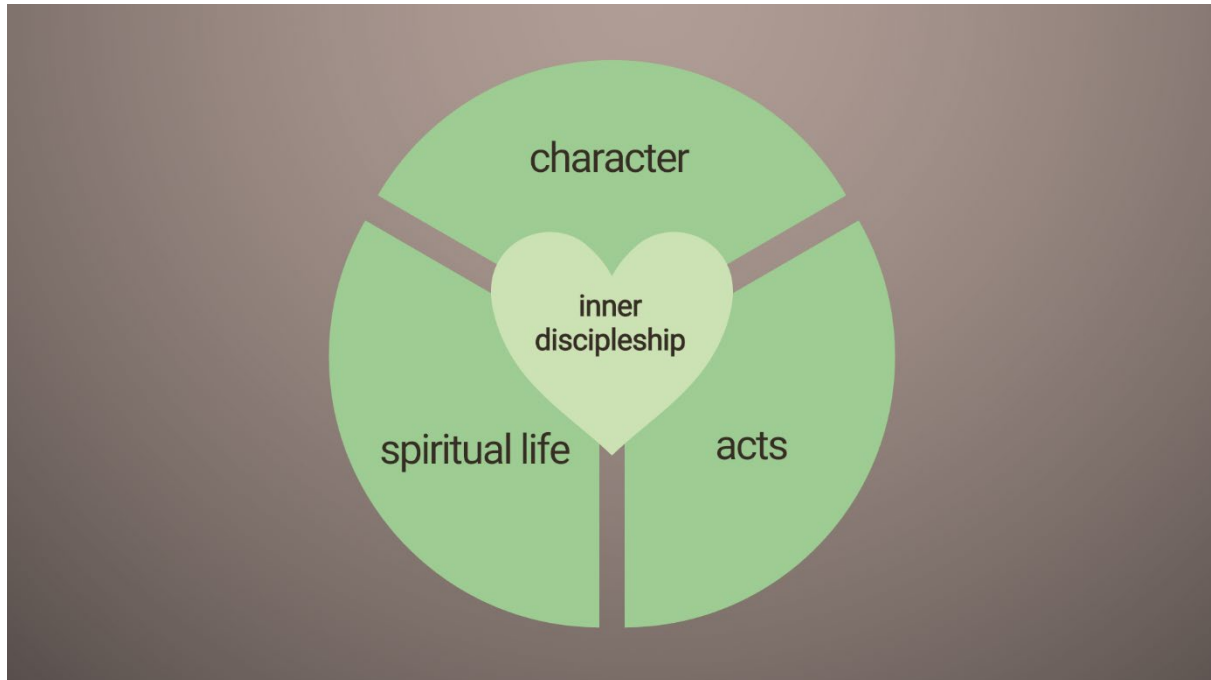
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 38



15. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple

D) Serving



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: The topic of this 15th discipleship training lesson can be taught in a group. Now we will go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Questions for giving an account on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?

- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
 - Are you making **disciples of others**?
 - Are you obeying **the great commandment to love**?
 - Do you strive for holiness (**put off – put on**) in your life?
 - Do you practice **forgiveness**?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart

Key texts on serving

Matthew 20:25-28

Jesus called them together and said, “You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their high officials exercise authority over them. Not so with you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be your slave—just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

1 Peter 4:10

Each of you should use whatever gift you have received to serve others, as faithful stewards of God’s grace in its various forms.

Ephesians 6:6-7

Obey them not only to win their favor when their eye is on you, but as slaves of Christ, doing the will of God from your heart. Serve wholeheartedly, as if you were serving the Lord, not people.

Serving - heart of a servant

- In this world there is a will to rule. In the Kingdom of God there should be a will to serve.
- Jesus turns the values upside down in the Kingdom of God. Success and career no longer count—it is all about serving.
- A disciple of Jesus should be recognized by his service to others.
- Serving and ruling is one and the same in the Kingdom of God.
- Jesus is our role model for serving.
- The Kingdom of God is built by serving.
- All sincere service is done for God.

Memory verse to learn by heart:

Matthew 20:26-27

Whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be your slave.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
 2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
 3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
 4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
 5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
 8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
 9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
 10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.
- In this training lesson, we as disciple makers want to give a testimony about our experience with service in our spiritual lives.
 - As disciple makers, we demonstrate the things learned in a role-play. Use a specific situation to demonstrate what it means to serve, for example by washing the feet of the disciples. In this way you can show what a serving attitude looks like.
 - The disciples share in groups and serve each other in a practical way.
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: what they want to share with someone during the week.
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- Use concrete opportunities to serve your disciples very practically when you are together with them, be it at home or on the way.
- Encourage your disciples to look for opportunities to serve practically when you are together with them.
- This 15th training lesson is about a serving attitude. This, too, is a lifelong spiritual process.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this 15th lesson to the discipleship group ☐

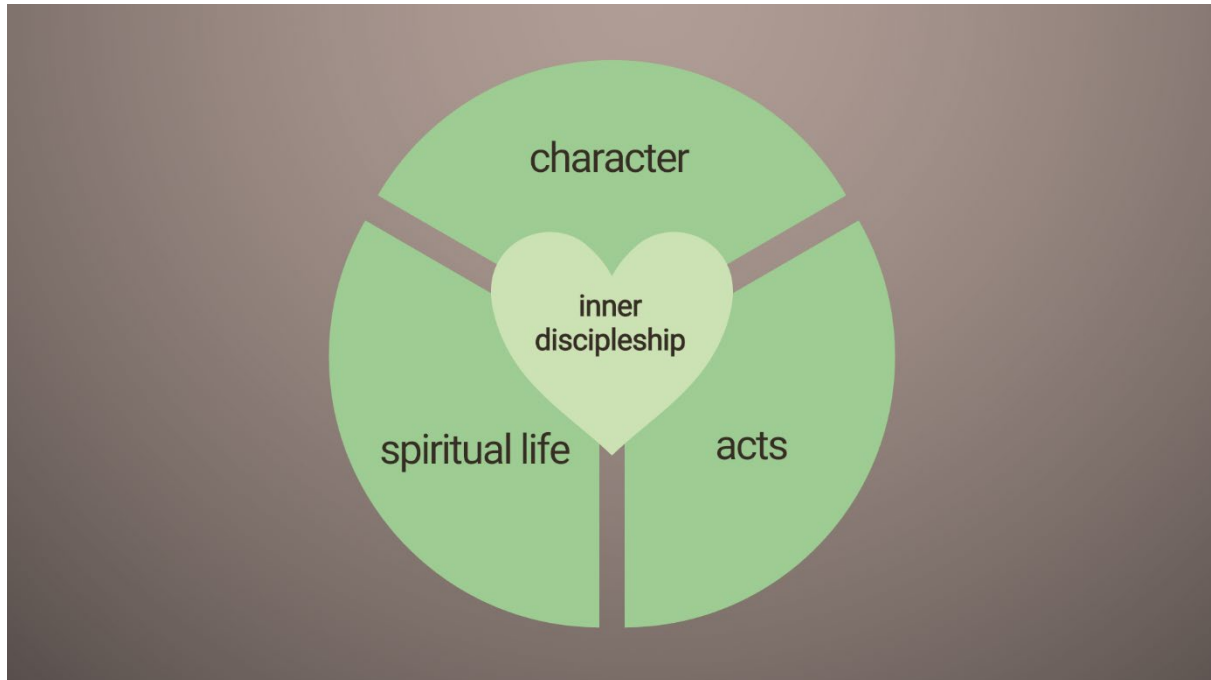
BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 39

16. Discipleship training lesson: Character of a disciple

E) Living by faith



For every discipleship training lesson we first need to clarify the following question: Does this lesson require one-on-one discipleship or can this be done with the whole discipleship group together?

Answer: The topic of this 16th discipleship training lesson can be taught in a group. Now will we go through this lesson according to the pattern of our discipleship scorecard.

The first part of the discipleship training lesson is personal care according to the pattern of the discipleship scorecard

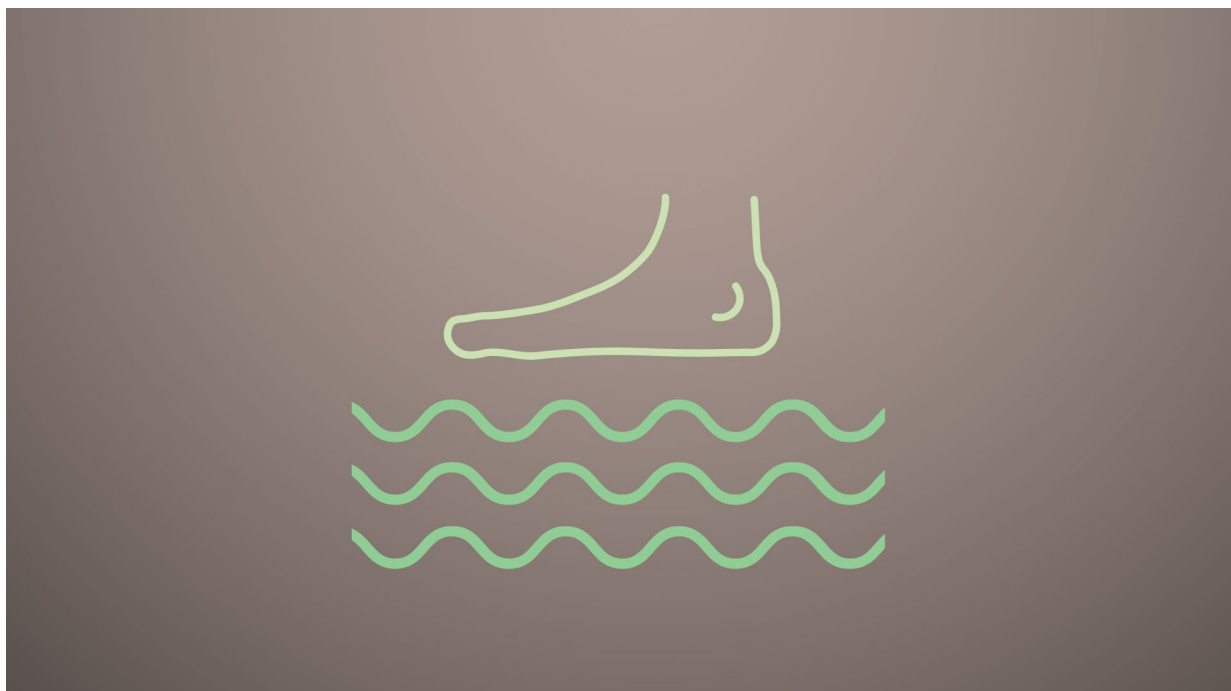
- 1) Questions about personal condition
 - How are you?
 - What did you learn from God this week?
 - How is your relationship with God?
 - What does your prayer life look like?
 - What are your needs?
- 2) Praise and worship
- 3) Accountability questions on following Jesus and the fishing of men
 - How are you obeying the word of God?
 - How did you put the last training lesson(s) into practice?

- Do you know the **grace of the Lord Jesus Christ** and the **love of the Father** and the **fellowship of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Did you do a **Discovery Bible Study** and what has the Lord spoken to you through the Word?
 - How is your **prayer** life?
 - Do you have joyful assurance **of salvation** in your heart?
 - How do you experience being continually **filled** with the Holy Spirit?
 - Do you live in regular **community** with other followers of Jesus?
 - Are you a **witness** for Jesus?
 - Are you **preaching** the gospel of the Kingdom of God?
 - Are you practicing the **ministry of the Holy Spirit**?
 - Are you generously **giving and sharing** your time, treasures, talents, etc. as a steward?
 - Are you making **disciples of others**?
 - Are you **obeying** the great commandment to **love**?
 - Do you strive for holiness (**put off – put on**) in your life?
 - Do you practice **forgiveness**?
 - Do you **serve** others?
- What is God doing in your life right now?
 - Are you a witness for Jesus?
 - With whom did you share what you learned?
 - Are they training others?
 - Is there something I can help you with?
 - How many new groups were started?
 - Retell the contents of the last lesson!

2nd part of the discipleship training lesson

B) Training/teaching from the Bible according to the following 4-steps-pattern:

1. Reading core texts twice
2. Summarizing core text(s) with your own words
3. Finding the key elements in the texts
4. Learning memory verse(s) by heart



Key texts on living by faith

Acts 16:31

They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household."

Romans 10:14-17

How, then, can they call on the one they have not believed in? And how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them? And how can anyone preach unless they are sent? As it is written: "How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!" But not all the Israelites accepted the good news. For Isaiah says, "Lord, who has believed our message?" Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ.

Hebrews 11:2+6

Now faith is confidence in what we hope for and assurance about what we do not see. This is what the ancients were commended for.

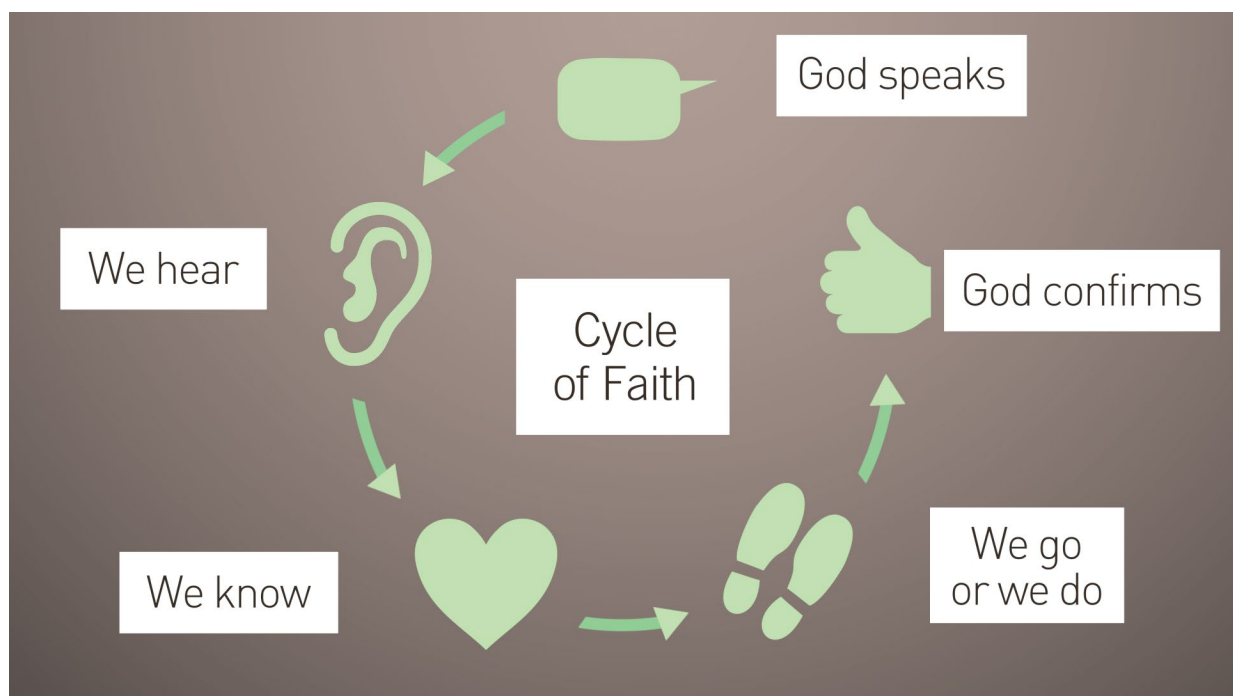
And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

Mark 9:23

"If you can?" said Jesus. "Everything is possible for one who believes."

Living by faith – key principle in the Kingdom of God

- Without faith there is no salvation.
- Faith comes from the Word/speaking of God, not from witnessing miracles or other occurrences.
- Faith is an assurance of the heart.
- Faith is the key principle in the Kingdom of God. Nothing happens without faith.
- All things are possible for him who has faith. This means that faith in and of itself is invisible, but the consequence of faith is visible, perceivable and can be experienced in space and time. This happens in the so-called faith cycle.



Memory verse to learn by heart:

Romans 10:17

Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word about Christ.

3rd part of the discipleship training lesson

C) Implementation in the training room

1. As disciple makers we tell about our experiences and demonstrate the things learned in a role-play.
 2. Divide the discipleship group into smaller groups of 2 to 3 people. Every group should do a role-play.
 3. Retelling and repeating the teaching.
 4. Setting a goal: What do they want to share with someone in the coming week?
 5. Encouragement to share the lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 6. Pray together with the disciples: Praying for the needs of the people they want to share their testimony with.
 7. Pray that friends of the disciples would be open for Jesus and make a decision for him.
 8. Pray together with the disciples: for those they want to share the training lesson with.
 9. Prayerfully listen with your disciples: What goals do they want to accomplish by the next meeting?
 10. Pray together with the disciples: for every trainee and for their ministry of sending.
- In this training lesson, we as disciple makers want to tell of our lessons in faith, of our victories and defeats.
 - As disciple makers, we demonstrate the things learned in a role-play. Tell about a concrete situation God spoke to you about, and which you have faith in and are waiting for its fulfilment, while proclaiming the word the Lord has given you.
 - The discipleship group or a disciple makes a list of faith lessons he currently is in:
 - Column A: What did the Lord say?
 - Column B: How did you hear him?
 - Column C: What do you know in your heart?
 - Column D: Which steps/deeds of faith have you made in reaction to it?
 - Column E: How did the Lord respond to this step of faith?
 - As disciple maker, you should encourage, accompany and coach your disciple in these steps of faith.
 - Then someone from the group retells the teaching in his own words.
 - Goal setting: what they want to share with someone during the week.
 - Encouragement to share this lesson with one's own (spiritual) family.
 - Pray together with the disciples for those they want to share their testimony with.
 - Prayerfully listen with your disciples what the goals of this lesson are for the coming days.
 - Pray for every trainee and for their sending ministry.

4th part of the discipleship training lesson

D) Implementation in the field

1. We go and show/practice it – the disciples watch and learn.
2. The disciples practice and we watch (and correct if necessary)
3. The disciples demonstrate it to their disciples who watch them...
4. It may be necessary to demonstrate some parts several times (10, 20, 50 times).

Demonstrating, training, practicing and repeating the following:

- Share with your disciples the current challenges, struggles and victories in your faith when you are together with them, be it at home or on the way.
- When you are together with your disciples, let them share their challenges in the faith (struggles and victories) with you. Encourage, accompany and coach them in these processes.
- This 16th training lesson deals with faith, a lifelong spiritual process.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Regular prayer (4 to 6 hours/week), going and preaching (4 to 6 hours/week), discipleship (4 to 6 hours/week).

1. PRAYER:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
- 14. Continue to teach this 16th lesson to the discipleship group ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training lesson	Texts	Learning Points	Implementation IN	Implementation OUT
Inner discipleship 	2 Cor 13.13	Real conversion: Grace of Christ + Love of the Father + fellowship of the Holy Spirit	We check by asking. We complete the conversion (Acts 19.1-8).	
1. Bible reading DBS	2 Tim 3.16 / Luke 6.46-49 Rom 10.17	Hearing and doing is obedience. I will Statement / self-nourishing from the word.	We make DBS and teach our disciples to do DBS.	Evangelistic DBS with seekers Inspiring DBS with disciples
2. Personal prayer	Mt 6.5-13	Our Father = pray to the Father «Your name, your Kingdom = Praise & worship Your will = answer to prayer. Give = request Forgiving = Repentance»	We demonstrate how to pray and then pray with our disciples together.	We go with disciples for prayer walks, meeting disciples for prayer meetings, early prayers etc.
3. Giving testimony	Acts 22.1-22 / 26.1-29 / Mt 10.32+33 / 1 John 1.1-3 Acts 1.4+8	3 Parts: A) Life without Christ B) How found Jesus C) Life with Jesus	We give our testimony. Disciples write their testimony A) 3-5min. B) 5-15min. C) 15-30min. testimony	Outreach and testify to some seekers
4. Preach the gospel of the Kingdom	Mk 16.15-20 / Luke 10.1-4 Mt 10.7 / 1 Tim 2.3-4 2 Tim 4.1-5 / Acts 10.36-43	1. Jesus is Saviour and Lord (10 characteristics) 2. From Creation to Salvation 3. The call to follow Christ	We preach and disciples listen. Then the disciples write their version and preach.	We go out with our disciples to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom
5. Forgiveness	Mt 18.21-35 / Mt 6.14-15	A) If remorse-repentance -> Let it go = no revenge B) If no remorse-repentance -> complain before God and let it go	We share where and how we deal with forgiveness and how we practised it. Then we do it with the disciples	Together with disciples, we visit people who want forgiveness from us
6. Transformational Ministry	Acts 26.16-20 / 2 Tim 3.16-17 Eph 4.17-32	Circle of Renewal: revelation, conviction, repentance, change our minds, practice the new pattern	Report where and how we went through the cycle of renewal.	We go out and ask people if they have AS and give testimony of our AS
7. Assurance of salvation	1 Joh 5.13 / 1 Joh 3.13 Ro 8.16 / Job 19.25	«This things I have written so that you will know» Assurance of salvation is a knowledge in the heart.	We report how we received assurance of salvation and check our disciples AoS.	We start a CoF with our disciples
8. Living in Community	Acts 2.42-47	The 4 core values and 8 other important values of a NT Community of Faith	We explain how we live CoF out. We practise a CoF.-Meeting	Together with our disciples we start a CoF.
9. Be filled with the Holy Spirit	Eph 5.18-19 / Joh 7.37-39 / Joh 4.14 / Acts 4.29-31 Acts 13.50-52 / Luke 11.9-13 1 Thess 5.19	There is the regularly daily filling with the Holy Spirit. It could be compared to breathing.	We tell how we experience the regular filling with Holy Spirit. We practice it with the disciples.	Again and again we have times to be filled with the HS with our disciples
10. Ministry of the Holy Spirit	Mt 10.8 / Lk 9.1-2 Mk 16.15-18 / Mt 10.8 Lk 9.1 / Mk 6.7 / Ro 15.15-21	We have authority (exousia) and power (dynamis). It is our right and duty to practise and exercise it with words of authority.	We tell how we practice our experience the ministry of the Holy Spirit. We demonstrate and do a roleplay.	We often do outreach and demonstrate modeling-practicing Ministry of HS with our disciples
Guidance of the Holy Spirit	Mt 10.5-6 / Lk 9.6 + 10.1 Is 30.21 / Job 33.14 Joh 5.19-20 + 16.13 + 10.27	It is normal for every believer and one of the spiritual birthrights to hear the voice of the Lord and be led by the Holy Spirit.	We tell how we experience the speaking and the guidance of the Holy Spirit- We do listening times.	We make listening times (e.g., during the Prayer walk) outreach with listening times e.g. Treasure hunt.
11. Make Disciples	Mt 28.18-20 2 Tim 2.2	Discipleship is doing the commandments of Christ. Discipleship means being transformed into the image of Christ.	We are in a process with our disciples. 1. Cor 11.1 Follow my example like I follow the example of Christ.	We continue to disciple our disciples and they do the same with their disciples.
12. Love God and your neighbour	Mt 22.37-39 / Lev 19.18 1 Joh 4.16+5.3 / Rev 2.4-5 Joh 3.16 / Eph 5.25 Joh 15.13 / 1 Joh 3.16 1 Joh 5.3	God is love. Loving is the meaning of life. Loving God means putting him everywhere on the 1st place. Love gives himself. To love God means to keep his commandments. Love is a commandment	Testify where we struggling with putting God at the first place. Testify where it's difficult to keep commandments. Give example, how you practiced love.	We go together on outreach and see where and to whom we can give love or do good deeds. Our disciples do the same.
13. Giving and sharing	Acts 2.44-45+4.32-37 Mk 12.41-46 / Mt 16.25 Luke 6.38	In the Kingdom loving means giving. Giving is more blessed than receiving. We are stewards of our goods.	Report like we practise giving. Give something to the most needy among you.	We go out together and practice generous giving as stewards.
14. Serving	Mt 20.25-28 / 1 Pet 4.10 Eph 6.6-7	In the world desire to rule. In the Kingdom is serve. Disciples should serve in the Kingdom. Serving is ruling. Jesus is the model. All serving is for God.	We report how we serve. We demonstrate it by washing their feet.	Outreach: looking specific occasions to serve in a very practical way, let the disciples recognize possibilities where they can serve.
15. Living by faith	Acts 16.31 / Ro 10.14-17 Heb 11.2+6 / Mk 9.23	Without faith there is no salvation. Faith through the word of God gives assurance in the heart. Nothing is impossible for Faith. Circle of Faith	We speak of our faith lessons, our victories and fails. Illustration of the Circle of Faith.	On outreach, share your faith challenges and your victories, where you'll just be in at the moment. Coach them in their challenges.



Training Unit 40

Community of faith

The Jesus Model

Review

- In this 40th training lesson we come to the fourth main part of the sending training.
- The first part dealt with the requirements for properly practicing the ministry of sending, especially the power of the Holy Spirit and the prayer for the harvest.
- In the second part, we looked at the first 9 of 10 commandments of sending.
- The third part addressed the 10th commandment of sending in a very practical way, the commandment to make disciples of all ethnic groups.

Preview

- This fourth part looks at the community of disciples.
- Our disciples should start a discipleship group themselves while we are discipling them. There are a few terms used to describe such a group:
 - Discipleship group
 - Spiritual family
 - Community of faith
 - House church

Definitions

1. Discipleship group

This is a group of new believers who have been baptized in water and in the Holy Spirit. They are regularly discipled as a group. In the New Testament, these discipleship groups are not yet called a church.

2. Spiritual family, community of faith

When a discipleship group makes a committed decision to live out Acts 2:42-47 together, we call them a spiritual family or a community of faith. The New Testament calls such a group a “church that meets at their house”.

1 Corinthians 16:19

Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

In our everyday lives, we would call this a (nuclear/core) family.

3. House church/networked house church

When a group of 3 to 5 house churches, communities of faith or spiritual families join together and have designated leadership (elders and deacons), we call it a networked house church. In our everyday lives, one would call such related groups of core families a clan.

For this sending training, we strongly hold on to the words of Jesus in the Gospel of John:

John 20:21

As the Father has sent me, I am sending you.

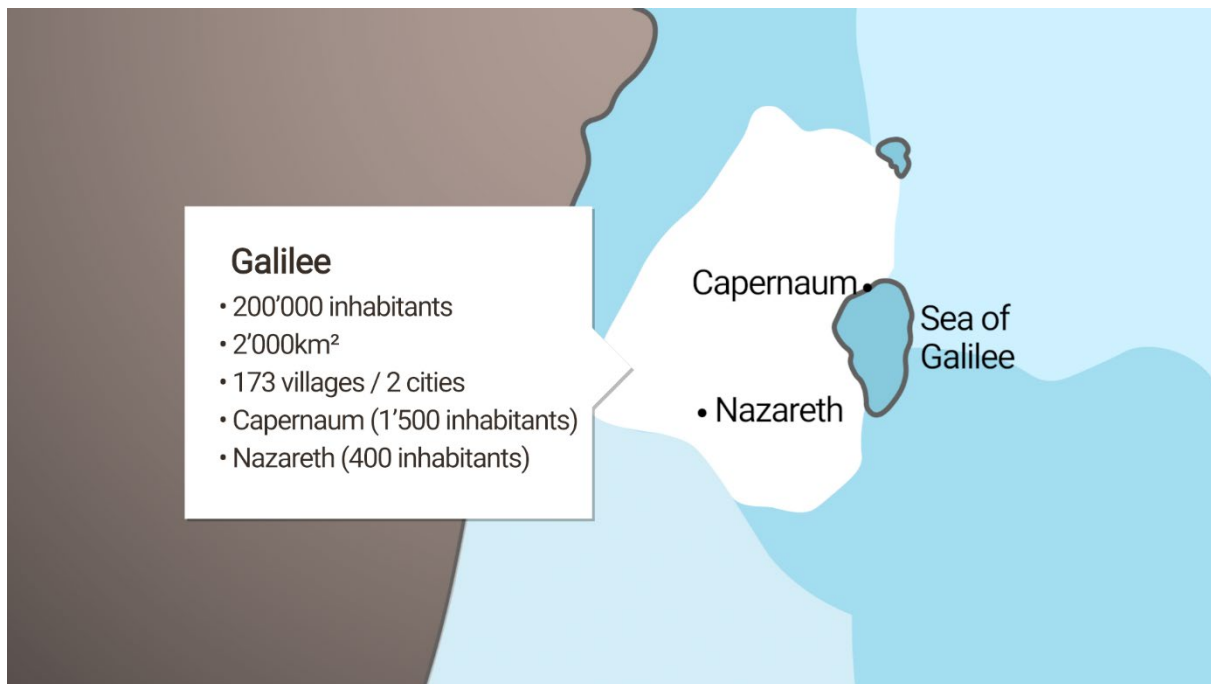
John 17:18

As you sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world.

- The Lord himself is *the* sent one.
- He is our role model in all steps of the sending.
- We should learn from him. We want to conduct our ministry just as he did.

The Jesus model

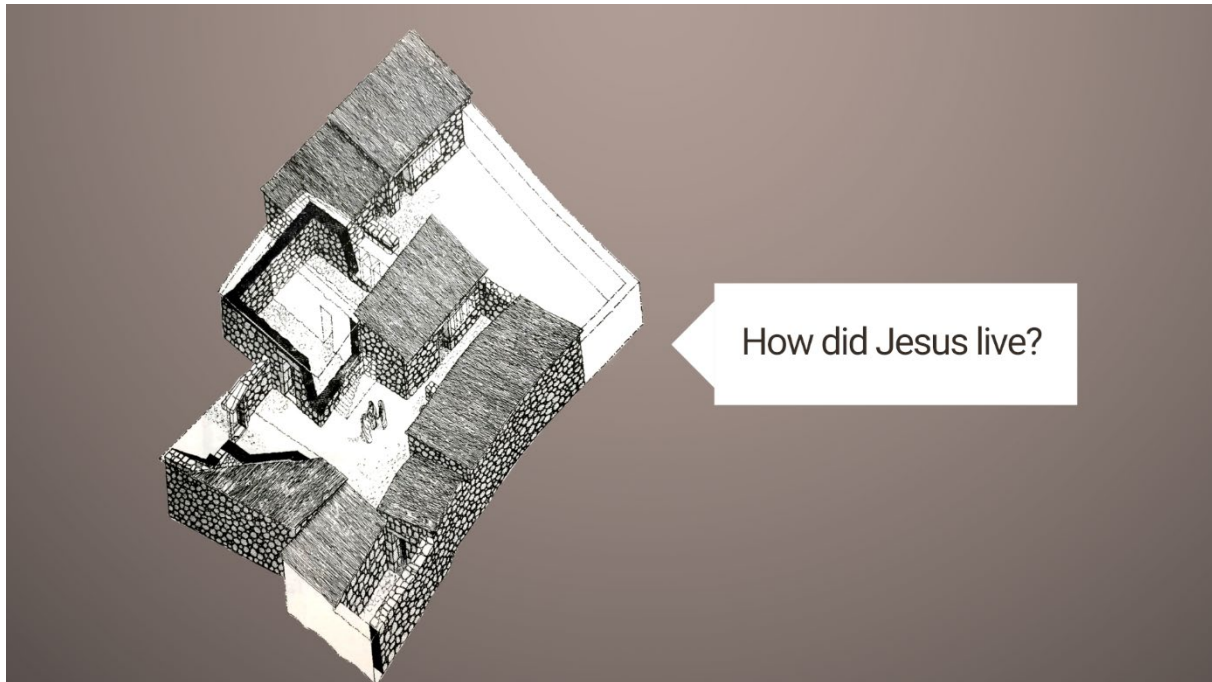
- In his ministry of sending, Jesus called 12 disciples, formed a community and shared his life with them.
- Sharing his life was the natural setting for discipleship.
- Jesus did not make a distinction between discipleship and community.



Jesus conducted his ministry of sending mainly in Galilee.

Matthew 4:13

Leaving Nazareth, he went and lived in Capernaum, which was by the lake in the area of Zebulun and Naphtali.



The starting point and place where Jesus and his disciples lived was Peter's house in Capernaum. Jesus' example is clear: he shared his life with his disciples and formed a purpose-built community with them; a discipleship group so to say.

With this community of disciples, he lived in different houses:

Matthew 8:14-15

When Jesus came into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-in-law lying in bed with a fever. He touched her hand and the fever left her, and she got up and began to serve him.

Luke 10:38-40

As Jesus and his disciples were on their way, he came to a village where a woman named Martha opened her home to him. She had a sister called Mary, who sat at the Lord's feet listening to what he said. But Martha was distracted by all the preparations that had to be made.

Together with the discipleship group, he also went on outreaches:

Matthew 11:1

After Jesus had finished instructing his twelve disciples, he went on from there to teach and preach in the towns of Galilee.

The goal of sending

The goal of the ministry of sending is not only to make disciples, but also to train disciples to live out their faith together within a community. The goal is to have a community of faith!

God himself is a family

- ⇒ God the Father
- ⇒ God the Son
- ⇒ God the Holy Spirit, who seals the bride
- The final and ultimate goal of God is to live as a spiritual family. It is the last goal that is described in the book of revelation.
- A divine-human family.
- At the end, when God makes a new heaven and a new earth and when we are living on the new earth together with Christ, the Father himself will come and live with us. We will be a family.
- God the Father, God the Son, who will be married to the bride (the church = daughter-in-law), and the Holy Spirit, who also will be sealed with the bride. We will be a divine family, a family of love.
- This, in a sense, is already beginning here and now as we form a community of faith with our disciples. A family of love is being formed.
- Being a triune God, God himself is a family. That is why God loves family and created family.
- We could say that family is the goal of God.

Such a spiritual family is called a “house church” in the New Testament. These are churches that are formed like families, look like families, function like families and meet in houses. These discipleship communities are also called spiritual households in the New Testament. Thus, the goal of the ministry of sending is not only to win and train individual disciples. The main aim is to call men and women to follow Jesus and train them in discipleship groups. These discipleship groups are the place where a big part of the discipleship happens. Iron sharpens iron.

Committed discipleship groups are also known as:

- ⇒ Communities of faith
- ⇒ Spiritual families
- ⇒ Church in a house

This reflects the model of Jesus precisely. This community of disciples meeting in houses and sharing their lives was the church for Jesus. To describe these spiritual families, Jesus and later his disciples, used words and names derived from family language:

- ⇒ One is born into a family.

John 3:3

Jesus answered him, “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again he cannot see the kingdom of God.”

- ⇒ In a family, people are referred to as children, fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters. Jesus, John and Paul also used this language:

Matthew 12:47-50

Someone told him, "Your mother and brothers are standing outside, wanting to speak to you." He replied to him, "Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?" Pointing to his disciples, he said, "Here are my mother and my brothers. For whoever does the will of my Father in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

1 John 2:12-13

I am writing to you, dear children, because your sins have been forgiven on account of his name. I am writing to you, fathers, because you know him who is from the beginning. I am writing to you, young men, because you have overcome the evil one.

Ephesians 2:19

Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and strangers, but fellow citizens with God's people and also members of his household,

During New Testament times, these committed house churches met in different houses like natural families. The groups met regularly to:

1. Study the word of God
2. Have fellowship with one another
3. To have meals together and celebrate the Lord's Supper
4. To pray

Groups that are committed to doing this together are described as churches that meet in houses.

The churches of the New Testament met in houses

Acts 2:46-47

Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved.

Acts 5:42

Day after day, in the temple courts and from house to house, they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the good news that Jesus is the Messiah.

1 Corinthians 16:19

The churches in the province of Asia send you greetings. Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

What is a New Testament church?

There are multiple different illustrations of a church in the New Testament:

- The image of the church as a bride
- The image of the church as a flock
- The image of the church as a body
- The image of the church as a field of God
- The image of the church as a building
- The image of the church as a human body
- The image of the church as a light

All these images reflect different aspects of the nature and the tasks of the church. However, the central image is: the church as a family, a community of faith, a family of love.

Definition

Church is a community of faith that meets in houses (and in the temple, which was a public space).

The evolution of the church in the course of church history

1. Jesus lived in fellowship with his twelve disciples in a discipleship group.
2. After the birth of the church at Pentecost, and in the following decades, almost all churches in Jerusalem, Corinth, Ephesus and Rome were “churches in the house”. They were spiritual families, communities of faith. There were no buildings, no pulpits, no priests and no pastors.
3. About 300 years later, between 312 and 380 A.D., the Roman emperor Constantine and Theodosius made Christianity the state religion of the Roman Empire. Now the appearance and the nature of the church changed. A new kind of church with buildings, church services and priests were introduced. From then on, church ceased to be primarily a community of faith. The new focus was the church service on Sunday morning. It was a holy meeting on a holy day with special activities lead by a holy, professional priest.
4. A new understanding evolved: church is no longer a spiritual family that meets in houses, but a holy meeting on Sunday. This new understanding was preserved through time until today and in most places around the world.
5. Now, with the rediscovery of the ministry of sending and the discipleship commandment, we also see a revival of the New Testament model of church a discipleship group, spiritual family or church in the house.

Church is a spiritual family

The Apostle Paul writes in Ephesians 5 that the marriage between husband and wife reflects in a mysterious way the intimate relationship between Christ and his bride, his church.

Ephesians 5:31-33

“For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh.” (Genesis 2:24) This is a profound mystery—but I am talking about Christ and the church. However, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband.”

Concerning the family, there is also an inner analogy, a connection between how a natural family and a community of faith functions. There are reasons to assume that the Lord created the natural family, which we can experience, so that we could understand more easily how the community of faith functions.

Comparison: natural and spiritual families

What are the five most important values and roles of the natural and the spiritual family?

Natural family: 5 core values	Spiritual family: 5 core values
1. Relationship characterized by love and trust	1. Relationship characterized by love and trust (fellowship)
2. Creating and training children	2. Creating and training children (evangelism and discipleship)
3. Eating together	3. Eating together and celebrating the Lord's Supper
4. Sharing everything, supporting each other, serving each other	4. Sharing everything, supporting each other, serving each other
5. Adult children marry and start new families of their own	5. Adult children (disciples) marry and start a new family of their own (house church)

The core values of the natural family are like the core values of the community of faith.

Which model shall we use?

How did Jesus live in a community of faith and which church model should we use in the ministry of sending? There is no doubt that we should gather the disciples into discipleship groups, communities of faith and churches that meet in houses.

It is very important that our disciples are at home in such a community of faith. Only there, do some spiritual processes take place that are important for discipleship. Many values we have looked at often cannot be lived out in a big congregation and therefore also can't be “planted”.

Spiritual processes and values that only take place in communities of faith

1. God himself is a real community. This part of the nature of God can only be expressed by a real spiritual family a community of faith.
2. "Love requires a you" (Martin Buber). Love requires a counterpart. Love should become practical. Love requires real fellowship to express itself, to be lived and recognized.
3. It is not possible to separate discipleship and fellowship. Some aspects of discipleship can only be lived and experienced in a community of faith, because there is an atmosphere of trust and love. A few of these aspects are:
 - General character formation
 - Practicing honouring one another
 - Practicing esteeming others higher than oneself
 - Practicing conflict ability, forgiveness and reconciliation
 - Practicing complementing one another

That is why it is important to not only make disciples, but also to bring forth whole spiritual families.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

From here on, we need to divide the time we use for the sending in a new way: prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
- B) From now on pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- C) From now on, pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
- 2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
- 3. Look for persons of peace ☐
- 4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
- 5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
- 6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
- 7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
- 8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
- 9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
- 10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
- 11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
- 12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
- 13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐
- 14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
- 15. Discuss this lesson with your disciples and "officially" form a committed discipleship group with them and then meet regularly as discipleship group to...
 - 1. Eat together and celebrate the Lord's Supper
 - 2. Share what is going well and where there are difficulties
 - 3. Read the Bible text together
 - 4. Pray together ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 41



Community of faith

12 core functions of a community of faith (1-4)

Definitions

1. Discipleship group

This is a group of new believers who have been baptized in water and in the Holy Spirit. They are regularly discipled as a group. In the New Testament, these discipleship groups are not yet called a church.

2. Spiritual family or community of faith

When a discipleship group makes a committed decision to live out Acts 2:42-47 together, we call them a spiritual family or a community of faith. The New Testament calls such a group a “church that meets at their house”.

1 Corinthians 16:19

Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

In our everyday lives, we would call this a (nuclear/core) family.

3. House church/networked house church

When a group of 3 to 5 house churches, communities of faith or spiritual families join together and have leadership (elders and deacons), we call it a networked house church. In our everyday lives, one would call such related groups of core families a clan.

Jesus, The Sent One

Jesus was the first sent one. All important things about the ministry of sending can be learned from him. For every step in the ministry of sending, Jesus is our example.

1. We see how he went out and called a group of disciples. The following example shows how Jesus called five disciples.

John 1:35-49

The next day John was there again with two of his disciples. When he saw Jesus passing by, he said, “Look, the Lamb of God!” When the two disciples heard him say this, they followed Jesus. ... Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother, was one of the two who heard what John had said and who had followed Jesus. The first thing Andrew did was to find his brother Simon and tell him, “We have found the Messiah” (that is, the Christ). And he brought him to Jesus. ... The next day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. Finding Philip, he said to him, “Follow me.” Philip, like Andrew and Peter, was from the town of Bethsaida. Philip found Nathanael and told him, “We have found the one Moses wrote about in the Law, and about whom the prophets also wrote—Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph” ... “Come and see,” said Philip. ... Nathanael declared, “Rabbi, you are the Son of God; you are the king of Israel.”

2. Jesus trained these 12 disciples as a group in houses and on the road, in villages and towns, because full discipleship can only happen within a community. It is not possible to separate discipleship and community.
 3. Therefore, Jesus formed a community with these 12 disciples. This discipleship group was Jesus' spiritual family ("these are my brothers"). It was his church.
 4. When Jesus returned to the Heavenly Father, he sent his disciples out and they preached the gospel of the Kingdom of God. They planted and formed churches that met in houses.
- How does a New Testament house church function?
 - What do the meetings look like?
 - What does a house church do practically?

The core text about the New Testament church

Acts 2:42-47

And they continued steadfastly (1) in the apostles' doctrine and (2) fellowship, and in (3) breaking of bread, and in (4) prayers. And fear came upon every soul: and many (5) wonders and signs were done by the apostles. And all that believed were together, and (6) had all things common; And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, (7) as every man had need. And they, continuing daily (8) with one accord (9) in the temple, and breaking bread (10) from house to house, did (11) eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, (12) Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

The twelve core values of the community of faith



How a community of faith is planted

1. In the ministry of sending, we look for a person of peace. This could be in the form of an individual, a household or a group of people.
2. After we explain the gospel of the Kingdom of God to this group, we baptize them and start to disciple them as a discipleship group.
3. During the discipleship meetings or in extra meetings (predecessors to house church meetings), in which we do not necessarily teach a discipleship lesson, we begin to 1) hold a Discovery Bible Study (DBS), (2) share about our lives and (3) we pray for one another.
4. These three spiritual fields are essential aspects of a community of faith.
5. This is like a pre-version of a community of faith.
6. Already at an early stage in the discipleship process we begin to look at, teach and understand the core text from Acts 2:42-47 together with the discipleship group.
7. As soon as the discipleship group has understood the 12 core values of a New Testament house church and is ready to live these values in a committed way, the time has NOW come to start a community of faith.
8. The actual formation of a community of faith can be done with a simple ceremony.
9. Every participant of the discipleship group declares before God that he wants to live the twelve values with the other group members in a committed way. The community of faith is established with this mutual commitment and vow.
10. Before we look at these values with our disciples and before they make a commitment to live them together, we want to understand the 12 core functions of a church that meets in houses.

The first four core values form the centre and heart of a community of faith.



1. They devoted themselves to the apostles' teachings

Acts 2:42

They devoted themselves to the (1) apostles' teaching and to (2) fellowship, to the (3) breaking of bread and to (4) prayer.

- They remained within the teaching of the Apostles. This means that they held onto the word of God, they occupied themselves continually with the Word in different ways, because faith comes by hearing of the word of God. However, we do not only want to hear but to do as well. Discipleship is all about hearing the word of God and carrying it out in faith.
- For example, we hold a practical Discovery Bible Study (DBS) as a group (see Unit 12).
- Studying the word of God together should be an important part of every house church meeting.
- Actually, this core value is the core value of discipleship.
- This part probably requires at least 30 minutes of a house church meeting.

2. They devoted themselves to fellowship

Acts 2:42

They devoted themselves to the (1) apostles' teaching and to (2) fellowship, to the (3) breaking of bread and to (4) prayer.

God's great desire for us is to be conformed to the image of his Son.

Romans 8:29

For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters.

- Being conformed to the image of Christ happens mostly through the following three processes:
 - by seeing HIM as he is:
"Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when Christ appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is." (1 John 3:2)
 - through thorough discipleship
 - through real fellowship
- The fellowship is about practicing love.

Matthew 22:37

Jesus replied: "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind."

John 13:35

By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another."

- We practice love in community. Love has to become practical. Love needs community to express itself and to be lived out. "Love needs a you." Martin Buber
- Community is one of God's tools to shape our character. Only diamonds can polish diamonds.
- "Thank God for difficult people in your life. They are God's tool to work on you and to conform you into the image of his son." Watchman Nee

- Community (Greek: koinonia) is a very radical concept. It means the total sharing of all worldly and spiritual goods. We not only share our material goods but also what we have spiritually.
- This koinonia is a huge challenge!
- WE now comes next to ME.

John 13:35

By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another."

What does a community of faith practically do in community meetings?

1. We regularly meet together (in houses or outside) to study the word of God, to have fellowship, to eat and "break the bread", to pray and to worship (Hebrews 10:25 / Acts 2:42 + 47).
2. Everyone brings something along and contributes something to build each other up spiritually (1 Corinthians 14:26).

1 Corinthians 14:26

"What then shall we say, brothers and sisters? When you come together, each of you has a hymn, or a word of instruction, a revelation, a tongue or an interpretation. Everything must be done so that the church may be built up."

The New Testament contains about 60 verses that explicitly mention the word "each other" or "one another". They are also called "one another" verses. 18 of them are listed below:

1. Advise each other, spur one another on and consider one another (Hebrews 10:24)
 2. Help each other when in need (Acts 2:45)
 3. Build each other up (Ephesians 4:29/1 Thessalonians 5:11)
 4. Do nothing that could be a stumbling block for a brother (one another) (Romans 14:13)
 5. Encourage one another (Hebrews 3:13)
 6. Cry and laugh together (Romans 12:15)
 7. Help each other to carry the burden (Galatians 6:2)
 8. Not groaning against each other (James 5:9)
 9. Correct and rebuke each other (2 Timothy 4:2; 1 Thessalonians 5:16)
 10. Forgiving one another and be reconciled to one another (Colossians 3:13; Ephesians 4,32)
 11. Discipline each other when necessary (Matthew 18:15-17)
 12. Serving one another with the gifts we have received (1 Peter 4:10)
 13. Not slander one another (James 4:11)
 14. Submit to each other (Ephesians 5:21)
 15. Confess sins to one another (James 5:16)
 16. Pray for one another (James 5:16)
 17. Not bite and devour each other (Galatians 5:15)
 18. Wash each other's feet (John 13:14)
- These are a few very practical "one another" verses that we can practice during the community meetings. It is all about sharing our hearts and our lives. These 18 points are an expression and different facets of what it means to love one another.
 - The commandment to love one another can be found in the New Testament almost as often as the sum of all "one another" verses.

1 John 3:16-18

This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers and sisters. If anyone has material possessions and sees a

brother or sister in need but has no pity on them, how can the love of God be in that person? Dear children, let us not love with words or speech but with actions and in truth.

- This second core value is basically about **love, serving and humility**.
- The appendix to Unit 41 contains an extensive overview of all the “one another verses” of the New Testament.
- This second part of the community meetings requires about 30 minutes.

3. They devoted themselves to the breaking of bread

Acts 2:42

They devoted themselves to the (1) apostles' teaching and to (2) fellowship, to the (3) breaking of bread and to (4) prayer.

- What is described here not only means the Lord's Supper or eating together.
- It is a combination of **both**: a love feast.

1 Corinthians 11:20-25

“So then, when you come together, it is not the Lord's Supper you eat, for when you are eating, some of you go ahead with your own private suppers. (...) For I received from the Lord what I also passed on to you: The Lord Jesus, on the night he was betrayed, took bread, and when he had given thanks, he broke it and said, “This is my body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of me.” In the same way, after supper he took the cup, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in my blood; do this, whenever you drink it, in remembrance of me.”

Jude 12

“These people are blemishes at your love feasts.”

At the Jewish Passover celebration, there was a meal with the family the evening before. The father of the family broke bread and gave one piece to each member of the family. Then the cup was passed around and everyone drank from it. Then they broke bread again and drank again from the cup and so on. When Jesus ate this meal with his disciples he made an announcement before the third round. He took the bread, gave thanks, broke it and said: “This is my body broken for you...”. In the same way, after supper he took the cup, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is poured out for you. Do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me. For as often as you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord's death until he comes.”

“Breaking bread” thus means that we eat together as a community of faith and during this meal we take the bread and the cup, give thanks and remember what the Lord Jesus did on the cross.

Jesus commanded his disciples to regularly celebrate the Lord's Supper. Therefore, it is also a commandment for our disciples and for us. Jesus commanded: “Teach them to obey everything I have commanded you.” This means that every follower of Jesus can and should hand out the Lord's Supper.

- This core value in a community meeting is actually about remembering the cross, forgiveness, grace and holiness.
- This third core value requires about 30 to 60 minutes of a community meeting.

4. They devoted themselves to prayer

Acts 2:42

They devoted themselves to the (1) apostles' teaching and to (2) fellowship, to the (3) breaking of bread and to (4) prayer.

Prayer is a very important part of every community meeting. The original text actually speaks not of prayer but prayers, plural. Prayers could mean that they prayed a lot or that they practiced different forms of prayer.

Different types of prayer

	Prayer Type:	Memory Verses:
1.	Our Father	Matthew 6:9-13
2.	Requests	Luke 18:1-8, Matthew 7:7-8
3.	Thanksgiving	Ephesians 5:20
4.	Intercession	1 Timothy 2:1
5.	Prayer for authorities	1 Timothy 2:2
6.	Praise, Worship, Psalms	Acts 2:47, Psalm 1
7.	Prayer for healing and deliverance	Matthew 10:8
8.	Praying in Tongues	1 Corinthians 14:1-18
9.	Praying and Fasting	Mark 2:20
10.	Prayer for the harvest and for the workers	Luke 10:2

There are numerous other types of prayer. This is not an exhaustive list. However, these ten listed prayer types lay a good foundation.

- This core value of a community meeting is really about prayer, praise and worship.
- This fourth part of the community meeting also requires 30 to 60 minutes.
- These are the first four core values and functions of a church that meets in houses.
- With these four core values (the word, fellowship, Lord's Supper/love feast and prayers), the community of faith is not fully developed yet. However, the heart is formed. This is enough to continue autonomously and can be called a real community of faith.
- Introducing these values does not happen at once. As disciple makers, we will demonstrate several times what such a community meeting looks like.
- However, the group of disciples should learn as early as possible to lead the meetings themselves.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:
 - A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
 - B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
 - C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐
14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
15. Discuss with your disciples this lesson that aims to officially plant a church. Deliberately meet for such community meetings besides your discipleship meetings. ☐
 - do a DBS (45min)
 - have fellowship (45min)
 - eat together (love meal) and have the Lord's Supper (45min)
 - pray (45min)

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

The one-another-verses in the New Testament (19 times LOVE one another)

Mark. 9:50 Have peace with one another

John 13:14 Wash each other's feet

John 13:34 You shall love each other (1)

John 13:35 By the love you have for one another (2)

John 15:12 You shall love each other (3)

John 15:17 You shall love each other (4)

Romans. 12:10 Be devoted to one another in love (5)

Romans.12:10 Honour one another above yourselves.

Romans. 12:16 Live in harmony with one another.

Romans.13:8 that you shall love each other (6)

Romans. 14:13 Therefore, let us stop passing judgment on one another.

Romans. 15:7 Accept each other

Romans. 15:14 filled with knowledge and competent to instruct one another.

Romans. 16:16 Greet one another with a holy kiss.

1 Corinthians 11:33 When you gather to eat, you shall wait for each other.

1 Corinthians 12:25 so that there should be no division in the body, but that its parts should have equal concern for each other.

1 Corinthians 16:20 Greet one another with a holy kiss.

2 Corinthians 13:12 Greet one another with a holy kiss.

Galatians 5:13 Serve one another humbly in love. (7)

Galatians 5:15 If you bite and devour each other, watch out or you will be destroyed by each other.

Galatians 5:26 Let us not become conceited, provoking and envying each other.

Galatians 6:2 Carry each other's burdens, and in this way, you will fulfil the law of Christ.

Ephesians 4:2 Be patient, bearing with one another in love. (8)

Ephesians 4:32 Be kind and compassionate to one another.

Ephesians 4:32 Always ready to forgive each other.

Ephesians 5:19 Speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit.

Ephesians 5:21 Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

Phil. 2:3 In humility value others above yourselves.

Colossians 3:9 Do not lie to each other

Colossians 3:13 Bear with each other

Colossians 3:13 Forgive one another

Colossians 3:16 Teach one another

Colossians 3:16 Admonish one another

1 Thessalonians 3:12 May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other. (9)

1 Thessalonians 4:9 For you yourselves have been taught by God to love each other. (10)

1 Thessalonians 4:18 Encourage one another.

1 Thessalonians 5:11 Encourage one another.

1 Thessalonians 5:11 Build each other up.

Hebrews 3:13 Encourage one another daily.

Hebrews 10:24 Consider one another.

Hebrews 10:24 Spur one another on towards love. (11)

Hebrews 10:24 Spur one another on to good deeds.

Hebrews 10:25 Encourage another not to give up meeting together.

James 4:11 Do not slander one another.

James 5:9 Do not grumble against one another.

James 5:16 Therefore confess your sins to each other.

James 5:16 And pray for each other.

1 Peter 1:22 Love one another deeply, from the heart. (12)

1 Peter 3:8 Be compassionate with one another.

1 Peter 4:8 Love each other deeply. (13)

1 Peter 4:9 Offer hospitality to one another without grumbling.

1 Peter 4:10 Use whatever gift you have received to serve one another.

1 Peter 5:5 All of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another.

1 Peter 5:14 Greet one another with a kiss of love.

1 John 3:11 Christians should love one another. (14)

1 John 3:23 To love one another as he commanded us. (15)

1 John 4:7 Let us love one another. (16)

1 John 4:11 We also ought to love one another. (17)

1 John 4:12 But if we love one another God lives in us. (18)

1 John 5 We should love one another (19)



Training Unit 42

Community of faith

12 core functions of a community of faith (5-12)

Definitions

1. Discipleship group

This is a group of new believers who have been baptized in water and in the Holy Spirit. They are regularly disciplined as a group. In the New Testament, these discipleship groups are not yet called a church.

2. Spiritual family or community of faith

When a discipleship group makes a committed decision to live out Acts 2:42-47 together, we call them a spiritual family or a community of faith. The New Testament calls such a group a "church that meets at their house".

1 Corinthians 16:19

Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

In our everyday lives, we would call this a (nuclear/core) family.

3. House church/networked house church

When a group of 3 to 5 house churches, communities of faith or spiritual families join together and have leadership (elders and deacons), we call it a networked house church. In our everyday lives, one would call such related groups of core families a clan.

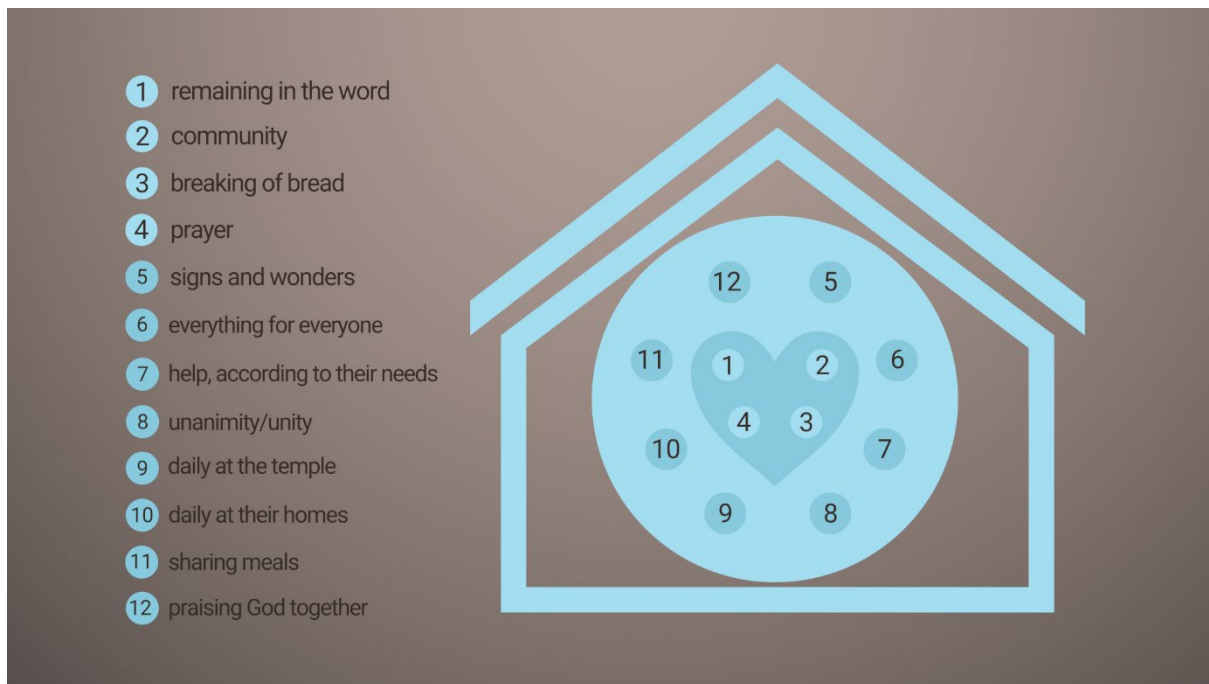
At this point of the sending training, we plant a house church with the disciples.

- How does a New Testament church that meets in houses look like?
- How do these community meetings look like? What is done there practically?

Core text about the New Testament church

Acts 2:42-47

And they continued steadfastly (1) in the apostles' doctrine and (2) fellowship, and in (3) breaking of bread, and in (4) prayers. And fear came upon every soul: and many (5) wonders and signs were done by the apostles. And all that believed were together, and (6) had all things common; And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, (7) as every man had need. And they, continuing daily (8) with one accord (9) in the temple, and breaking bread (10) from house to house, did (11) eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, (12) Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.



Summary: how a community of faith is planted

1. Going, finding and baptizing a person, a house, a group of peace.
2. Forming that group into a discipleship group and starting to disciple them.
3. At an early stage while discipling the group, we begin to do a Discovery Bible Study (DBS) as a group, to share and to pray together. Sometimes we hold extra meetings besides the regular discipleship meetings.
4. The Word, fellowship, the Lord's Supper and prayers constitute already all core functions of a community of faith.
5. By practicing these four core values, this group has become something like a pre-version of a community of faith.
6. Already after a short while during the discipleship process, we read Acts 2:42-47 as a group. It is about understanding the core values.
7. As soon as the discipleship group has understood the twelve core values of a New Testament church and is ready to live these values in the discipleship group in a committed way, the time has come to officially plant a community of faith.
8. The actual founding can be celebrated in the context of a small ceremony.
9. Everyone in the discipleship group declares before God that he wants to commit to live the twelve values together with the others of the group. The community of faith is founded through this mutual declaration, vow and commitment.
10. Before we look at these values with our disciples and before they make a commitment to live them together, we want to understand the 12 core functions of a church that meets in houses.

In the past lesson we discussed the first four functions and began to live them with the disciples:

1. Studying the Word
2. Fellowship
3. Breaking of bread
4. Prayers

These four functions are essential and are enough to have a functioning community of faith. However, now we want to look at the remaining eight functions/values that belong to a New Testament church and therefore also today belong to a real house church.

5. Signs and miracles

Acts 2:43

“Everyone was filled with awe at the many wonders and signs performed by the apostles.”

- There was much space for the supernatural in the New Testament house churches.
- In Acts 2:43 the community of faith were only a few days old and the Apostles were the first disciple makers.
- This also explains why the miracles and signs at the very beginning happened primarily through the Apostles.
- Later, however, it became a normal part of a house church that signs and miracles would happen through all members of this church.
- Practically this means that
 - Healing happens when someone is sick.
 - Deliverance happens when someone experiences demonic oppression.
 - We are open for visions, dreams, guidance and prophecies from God.
 - We experience miracles in the everyday life of believers and share these.
- This core value of a house church is about the **supernatural**.

6. Having everything in common

Acts 2:44

“All the believers were together and had everything in common.”

- The Old Testament says that all the gold and silver belong to the Lord.

Haggai 2:8

“‘The silver is mine and the gold is mine,’ declares the Lord Almighty.”

- And also with regard to the land the Lord says:

Leviticus 25:23

“The land must not be sold permanently, because the land is mine and you reside in my land as foreigners and strangers.”

- From a Biblical viewpoint none of our possessions belong to us, but to the Lord. We are just good and faithful stewards. Everything comes from the Lord, belongs to the Lord and he can also have it at his disposal.
- This was the exact heart attitude of the first Christians towards their possessions. It's like owning as if you had nothing.
- Having possessions is not wrong; the first Christians had possessions too. Barnabas, as well as Ananias and Saphira sold a field.
- Peter said to Ananias:

Acts 5:4

“Didn't it belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold, wasn't the money at your disposal? What made you think of doing such a thing? You have not lied just to human beings but to God.”

- It is definitely about the heart attitude.
- This core value actually consists of generosity, compassion for others and joyful giving.

7. Giving to everyone in need

Acts 2:45

“They sold property and possessions to give to anyone who had need.”

- The church is a spiritual family. Just as one helps each other in a natural family, so should it be in the community of faith.
- It is primarily an obligation towards family members (committed members of the community of faith) and not towards guests. This core value is made up of giving, sharing, social engagement, and diaconry.

8. With one voice

Acts 2:46

“And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple...”

- The expression “with one accord” does not mean that everyone had the same opinion or that all were in the same life situation.
- This expression actually means that all looked in the same direction, towards the same point, at the same person: Jesus. They knew that he had all the wisdom and insight.
- They looked to Jesus and his words for council, guidance, insight and wisdom.
- This core value reflects true unity.

9. Daily in the temple

Acts 2:46

“And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple...”

- The first Christians in Jerusalem visited the temple daily.
- 9 AM was the time of the morning sacrifice of a lamb and 3 to 5 PM was the time of the evening sacrifice of a lamb.
- These times were also the temple’s prayer times.
- As is clearly evident from other texts in Acts, the Apostles also evangelized in the temple.

Acts 4:1-2

“The priests and the captain of the temple guard and the Sadducees came up to Peter and John while they were speaking to the people. They were greatly disturbed because the apostles were teaching the people, proclaiming in Jesus the resurrection of the dead.”

Acts 3:11-13

“While the man held on to Peter and John, all the people were astonished and came running to them in the place called Solomon’s Colonnade. When Peter saw this, he said to them: “Fellow Israelites, why does this surprise you? Why do you stare at us as if by our own power or godliness we had made this man walk? The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus. You handed him over to be killed, and you disowned him before Pilate, though he had decided to let him go.”

- The Lord himself commanded to evangelize in the temple through an angel!

Acts 5:19-20

"But during the night an angel of the Lord opened the doors of the jail and brought them out. 'Go, stand in the temple courts,' he said, 'and tell the people all about this new life.'"

- There, in the temple, the first Christians probably met many open people, family heads, and persons of peace, to whom they could preach the Gospel. These people likely invited them to eat in their homes after the time in the temple.
- This core value actually consist of outreach, evangelism and public prayer.

10. Daily in their homes**Acts 2:46**

And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.

Illustration: Florian once was in Punjab, India, and visited a community of faith there. It was in a village in a rural region. The children went to school in the morning and the men and women worked in the field. When they returned from their work, they did not go home, but met daily at one house. There they cooked, prayed, and sang together and heard a word from the Bible. There were also unbelievers present, who were invited, and heard the Gospel. This is a good example for "meeting daily".

As a community of faith in a post-modern and urban context, we too meet not only on Sunday morning. We also meet during the week, eat together, have fellowship, pray together and do a DBS. On some weekdays, we meet for early morning prayer. There are days on which we work together or celebrate feasts, inviting unbelievers. We celebrate a 'Neighbour's Day' to get to know them. In short, we embrace every opportunity.

- During the time of the first Christians, whole families came to faith (Zacchaeus and his house, Cornelius and his house, the jailer from Philippi and his house, Lydia and her house). Since these natural families also became spiritual families, it was normal for them to meet daily in their houses.
- Since they were daily in the temple and at home, it was possible for them to often invite unbelieving guests, evangelize daily at home and to experience daily conversions.
- This core value is all about community of faith and evangelism.

11. Sharing meals

Acts 2:46

“And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.”

- Here we find the Lord’s Supper and eating together a second time. Again, the love feast is probably meant to be incorporated into the Lord’s Supper.
- Since it is mentioned twice, this shows the high significance and importance of the love feast in the homes of the New Testament churches.
- During the Lord’s Supper we look back at the cross and what Jesus did for us.
- The banquet feast must have been a really good meal, since they ate it with joy. Every banquet feast is a sign to the coming great feast banquet in the Kingdom of God at the wedding of the Lamb.
- The daily meals were also an excellent opportunity to invite guests and to proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God.

Revelation 19:7

“Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory! For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his bride has made herself ready.”

- This core value consists of joy and celebrating feasts.

12. Praising God together

Acts 2:47

“praising God together...”

- The worship of God is one of the core values in the spiritual life of every follower of Jesus and also of every community of faith.
- Praising God means honouring and praising God for what He is doing. Worshipping God means to honour and praise God for who He is.
- This core value consist of praise and worship.

Acts 2:47

“...enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved.”

The effects of the twelve core values

- The reaction from people around them was great: they enjoyed the favour of all people.
- *Daily* being in the temple with the people, the *daily* invitations to the houses and the *daily* common meals and feasts of the Kingdom of God obviously produced *daily* conversions very naturally.
- We have now looked at the twelve core values and functions of a community of faith. When a community of faith has these twelve core values, it is fully developed.
- Introducing these values does not happen within one or two meetings. As disciple makers, we must show several times what such a community meeting looks like.
- However, the group should start to lead these meetings as soon as possible.

Remarks

- Everyone who converts to the Lord and is born again should be trained to be a disciple.
- Everyone should be in a discipleship group for this discipleship process.
- Most discipleship takes place in the group.
- It is not possible to separate discipleship from community.
- The discipleship group becomes a community of faith and a church that meets in the house.
- The community of faith becomes the church of the disciple.

Where is the church of a sent one?

There are two answers to this question. The New Testament describes two models. It depends on whether:

- a) We work organically, locally in a 2x2-Team
 - b) or we work strategically and systematically in a sending team
- **Organically, locally**
- We live and work in a place and there we find a person or a house of peace.
 - We start to disciple this group and form a community of faith with them.
 - We live the twelve values with this community of faith according to Acts 2:42-47.
- **Strategically, systematically, mobile**
- The Lord calls me to appoint and form a sending team.
 - This sending team now looks for people and houses of peace.
 - The team starts to disciple this group and to form a discipleship group with them, training them until they become a real community of faith that lives the twelve core values autonomously.
 - However, the home of the members in the sending team is not the newly planted community of faith, but the team.
 - In a sending team, the team is both a community of faith and a team. It is a team that helps one another to live the commandment to make disciples and at the same time it's a mobile community of faith, in which we live the twelve values as a team.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:

- A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
- B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
- C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐

2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐

3. Look for persons of peace ☐

4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐

5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐

6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐

7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐

8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐

9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐

10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐

11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐

12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐

13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐

14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

15. Discuss with your disciples this lesson that aims to officially plant a church. Deliberately meet for such community meetings besides your discipleship meetings. ☐

- Do not only meet to discuss the twelve values but to also live them as a community of faith together with the disciples.
- Make a commitment and have a ceremony to officially plant the community of faith.

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 43



Community of faith

Structures for networked house churches

Definitions

1. Discipleship group

This is a group of new believers who have been baptized in water and in the Holy Spirit. They are regularly discipled as a group. In the New Testament, these discipleship groups are not yet called a church.

2. Spiritual family or community of faith

When a discipleship group makes a committed decision to live out Acts 2:42-47 together, we call them a spiritual family or a community of faith. The New Testament calls such a group a "church that meets at their house".

1 Corinthians 16:19

Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

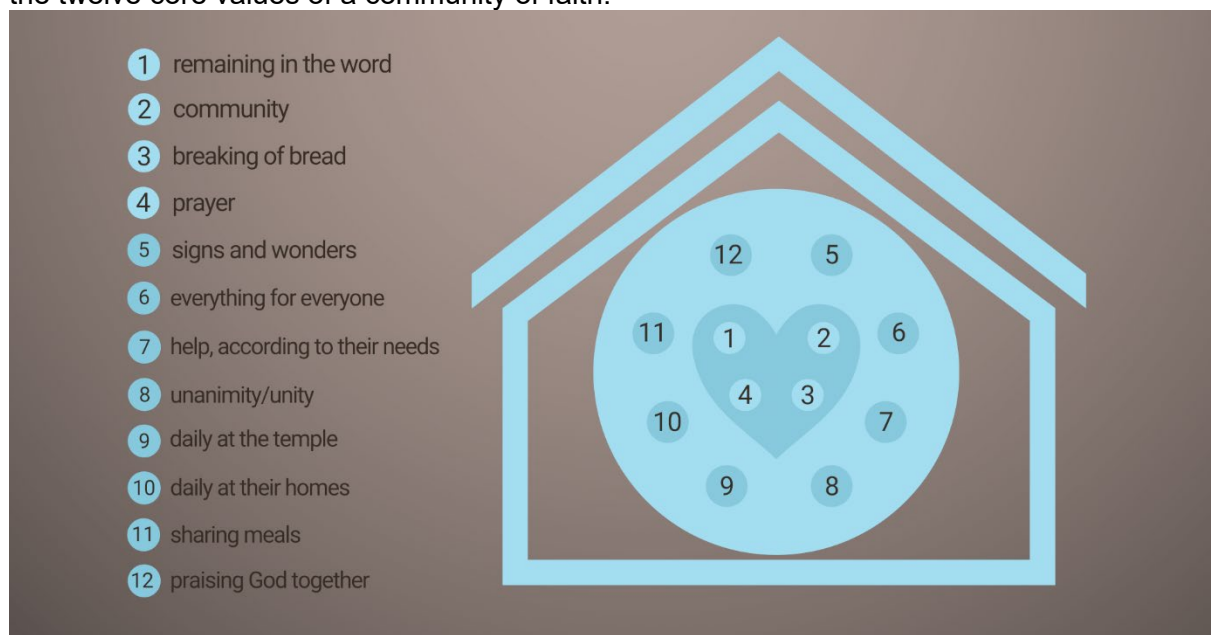
Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

In our everyday lives, we would call this a (nuclear/core) family.

3. House church/networked house church

When a group of 3 to 5 house churches, communities of faith or spiritual families join together and have leadership (elders and deacons), we call it a networked house church. In our everyday lives, one would call such related groups of core families a clan.

At this point of the sending training, we can see the fruit of our ministry of sending. The fruit is a living, spiritually healthy discipleship group or an official community of faith that begins to live the twelve core values of a community of faith.



Positioning – where are we at in the ministry of sending?

We continue to go out and look for people of peace. The newly formed community of faith also starts to do this. In this way, several churches will soon be planted in the houses of persons of peace.

Structuring multiple networked house churches

Overview

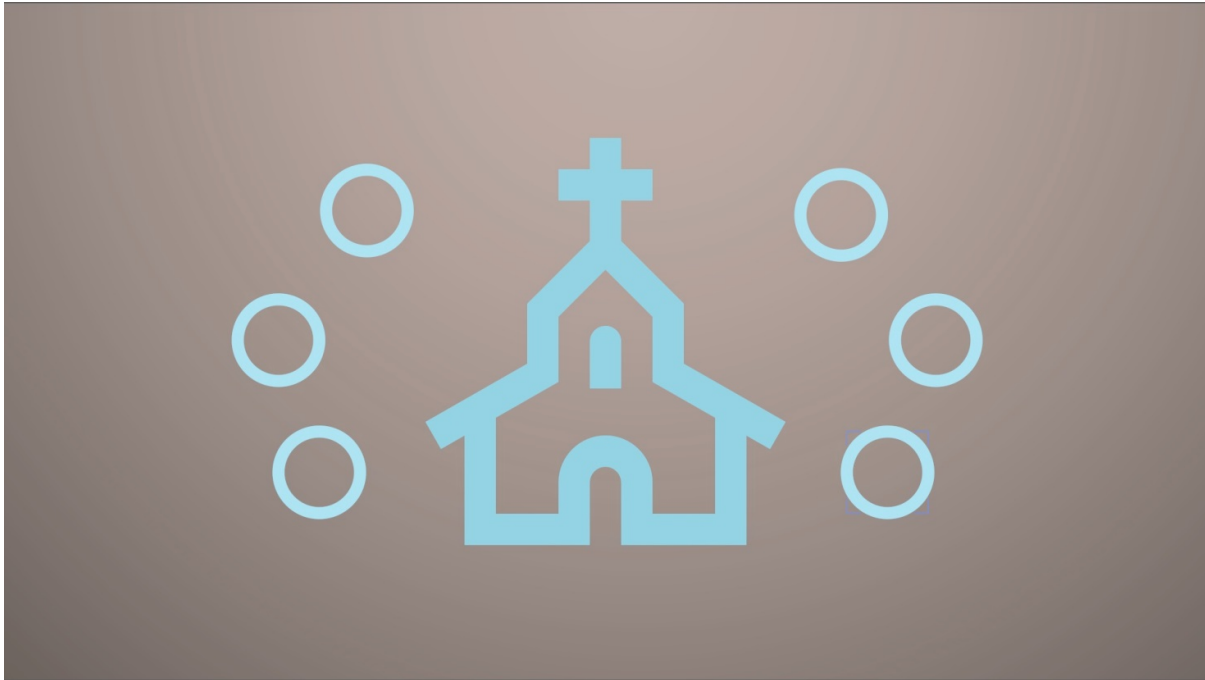
Amongst evangelical-charismatic Christians, there are three basic types of churches worldwide. (Evangelicals are believers who faithfully hold fast to the Bible, who have experienced a conversion, have been born again and who experience the Holy Spirit in their daily walk with Jesus. There are about 700 million evangelicals worldwide.) The three basic church models are:

One third of the evangelical churches are meeting-oriented, program-oriented



A meeting-oriented or program-oriented church with a church building, with a pastor and a church service on Sunday that forms the centre of the church life.

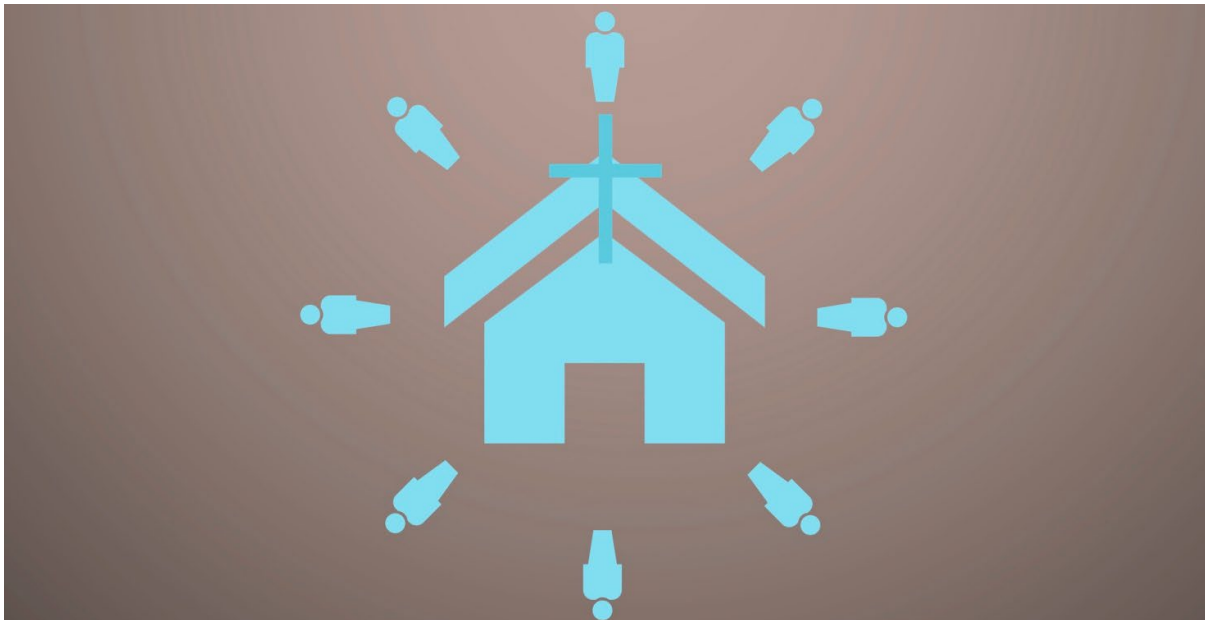
One third of evangelical churches are cell group churches.



Cell group churches are churches with two focus points. One focus is the church service and the church program, just like the meeting-oriented church, and the other is the small groups or cell groups.

The small groups do not see themselves as autonomous spiritual families or house churches. They see themselves as cells in which some spiritual things are practiced. The program is consolidated in these cells and there is fellowship.

One third of evangelical churches are house churches.



A house church means spiritual family or communities of faith in this context. They see themselves as a church that meets in houses.

In the time of the New Testament, all Christians met and worshipped in house churches. It was only when Christianity was transformed into the Roman state religion that these house churches were changed into church service-oriented, program-oriented churches.

In the 20th and 21st century we have been experiencing a strong trend of moving back to the New Testament model church. Now, about one third of evangelical-charismatic believers meet in house churches again. These house churches can also be grouped into three types.

Three types of house churches

1. Independent House Churches are independent and autonomous house churches.
2. Interdependent House Churches are loosely connected to other house churches.
3. Networked House Churches are strongly connected to others and form a clearly structured house church network.

The ministry of sending is focused on planting networked house churches. There are no exact descriptions in the New Testament about how communities of faith should be connected to one another. There is room for multiple different ways to connect house churches with one another.

How to structure networked house churches

Structuring one community of faith to a network of house churches can be done differently. How can you proceed?

2x2-team or as a sending team?

a) Organically, locally (2:2-team)

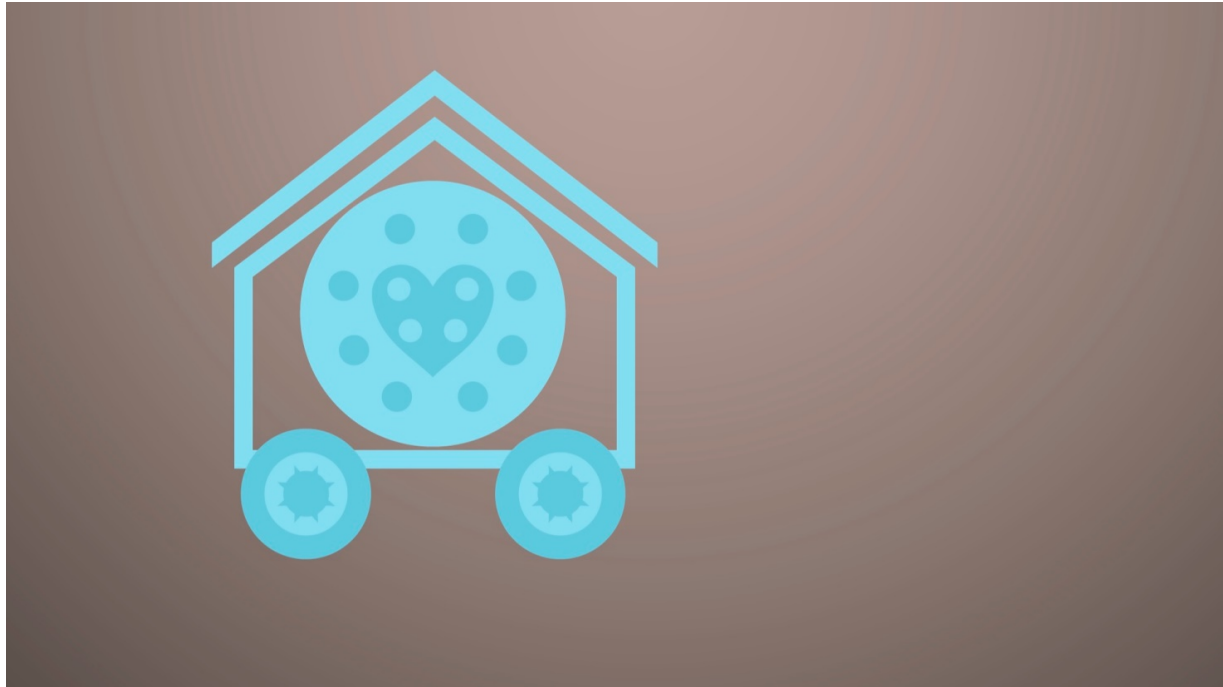
- The general ministry of sending, in which every disciple of Jesus does in their unreached environment (family, friends, workplace and neighbourhood).
- When doing the ministry of sending, it's important to go at least two by two.
- In some capacity, every born again disciple of Jesus should find people of peace, make disciples among them, and form a community of faith among them that multiplies.
- We (two by two) live and work in a place and there we find a person or a house of peace.
- We start to disciple this group and form a community of faith with them.
- We live the twelve values with this community of faith according to Acts 2:42-47.

b) Strategically, systematically-mobile (sending team)

- Especially gifted or called sent ones fruitfully do the ministry of sending as well, but out of their environment. Example: They leave their social and cultural environment to go into a new sociological environment, into a different culture, region, country or into a different religious environment. They take Jesus to those people. If we do the ministry of sending on this level, it's important that we call and form a sending team.
- The Lord calls me/us to appoint and form a sending team.
- This sending team finds people of peace and houses of peace.
- The team starts to discipleship groups. From discipleship groups they form communities of faith. They train them until they become a real community of faith that lives the twelve core values autonomously.
- However, the home of the sending team members is not one of the newly planted communities of faith, but the team.
- A sending team operates in two functions: It is a team that helps one another live the commandment to make disciples while simultaneously being a mobile community of faith, in which the twelve values are lived out as a team.

I want to show here, how to proceed when we begin the ministry of sending as a part of a sending team. The other structure, a 2x2 team is almost identical in the approach. The following model applies to both forms in the ministry of sending.

1. The sending team



The team is the community of faith for the sent one. It could be described as a mobile community of faith. It's the most effective instrument for a long term and fruitful sending ministry.

Basics about time commitment for a sending team

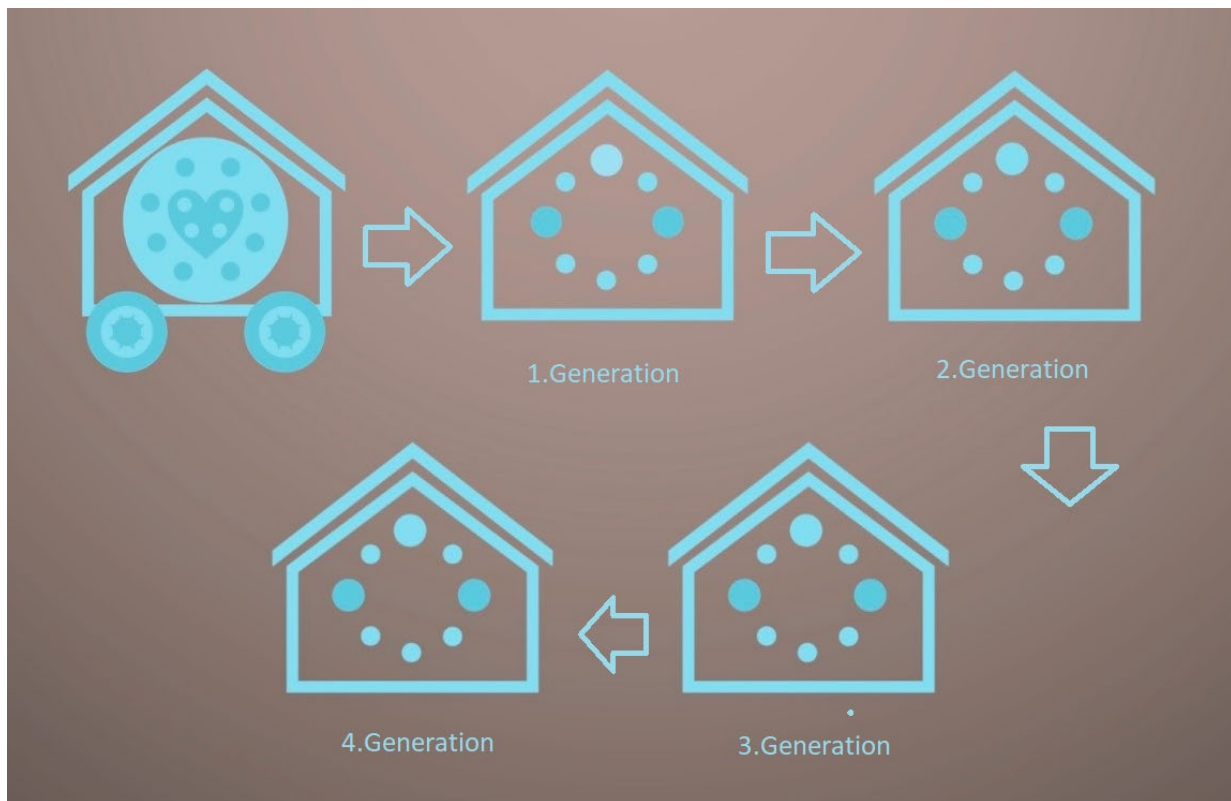
It's possible to do the ministry of sending while working fulltime. Of course, it's easier to do the ministry of sending working part time or even being available full time.

Time commitment: We give at least 10% of our time as a type of tithe into the kingdom of God. That's 15-17h. Better would be 20h. These hours we invest in the following three areas:

- 1/3 goes into prayer for the harvest (prayer walks).
- 1/3 goes into team (team life, team meetings, team training and team multiplication).
- 1/3 goes into the great commission (Finding people of peace, making disciples, planting communities of faith and multiplication).

Teams are mobile. In scripture Paul and his team were in different location at different times. The team is the "church in a house" and lives it out as a team. The team forms groups of two when they go looking for a person of peace.

2. The sending team plants a community of faith and multiplies to the 4th generation



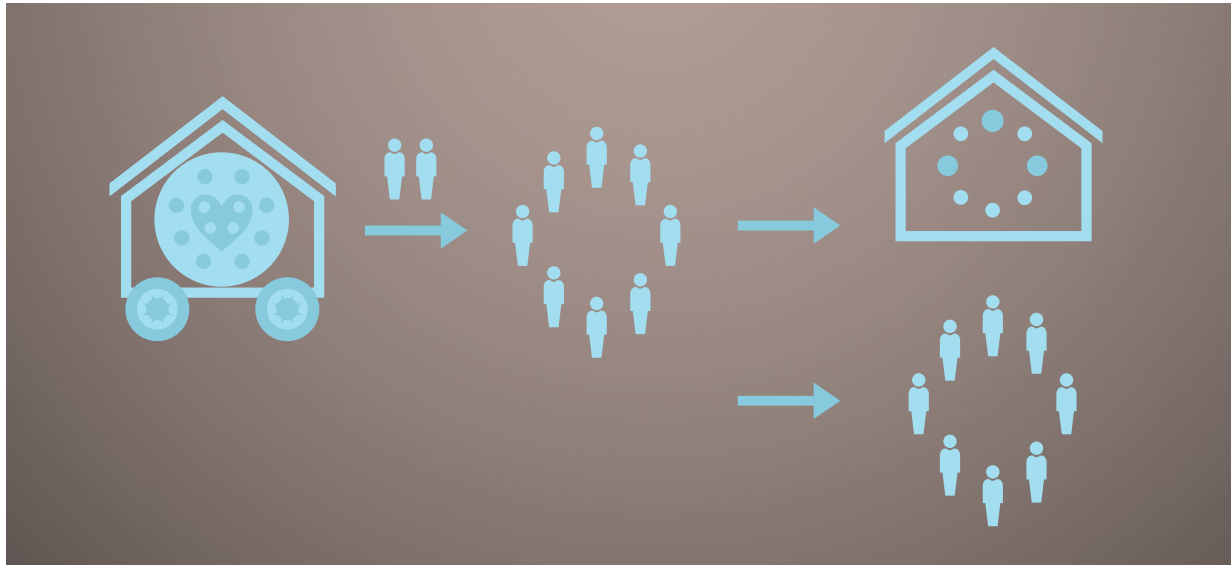
Step by step

1. As a sending team, we let ourselves be sent into a harvest field or to an unreached ethnic group.
2. The sending team forms groups of two for outreach.
3. The teams of two use 100% of their strength and time for praying for, searching for and finding of a person, group or house of peace.
4. As soon as a person or group has been found and baptized, the team forms a discipleship group and begins discipling this group. Then we plant a community of faith. For the discipleship process and after the planting of the community of faith, the team uses 50% of its time and energy for prayer and outreach. The other 50% should be used for the discipleship of the group, and for forming and partaking in a community of faith. As soon as your team has formed two groups, it should use 75% of its time and energy for prayer, discipling the group and for starting and participating in communities of faith. As soon as the team has started three groups, it should use 90% of its time and energy for discipleship, for starting and participating in a community of faith. For the teams of two, the spiritual home remains the sending team in this phase, although they spend much time with the new groups, community of faith.
- 5.-7. Disciple and train the first group you formed. We call this group the 1st generation. Train and equip the first generation to do the same as you have done in order to multiply it to the 2nd, 3rd, and 4th generations. There are many examples of 4th generation multiplication throughout the world. If we manage to multiply a movement of communities of faith to the 4th generation, then the movement will not stagnate and will continue to multiply itself.

Multiplication to the 4th generation

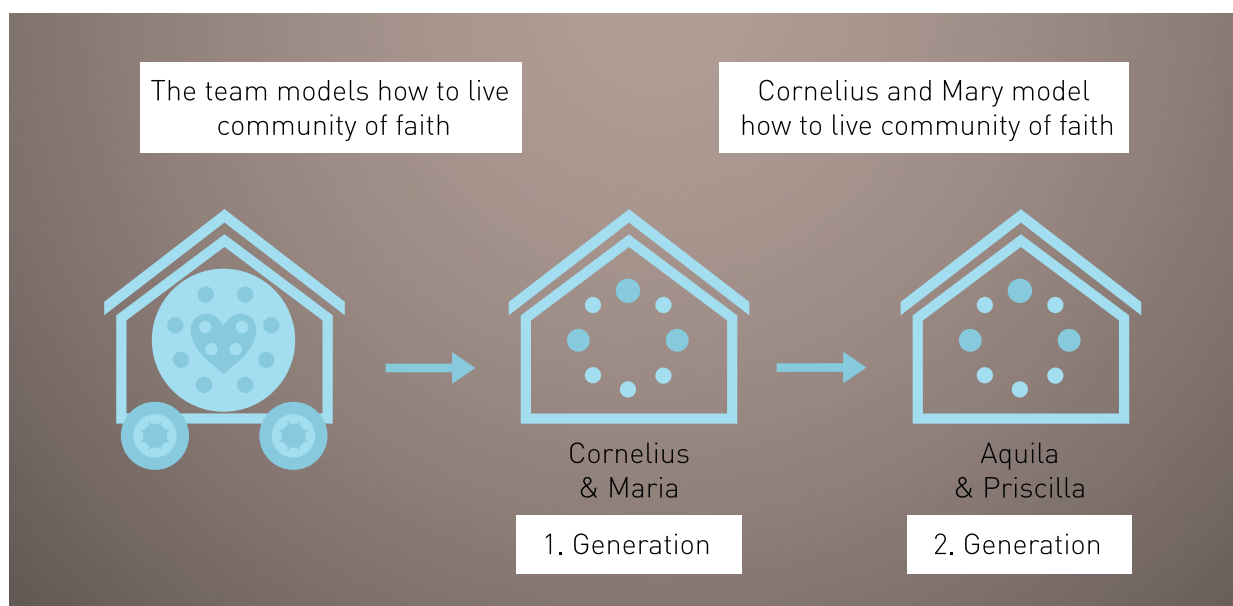
1st Generation

The sending team goes two by two and finds a couple of peace. Let's call them Cornelius and Mary. They baptize them and their household. The team forms a discipleship group of these newly baptized people around Cornelius and Mary and soon they form a community of faith. The team visits this new community of faith to model and train them in the values of a community of faith. They keep doing that, until the group around Cornelius and Mary are able to live out community of faith themselves. At the same time, the sending team disciples the group still further until they have a solid discipleship foundation. During this period, the team has two communities of faith: In the sending team and in Cornelius and Mary's community of faith where the sending team models and assists.

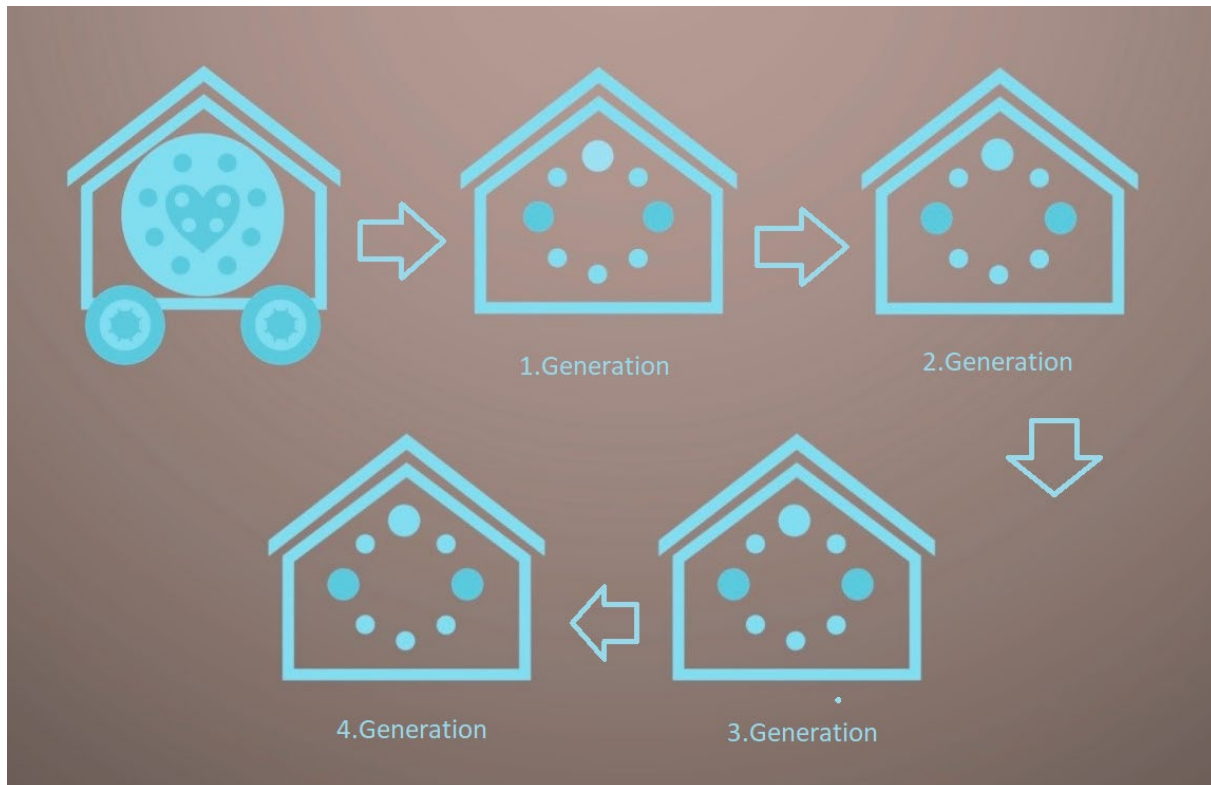


2nd Generation

Cornelius and Mary lead Aquila and Priscilla to the Lord, a key couple from their environment. They don't bring this couple to their community of faith. Aquila and Priscilla form their own discipleship group and then a community of faith with friends and relatives. Cornelius and Mary visit this new community of faith of Aquila and Priscilla, disciple them, and model how to live as a community of faith. They assist them until the community of faith works autonomously. Up until it operates autonomously, Cornelius and Mary have two spiritual homes: their own community of faith and the community of faith of Aquila and Priscilla.



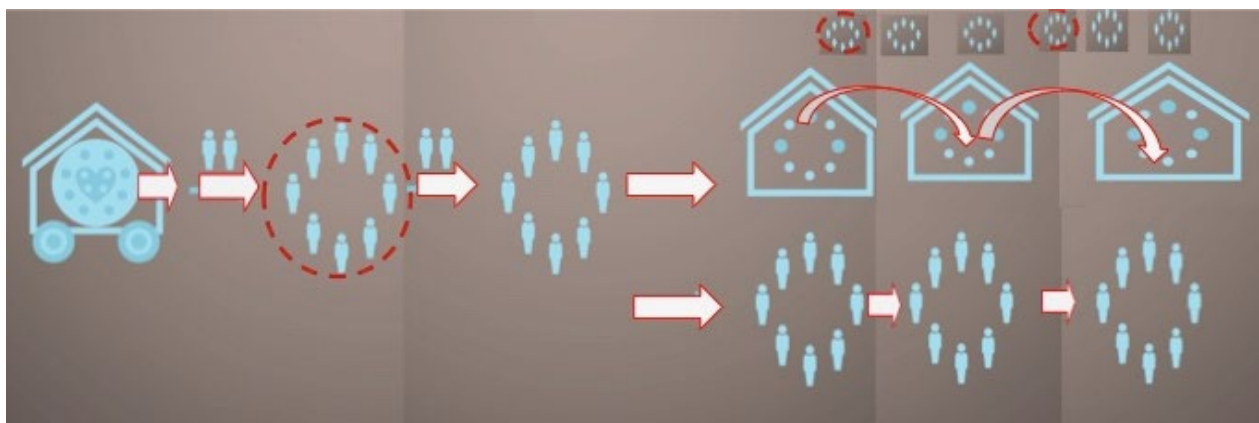
3rd Generation - 4th Generation



The sending team and each community of faith plants one new community of faith per year.

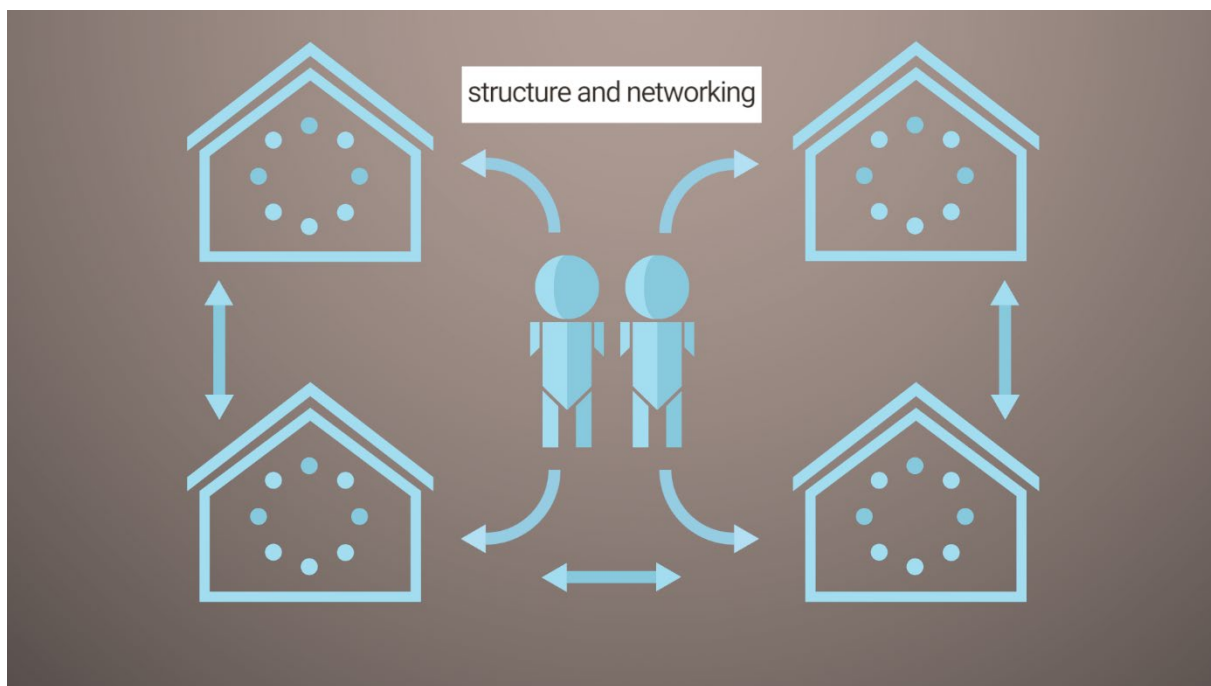
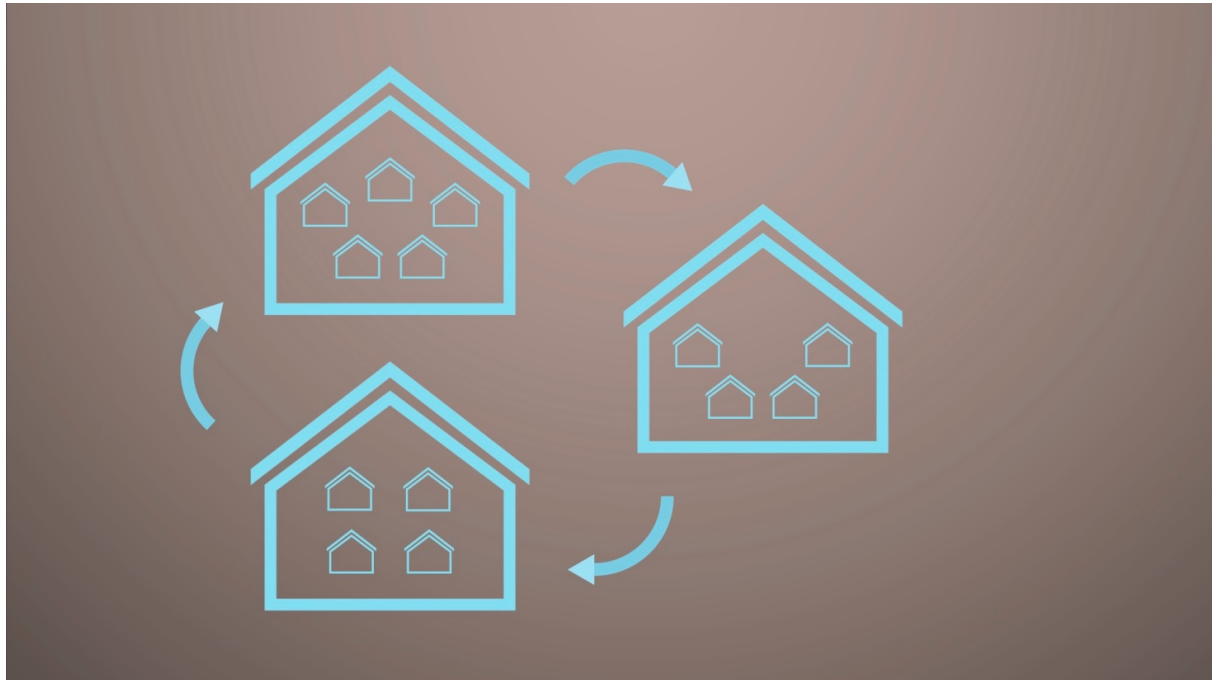
Year 1=1	Year 6=32	Year 11=1024	Year 16=32768	Year 21=1048576	Year 26=33554432
Year 2=2	Year 7=64	Year 12=2048	Year 17=65536	Year 22=2097152	Year 27=67108864
Year 3=4	Year 8=128	Year 13=4096	Year 18=131072	Year 23=4194304	Year 28=134217728
Year 4=8	Year 9=256	Year 14=8192	Year 19=262144	Year 24=8388608	Year 29=268435456
Year 5=16	Year 10=512	Year 15=16348	Year 20=524288	Year 25=16777216	Year 30=536870912

Overview of the multiplication steps



The team goes two by two, finds a person of peace, forms an evangelistic group with them, leads them through the four steps of conversion and forms a discipleship group with them. The team trains and models three years with that group. Out of the discipleship group emerges a community of faith. The first generation multiplies a second and a third generation of both: discipleship groups and communities of faith.

3. The sending team forms small networks consisting of 3-5 communities of faith



These house church networks are inwardly connected with each other through:

- Relationships: since all groups know the same people or have been started and formed by the same people. They are related to one another, they have the same DNA and are of the same spiritual “bloodline”.
- The same values
- The same traditions: same church culture, same songs, same style of serving the Lord’s Supper or living as a community of faith, etc.

A complete, autonomous house church consists of 3 to 5 spiritual families or 3 to 5 churches that meet in homes, according to the model of the “networked house church”.

A community of faith (church that meets in houses) consists of 5 to 12 adult members. If they grow beyond 12 members, we divide them into two new families. When 5 spiritual families have been started, there are about 60 members in total. Since this number is manageable, the leaders (elders) can still know everyone personally. These sizes have proven to be useful.

A networked house church consists of 3 to 5 spiritual families and develops a leadership culture with deacons and elders. More about this is in the next unit.

As soon as there are more than five spiritual families in a networked house church, we form new ones by starting 2, 3, 4 (and so on) new networked house churches that remain connected with one another. Events such as prayer evenings and celebrations can be organized together.

By forming a networked house church into two or more new networked house churches, it is possible to continually grow and multiply in a healthy way.

Summary

- Through finding persons of peace and baptizing the groups, communities of faith are formed.
- Connecting 3 to 5 communities of faith and developing leadership, forms a networked house church.
- Multiplying networked house churches creates a healthy movement that can continue to grow structurally until the Kingdom of God has reached a whole ethnic group.
- Make disciples of *whole* ethnic groups. Once this goal is reached, we aim at the big goal: make disciples of *all* nations.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:

A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐

B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐

C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐

2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐

3. Look for persons of peace ☐

4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐

5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐

6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐

7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐

8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐

9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐

10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐

11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐

12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐

13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐

14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

15. Discuss with your disciples how to network 3 to 5 spiritual families with the goal of forming a networked house church. ☐

With template of multiplication in our hearts we want to train our spiritual families, so that a networked house church with 3 to 5 spiritual families can be founded.

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!

Training Unit 44



Community of faith

Leadership in the networked house churches

Definitions

1. Discipleship group

This is a group of new believers who have been baptized in water and in the Holy Spirit. They are regularly discipled as a group. In the New Testament, these discipleship groups are not yet called a church.

2. Spiritual family, community of faith

When a discipleship group makes a committed decision to live out Acts 2:42-47 together, we call them a spiritual family or a community of faith. The New Testament calls such a group a “church that meets at their house”.

1 Corinthians 16:19

Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, and so does the church that meets at their house.

Colossians 4:15

Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house.

In our everyday lives, we would call this a (nuclear/core) family.

3. House church/networked house church

When a group of 3 to 5 communities of faith or spiritual families join together and have leadership (elders and deacons), we call it a networked house church. In our everyday lives, one would call such related groups of core families a clan.

Review

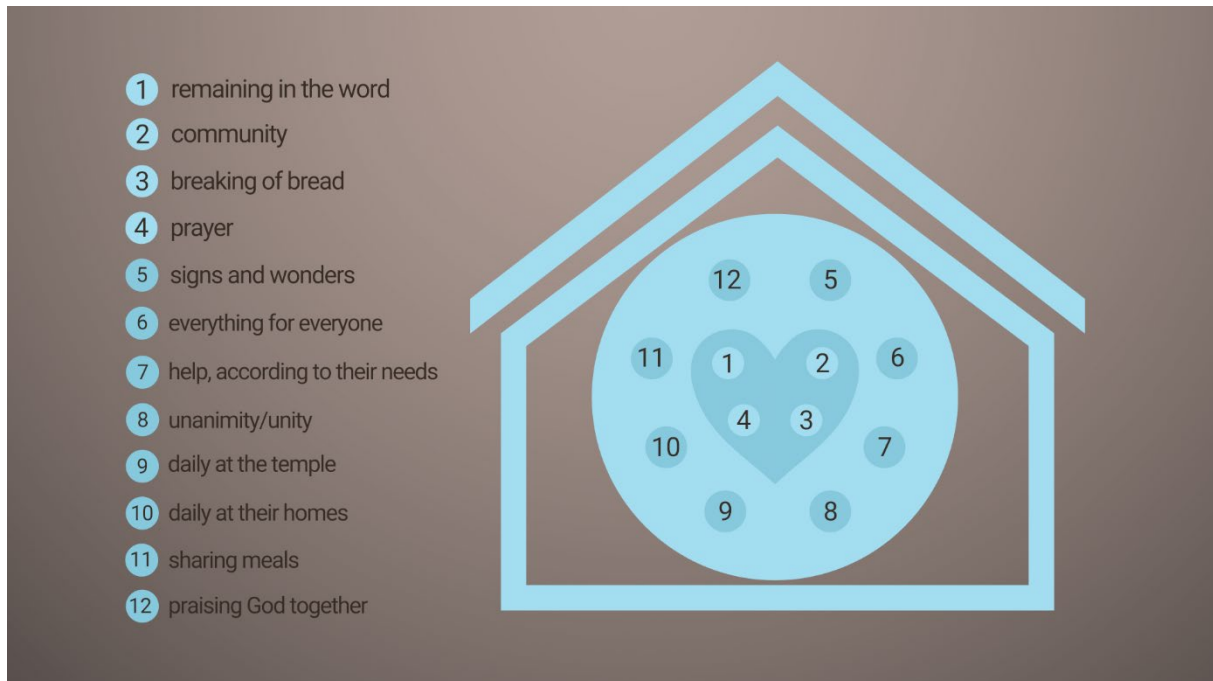
In lesson 43, we learned about the structure of networked house churches.

1. The sending team forms a mobile community of faith.



2. The team looks for a person, a house or a group of peace. We baptize this group and form a group of committed disciples.

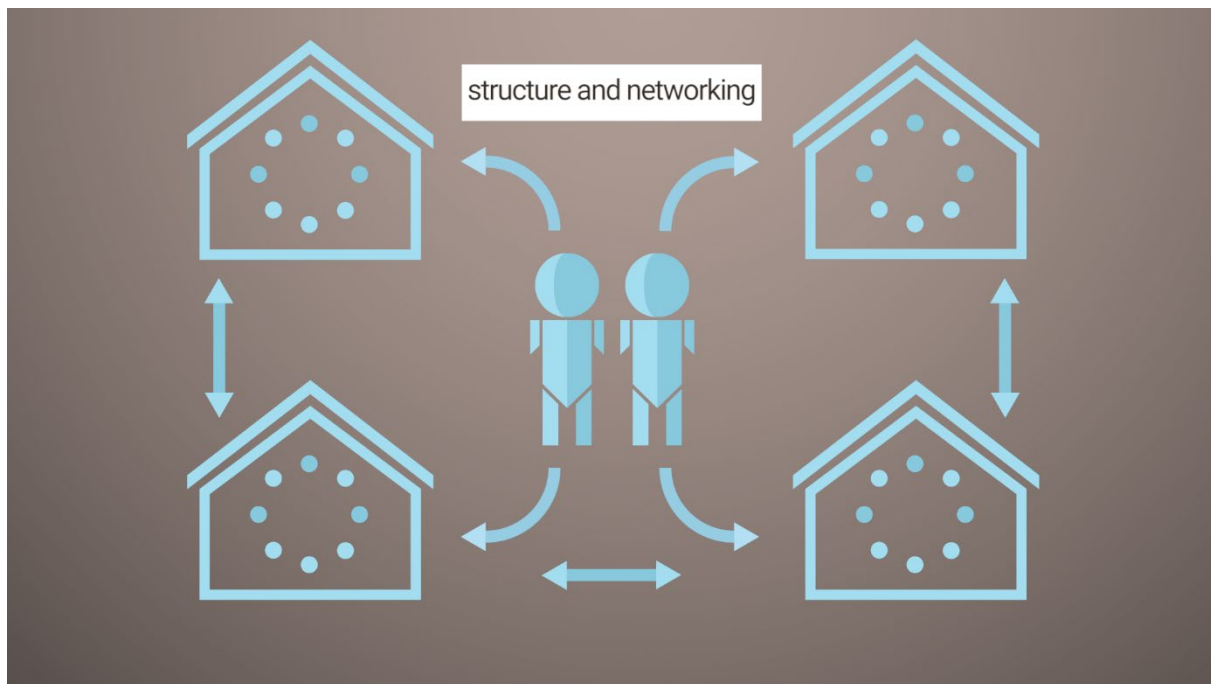
3. This discipleship group lives out the twelve values according to Acts 2:42-47 in a committed way. In this way, the group becomes a full-fledged house church.



4. 3 to 5 communities are eventually formed (around 12 persons in each community makes a total of up to 60 people) and begin to connect and becoming a networked house church. This is a small network. A networked house church (3 to 5 communities of faith) is a full-fledged, autonomous church with their own leadership team.



5. As soon as there are more than five communities of faith in the network, we form two new networks out of it.



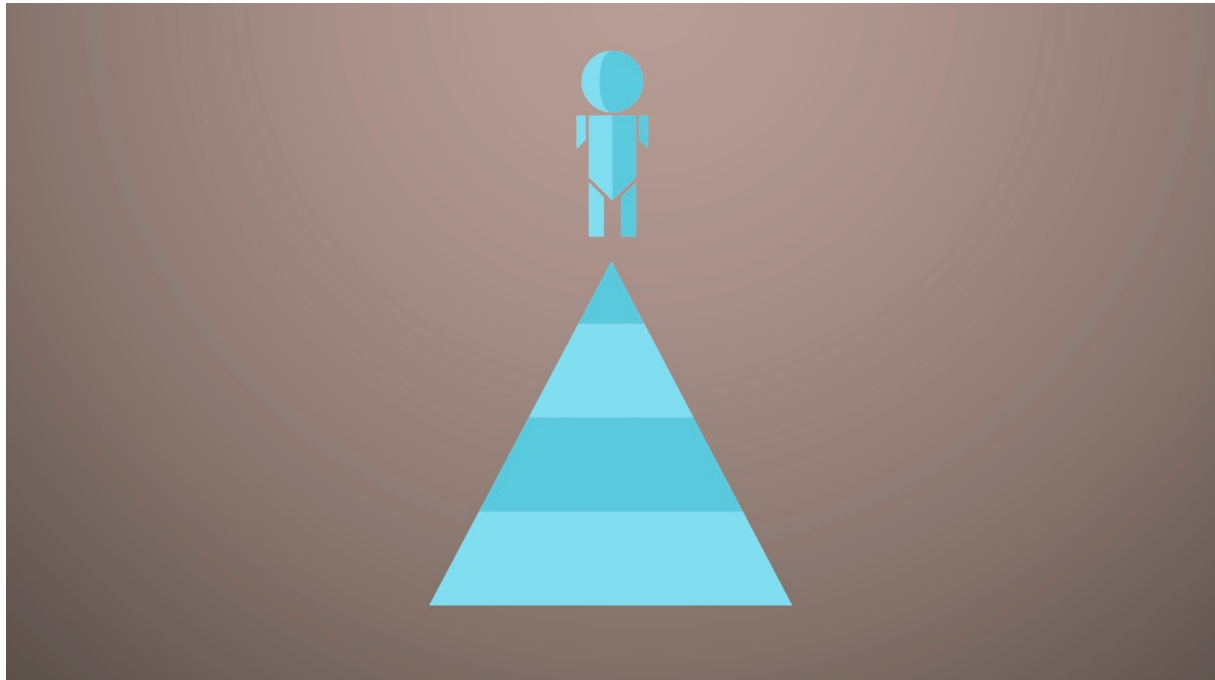
6. Each individual community of faith as well as the entire networked house church can organize events like prayer evenings, celebrations, kid's ministry or youth ministry together in the way that best fits each network or individual community.

Leadership in networked house churches: apostles, deacons, elders

Matthew 20:20-25

"Then the mother of Zebedee's sons came to Jesus with her sons and, kneeling down, asked a favor of him. "What is it you want?" he asked. She said, "Grant that one of these two sons of mine may sit at your right and the other at your left in your kingdom." "You don't know what you are asking," Jesus said to them. "Can you drink the cup I am going to drink?" "We can," they answered. Jesus said to them, "You will indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared by my Father." When the ten heard about this, they were indignant with the two brothers. Jesus called them together and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their high officials exercise authority over them."

Pyramid system leadership



Leadership exists in every part of the world. It is typically a royal, top-down leadership based on the pyramid system.

- The leader on top rules.
- The leader rules over his subjects and lets himself be served.
- The leader has *the* vision.
- People need to work to fulfil *the* vision of the leader.

Leadership under Moses

In the Old Testament, Moses introduced a similar pyramid system based on the advice of Jethro, his father-in-law.

Exodus 18:13-24

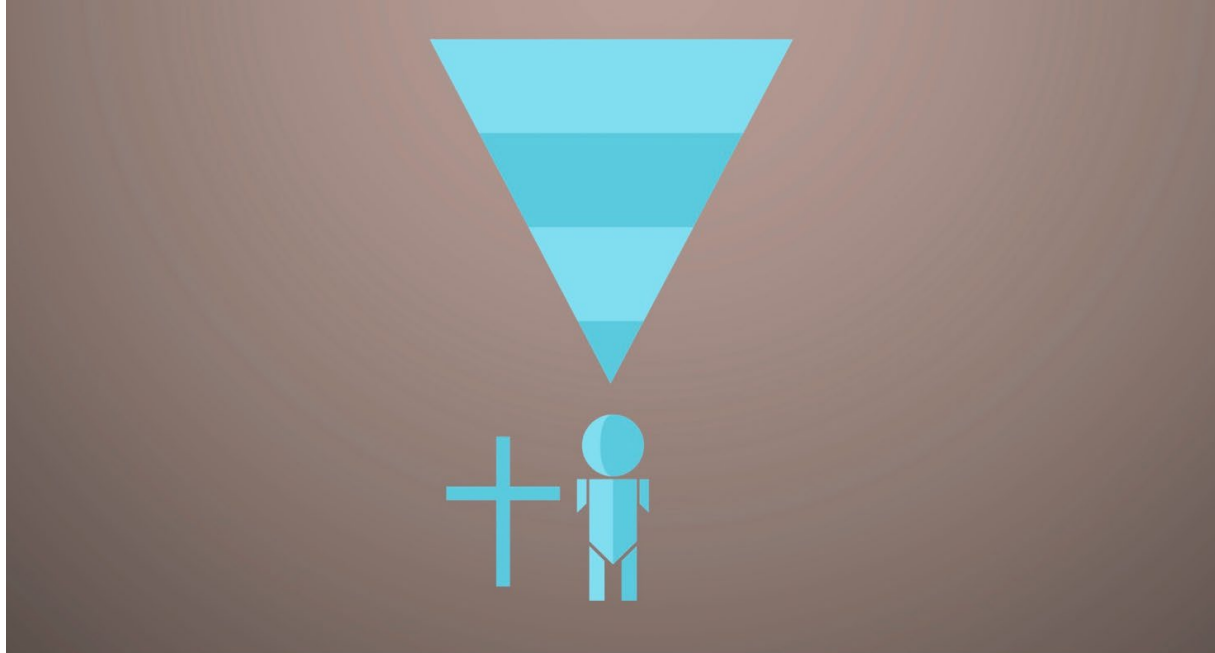
“The next day Moses took his seat to serve as judge for the people, and they stood around him from morning till evening. When his father-in-law saw all that Moses was doing for the people, he said, (...) “Select capable men from all the people—men who fear God, trustworthy men who hate dishonest gain—and appoint them as officials over thousands, hundreds, fifties and tens. Have them serve as judges for the people at all times, but have them bring every difficult case to you; the simple cases they can decide themselves. That will make your load lighter, because they will share it with you. If you do this and God so commands, you will be able to stand the strain, and all these people will go home satisfied.” Moses listened to his father-in-law and did everything he said.”

It must be noted that only some individuals received the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament and that the advice for such a leadership model did not come from God but from Jethro, a pagan priest.

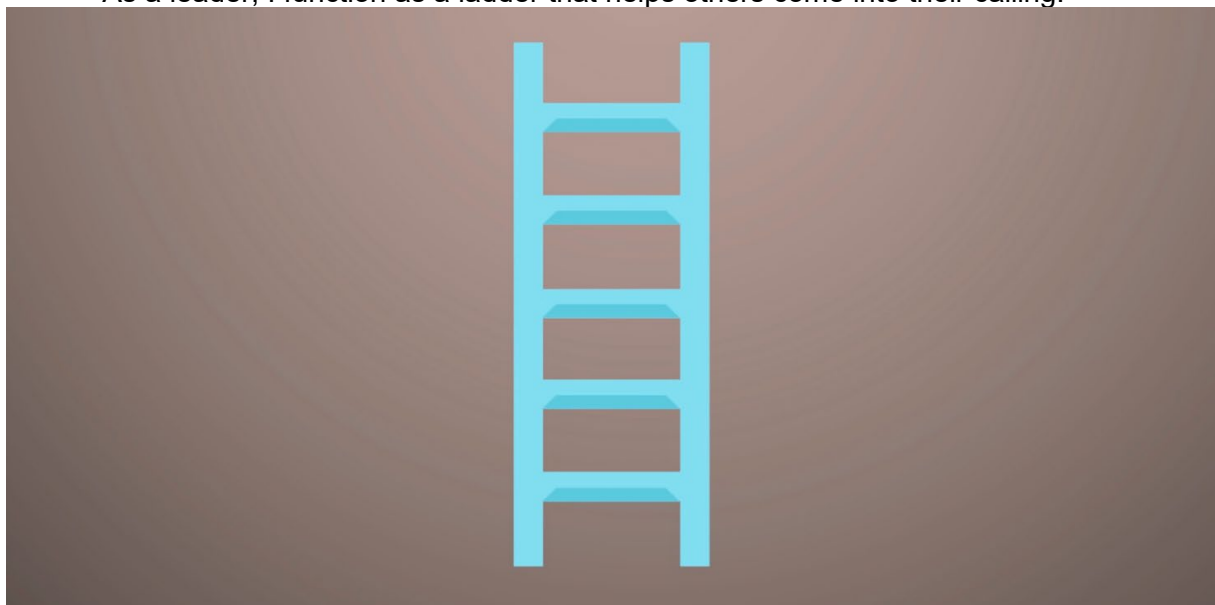
In the New Testament, Jesus brings servant leadership

Matthew 20:26-28

“Not so with you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be your slave—just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

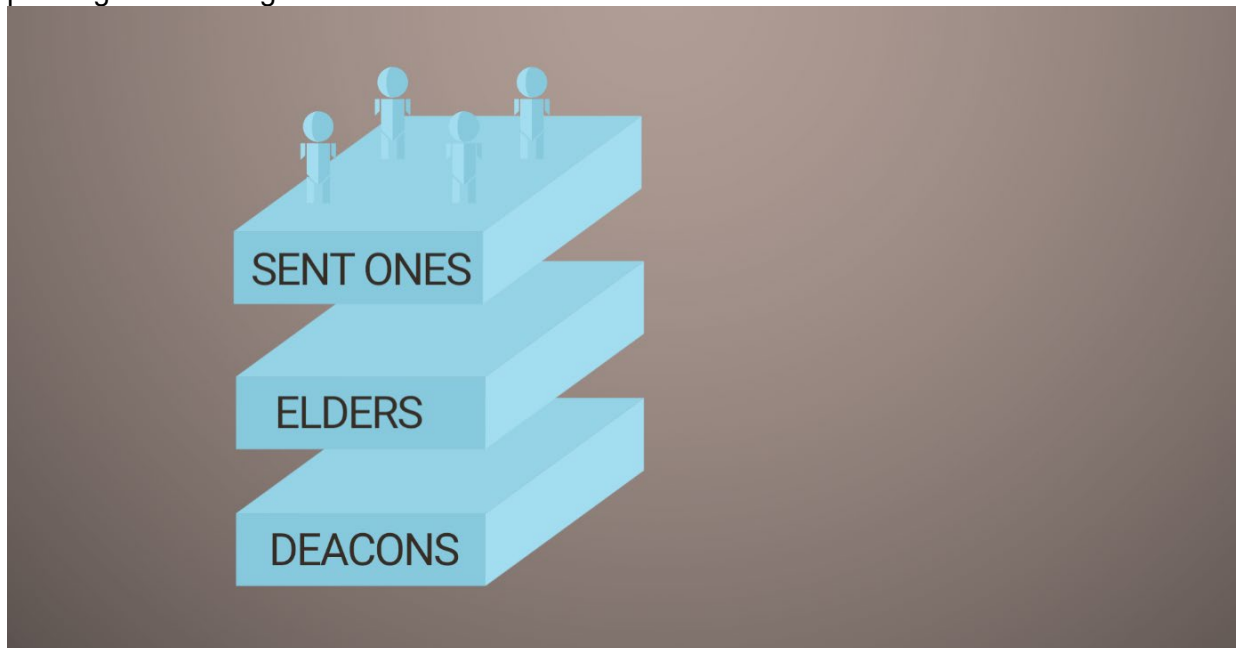


- Jesus redefines the core principles of leadership in the New Testament. He puts everything upside down.
- Jesus' view of leadership is not about:
 - ...standing at the top and commanding.
 - ...motivating others to fulfil the vision of the leader.
 - ... or developing strategies to put the leader's vision into practice.
- Leading others means to serve them. “The greatest shall be the servant of all.”
- Leading means to follow Jesus' example by giving one's life for others so that they can live.
- Leading means to serve others so that they can fulfil the calling God has for them.
- Leading means to serve others by helping them to be successful.
- As a leader, I function as a ladder that helps others come into their calling.



3 Types of leaders in the New Testament

The New Testament mentions three special kinds of leaders or servants who were involved in planting and building churches.



The leadership areas of the three types of leaders

New Testament leadership is always found in groups, there is no leadership lead of only one individual. No apostle is at work alone, they are always on a team. There is no individual elder but always a group of elders. The same is true for deacons.

Leadership of sent ones

- Greek: *apostello*: 'to send'; *apostolos*: 'the sent one'. Latin: *missio*: 'to send'; missionaries are the sent ones.
- They primarily lead at the beginning, when introducing discipleship and during the formation of the first house churches.
- The leadership of the sent ones is through serving and teaching the word of God.
- They serve the first disciples by teaching the basic values of the Kingdom of God. These values are:
 - Discipleship
 - Fellowship
 - Multiplication
- The sent ones teach these basic values to the first disciples and to the first house churches.
- The sent ones train the other two leadership levels, the deacons and elders.

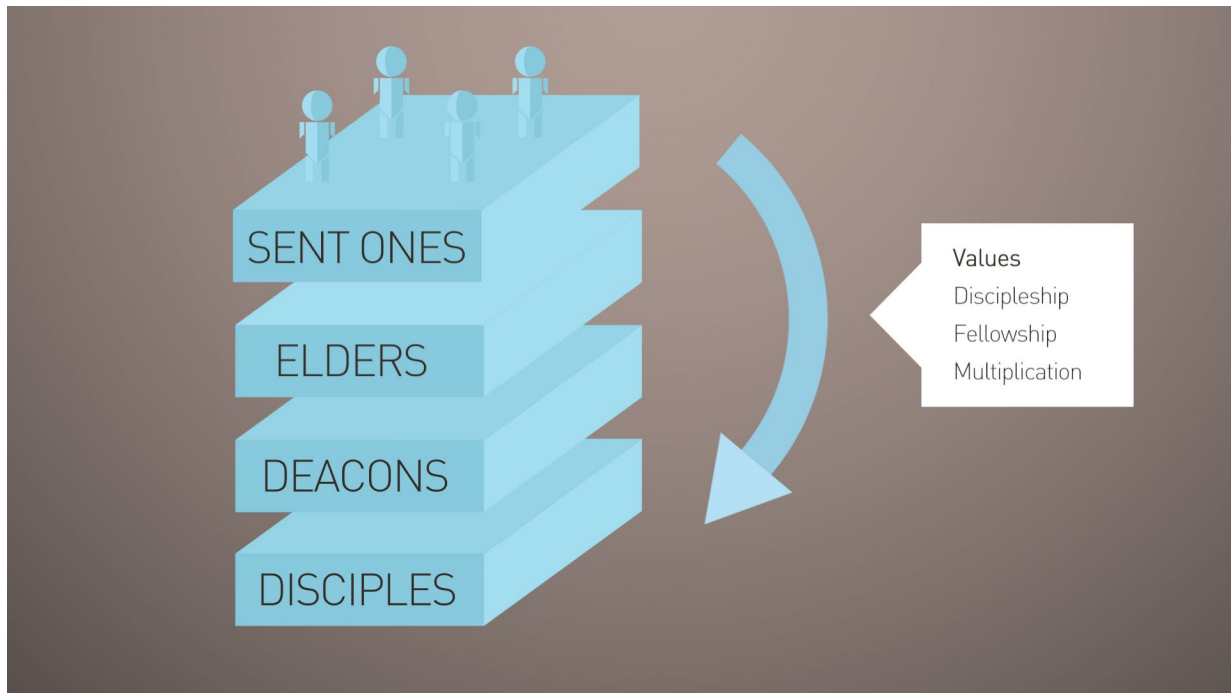
Leadership of the deacons

- Deacons serve a community of faith. They are like house parents in a house church.
- Their main task is to oversee that discipleship, fellowship and multiplication happen in the house church. They help those who are struggling to put into practice the core house church values.
- The leadership of the deacons is through serving and teaching the word of God.

Leadership of the elders

- Elders serve and oversee a group of 3 to 5 spiritual families (which is a networked house church).
- Their main task is to ensure that all spiritual families of a networked house church can really put into practice the basic values (discipleship, fellowship and multiplication). If a community of faith cannot do this anymore, the elders are called to reintroduce these basic values.
- The leadership of the elders is through serving and teaching the word of God.

The role of leadership in establishing a networked house church



1st phase

- The sending team of the sent ones visits an unreached ethnic group and finds a person or a house of peace that they baptize.
- Can this be men and women?
 - Yes, men and women can serve in the ministry of sending. There can be men and women in a sending team.
 - In the New Testament, however, only men received the title of Apostle. Nevertheless, women are a full participators in the ministry of sending.

2nd phase

- The members of the newly developed discipleship groups are disciplined by the sent ones.
- The sent ones lay the foundation (discipleship, fellowship, multiplication), so the discipleship groups become churches that meet in houses.



3rd phase

- The sent ones train some (2 to 4) from the community of faith as leaders of the community of faith.
- These leaders we call deacons. The main task of the deacons is to ensure that all members of the community of faith really live based on the basic values (discipleship, fellowship, multiplication). They ensure that the discipleship continues, that the fellowship does not decrease in quality and that multiplication does not stop.
- The deacons help when members of the community of faith are having difficulty.
- The sent ones train the deacons. Can men and women be deacons? Yes, men and women can be deacons.

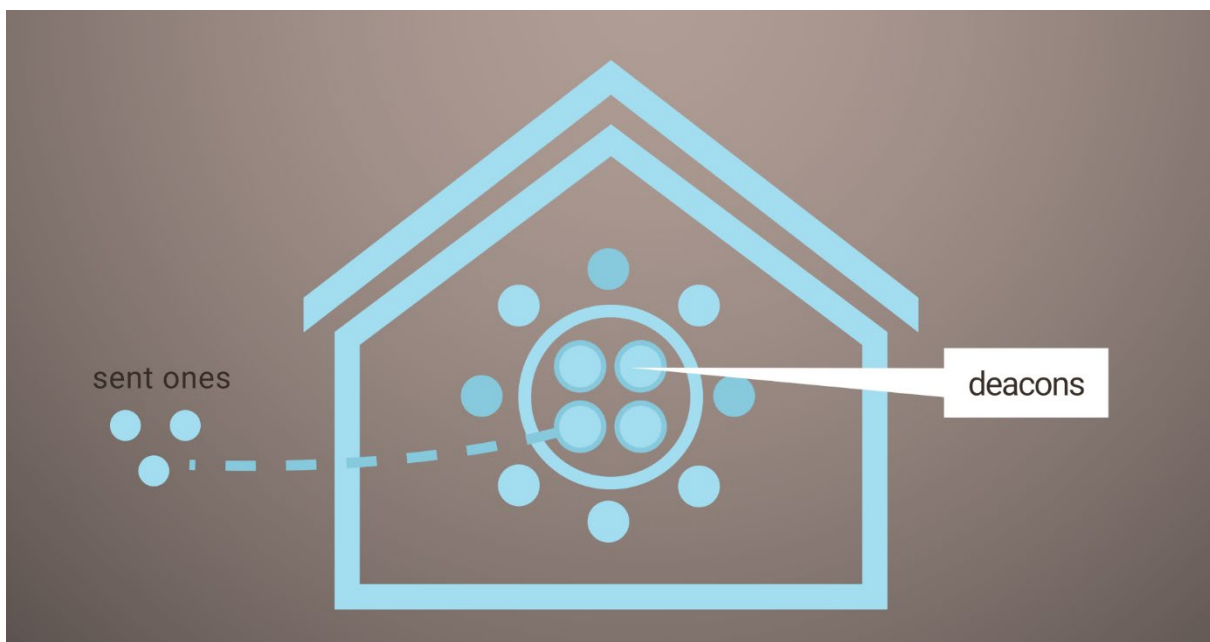
1 Timothy 3:11

"In the same way, the women [female deacons] are to be worthy of respect, not malicious talkers but temperate and trustworthy in everything."

We see that Nympha had a church that met in her house.

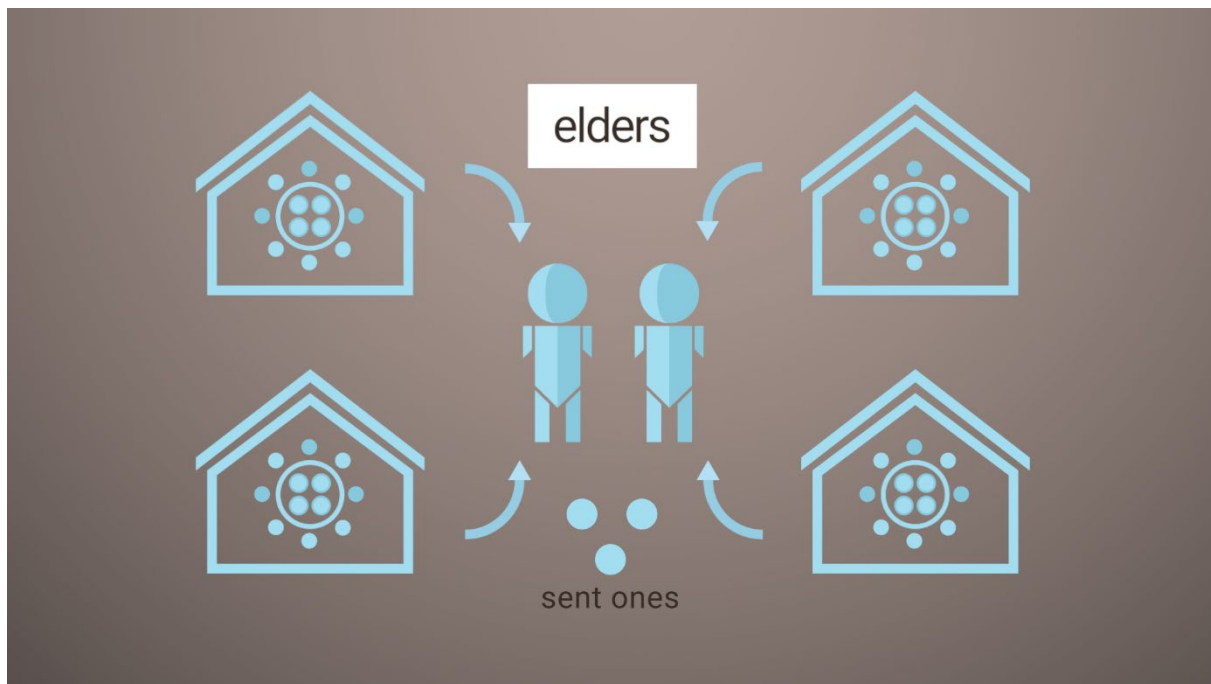
Colossians 4:15

"Give my greetings to the brothers and sisters at Laodicea, and to Nympha and the church in her house."



4th phase

- As soon as several spiritual families and a networked house church is formed, the sent ones train a few disciples within the spiritual families or from the group of deacons to be leaders. These leaders are responsible for the networked house church.
- We call this group of leaders of spiritual families the elders. They have a greater responsibility than deacons.
- The main task of the elders is to ensure that all spiritual families of a networked house church really live out the basic values (discipleship, fellowship, multiplication).
- When a community of faith struggles with these values, the elders help that family to get back on track.
- Can elders be men and women?
 - In the New Testament, there are no female elders. That is why we do not ordain women as elders. However, it is clear that women can also have teaching and leadership responsibilities.



- Planting these values and making sure that the values are put into practice is the **main task** of leaders in the New Testament.
- What we often see as the core task of leadership, that is, to develop and implement a vision, to lead the flock and give the church a direction, is actually **not** the main task of the leaders in the New Testament.
- Rather, the leaders primarily serve the disciples and help them so that each of them lives out the basic values and come into his or her calling.

Qualification, calling and training of New Testament leaders

1. The highest and most comprehensive spiritual training is when someone was well disciplined and now lives as a mature disciple. To achieve this, there is no need to acquire a special theological degree or another leadership training. Discipleship is the most comprehensive spiritual training that the leaders have had experienced.
A disciple carries out the deeds of Jesus and is being transformed into his character and likeness.
2. A serving heart is especially required from a leader. This is another core requirement. Those who only want to rule and not serve cannot be leaders.

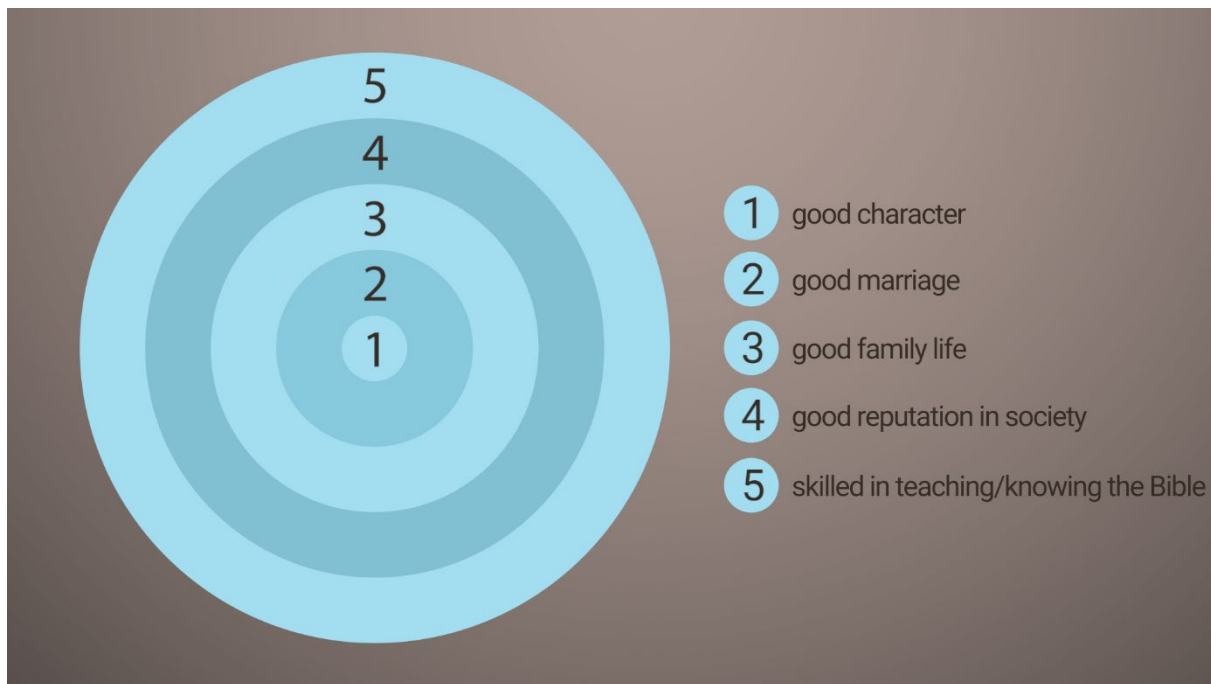
Matthew 20:26+28

“Not so with you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

3. Besides the two basic requirements mentioned, the following qualifications are also required: There are 4 qualifications for deacons and 5 qualifications for elders and sent ones.
 - a. Maturity in marriage
 - b. Maturity in family
 - c. Maturity in character
 - d. Maturity in life
 - e. (For elders and sent ones) Teaching ability

1 Timothy 3:1-11

“Here is a trustworthy saying: Whoever aspires to be an overseer desires a noble task. Now the overseer is to be above reproach, faithful to his wife, temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not given to drunkenness, not violent but gentle, not quarrelsome, not a lover of money. He must manage his own family well and see that his children obey him, and he must do so in a manner worthy of full respect. (If anyone does not know how to manage his own family, how can he take care of God’s church?) He must not be a recent convert, or he may become conceited and fall under the same judgment as the devil. He must also have a good reputation with outsiders, so that he will not fall into disgrace and into the devil’s trap. In the same way, deacons are to be worthy of respect, sincere, not indulging in much wine, and not pursuing dishonest gain. They must keep hold of the deep truths of the faith with a clear conscience. They must first be tested; and then if there is nothing against them, let them serve as deacons. In the same way, the women are to be worthy of respect, not malicious talkers but temperate and trustworthy in everything.”



Entrusting leadership

How is leadership entrusted?

1. Jesus has received all power and authority (including leadership) from the Father. Matthew 28:18: All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.
2. Jesus gives the sent ones all necessary power and authority (including leadership) to make disciples in an unreached ethnic group.
3. As soon as the sent ones disciple a discipleship group, they start to entrust the necessary power and authority to the disciples so that they can wholly live and serve as disciples.
4. As soon as the sent ones disciple a group of deacons, they start to entrust the necessary power and authority to the deacons so that they can wholly live and serve as deacons.
5. As soon as the sent ones disciple a group of elders, they start to entrust the necessary power and authority to the elders so that they can wholly live and serve as elders.

When the sent ones come into a region or an ethnic group, they carry all power, authority and leadership. In the moment that they ordain elders by laying hands on them, they have entrusted all power, authority and leadership to the elders. Real sent ones do not continue to claim more leadership and authority for themselves, but rather pass on as much as possible and entrust leadership into the hands of the local disciples as quickly as possible. The sent ones ordain the deacons and elders of the first generation.

Later, when the sent ones have moved on to a new place or a new ethnic group to start a new work, the elders and deacons, who were ordained by the sent ones, train new elders and deacons themselves.

Team leadership

The New Testament does not mention leadership of a single person (except Jesus, who is part of a leadership team with the Father and the Holy Spirit himself). It is always a team leadership. That is why we should never only ordain an individual deacon or an individual elder or commission an individual sent one but groups.

Summary

- When we find a person or a house of peace, we baptize them and begin a discipleship group to disciple them to become mature disciples.
- The discipleship group then develops into a mature and committed community of faith, that lives out the 12 values together.
- That first community of faith grows into 3 to 5 communities of faith, a networked house church.
- These groups, or this small network of communities of faith, are closely connected to each other through:
 - Relationships, since all groups know each other and have likely been started and formed by the same people. They are related to one another, they have the same DNA and are of the same spiritual “bloodline.”
 - The same values.
 - The same traditions: They have the same style of living as a community of faith, same church culture, same songs and the same style of serving the Lord’s Supper.
- We train deacons as leaders of the communities of faith and elders as leaders for the networked house churches.
- In theory, everything is in place to multiply networked house churches and to develop a self-multiplying discipleship movement. A so-called DMM (Discipleship Multiplication Movement) has at least 1,000 baptized persons in at least 100 spiritual families by the 4th generation.

For the equipping of the saints

Our body only functions if it gets a new portion of oxygen every few seconds. God created breathing, a natural function, which gives a constant intake of fresh air. Thanks to this function, everything continues to operate properly. Without this function the body itself cannot function, regenerate or reproduce and it eventually dies. Spiritually it is the same. Certain impulses are needed again and again for a movement to multiply and grow in a healthy way. Such training impulses are needed in 5 areas:

- Impulses from sent ones so that we don’t neglect to continue the sending.
- Prophetic impulses so that we continue to seek the presence and the voice of God.
- Evangelistic impulses so that we continue to go and proclaim the gospel of the Kingdom of God.
- Shepherd impulses so that we continue to look after each other, encourage, admonish and comfort one another and carry the weak ones.
- Teaching impulses so that we continue to dig into the Scriptures and study the word of God, just like the people in Berea. They examined the Scriptures to distinguish what was an actual word from God and what was not (Acts 17:11).

Ephesians 4:11-13

“So Christ himself gave the apostles, the prophets, the evangelists, the pastors and teachers, to equip his people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ.”

This passage talks about the so-called fivefold ministry. This ministry is not the leadership level. According to these verses, the carriers of the gifts are not leaders in the church but trainers and equippers of the saints. Their role is to help to train the disciples. They give spiritual impulses that freshen the body and keep it alive.

In the growing networked house churches, we look for people that are especially gifted in these areas. We identify them and train them. Then we let them serve the spiritual families. First in their specific community of faith. Secondly rotating between the communities of faith. Afterwards, we let them serve in the networked house church. We call this the rotating fivefold

ministry. These gifted people then train other people that have been especially gifted in this area.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:
 - A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
 - B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
 - C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your
"persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐
14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
15. Find potential leaders from every community of faith (deacons and elders) and begin
a leadership training with them. ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 45

Multiplication – discipleship movement DMM

This 45th training lesson brings us to the 5th and last major part of the sending ministry.

Review

- The first part dealt with the requirements for us to do the ministry of sending in the right way, mainly the power of the Holy Spirit and prayer for the harvest.
- The second part looked at the first nine of the ten commandments of sending.
- In the third part we learned about the commandment to make disciples of all ethnic groups.
- The fourth part was about the fellowship of the disciples. While we teach the disciples in the group, they should start to form a community of faith. And from there several spiritual families that make up networked house churches should be formed.
- This fifth and last part looks at reproduction, multiplication and discipleship movements; a so-called DMM (Discipleship Multiplication).

Multiplication

- The goal of the ministry of sending is to go to the unreached and make disciples there. (Matthew 28:18-20)
- The training of the disciples should happen in community. That is why we form communities of faith, a spiritual family, with the disciples.
- Multiplication is a core value of God and therefore also a core value in His creation!
 - Multiplication lies in the nature of all creation.
 - The Creator himself is a multiplier.
 - It was his intention to create humans, plants and animals in a way that they could reproduce.
- Without reproduction or multiplication creation would stagnate and die.
- It is the same in the spiritual discipleship process. Without reproduction, without multiplication there will be stagnation and eventually death.
- Most churches struggle in the area of multiplication. Multiplication is perhaps the value that churches have neglected the most over the past few centuries.
- However, it is obvious that the Holy Spirit is reintroducing this lost aspect of reproduction and multiplication in a strong way, especially in the work of missionaries.
- Let us take up the comparison between the natural and the spiritual world again and ask ourselves: what are the three most important values, principles and processes of a natural family?
 1. A loving and trusting relationship.
 2. Having children and training them.
 3. Adult children get married, have children themselves and starting new families.
- Thus, multiplication is one of the core values in the natural family.
- It is very similar in spiritual families, the house churches.
 1. Loving and trusting relationships: real community.
 2. Having spiritual children and training them: evangelism and discipleship.
 3. Disciples go themselves, make new disciples and start new communities: multiplication.

Multiplication is a central part in the creation order

Back to creation and the principle of multiplication in creation: God is a God of multiplication. Everything he created, he also equipped with the ability to multiply itself!

Genesis 1:29

"Then God said, 'I give you every seed-bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has fruit with seed in it. They will be yours for food.'"



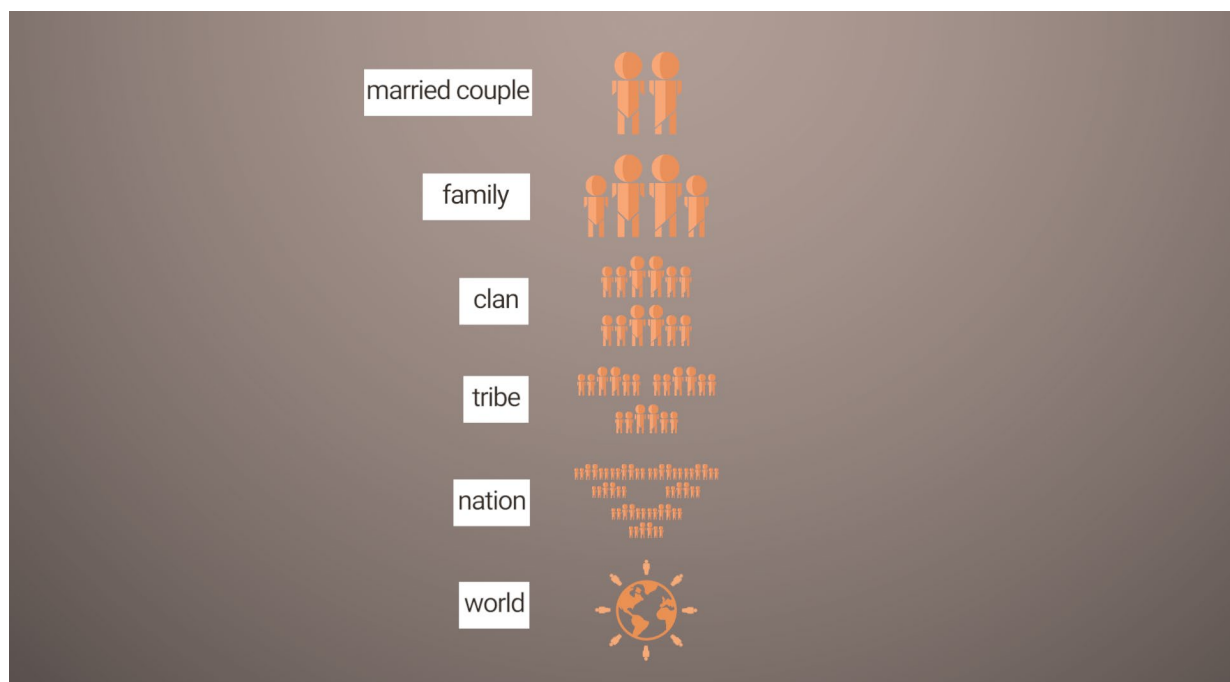
How many seeds does a ripe apple have? Normally the core of a ripe apple consists of 5 chambers. In most varieties each chamber contains two seeds. There are some varieties with 2-4 seeds. Attention: The real fruit of an apple is an apple tree with a lot of apples.

Within the context of his creation, the Lord then entrusted humans with a so-called cultural duty, which is to fill the earth:

Genesis 1:28

"God blessed them and said to them, 'Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it.'"

One married couple should fill the earth!? One couple producing 8 to 9 billion children is simply impossible. The great cultural duty cannot possibly be fulfilled without multiplication!



- God gave humans the great cultural duty for creation, to multiply and fill the earth.
- Jesus also gave a similar commandment within the Kingdom of God: the commandment to make disciples.

Multiplication is a central part of the great commission

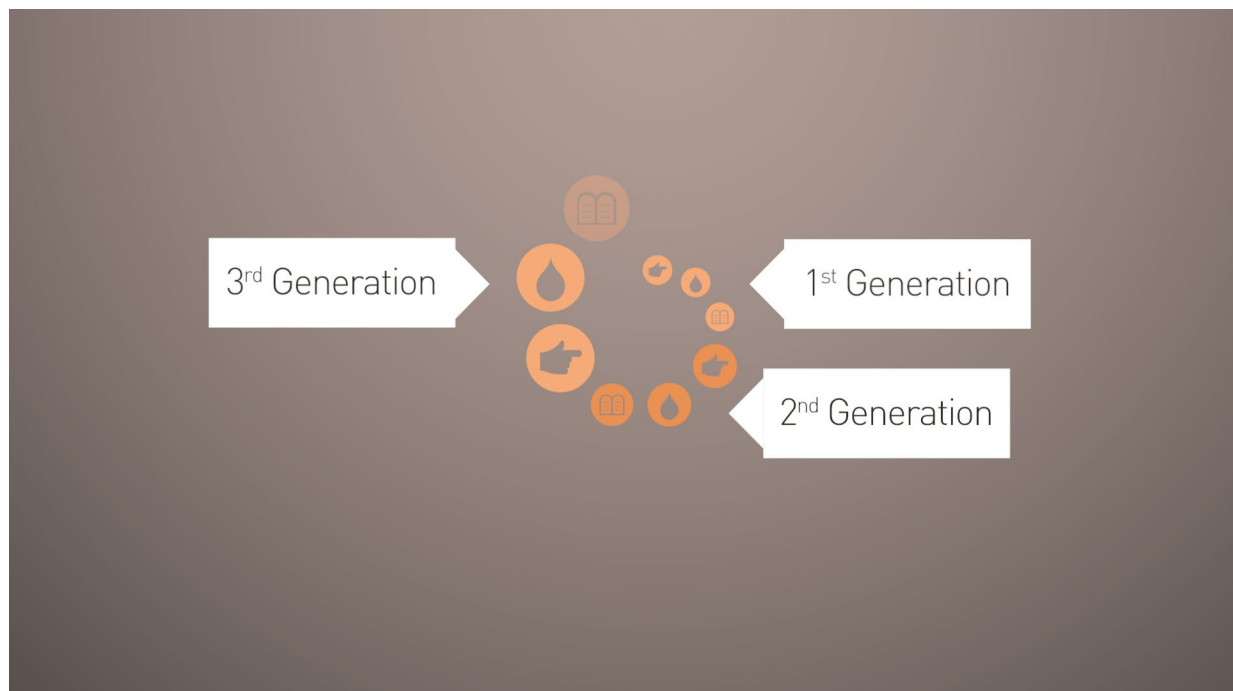
Matthew 28:18-20

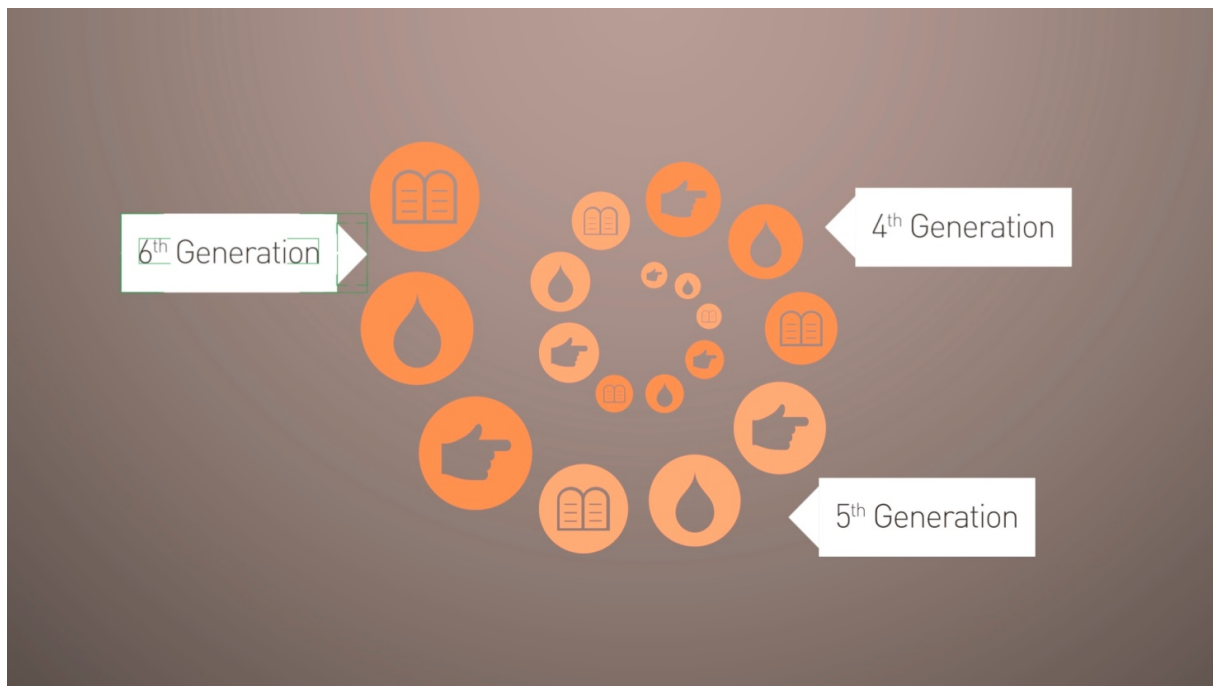
Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

- Even within the spiritual realm, in the Kingdom of God, it is impossible to fulfil the discipleship commandment without multiplication!
- A closer look reveals that the discipleship commandment contains the instruction for multiplication and reproduction. Indeed, it is an order to start a discipleship movement. The task cannot be fulfilled otherwise!
- Make disciples and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you.

The discipleship commandment actually already implies:

- A discipleship reproduction cycle
- A discipleship multiplication cycle
- A discipleship movement
- A DMM – Disciple Multiplication Movement (1000 baptized persons, 100 groups, 4 generations)





The discipleship commandment means:

- The person who has been made into a disciple,
- transforms others to be what he is, which is a disciple.
- The discipleship commandment is actually a discipleship multiplication commandment.
- The people who are disciple makers themselves, make of others what they are, which is a disciple maker.

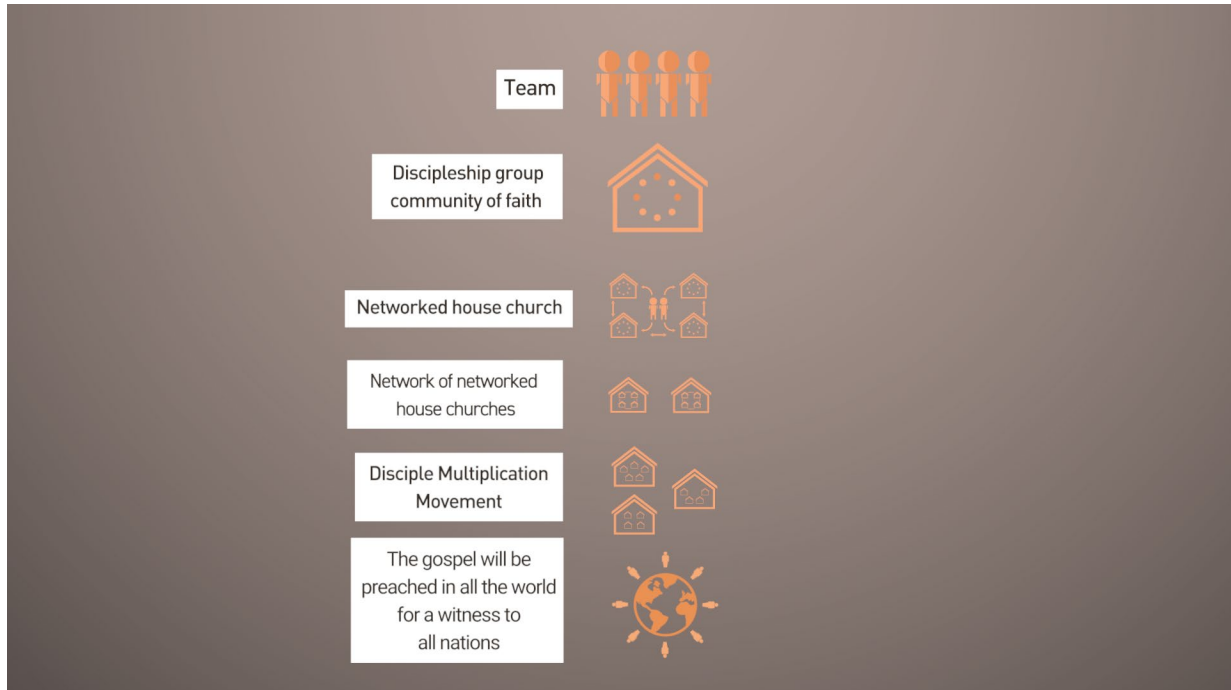
Paul describes the secret for a discipleship movement in 2 Timothy 2:2. It is the core principle for a movement.

2 Timothy 2:2

“And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.”

- Pass on what you have received.
- Example: We are doing a training in Africa. The training leaders decided to give some credit for mobile phones to all participants, so they could call their wives after each training part and pass on what they had learned to them.
- We should not store up for years what we have learned. We should immediately pass on what we have received.
- If you have
 - heard the Gospel, tell your neighbour.
 - been baptized (in water and Spirit), baptize others.
 - been disciplined, disciple others.
 - received deliverance, deliver others.
 - received healing, heal others.
- This is the principle from 2 Timothy 2:2.

DMM – The ministry of sending

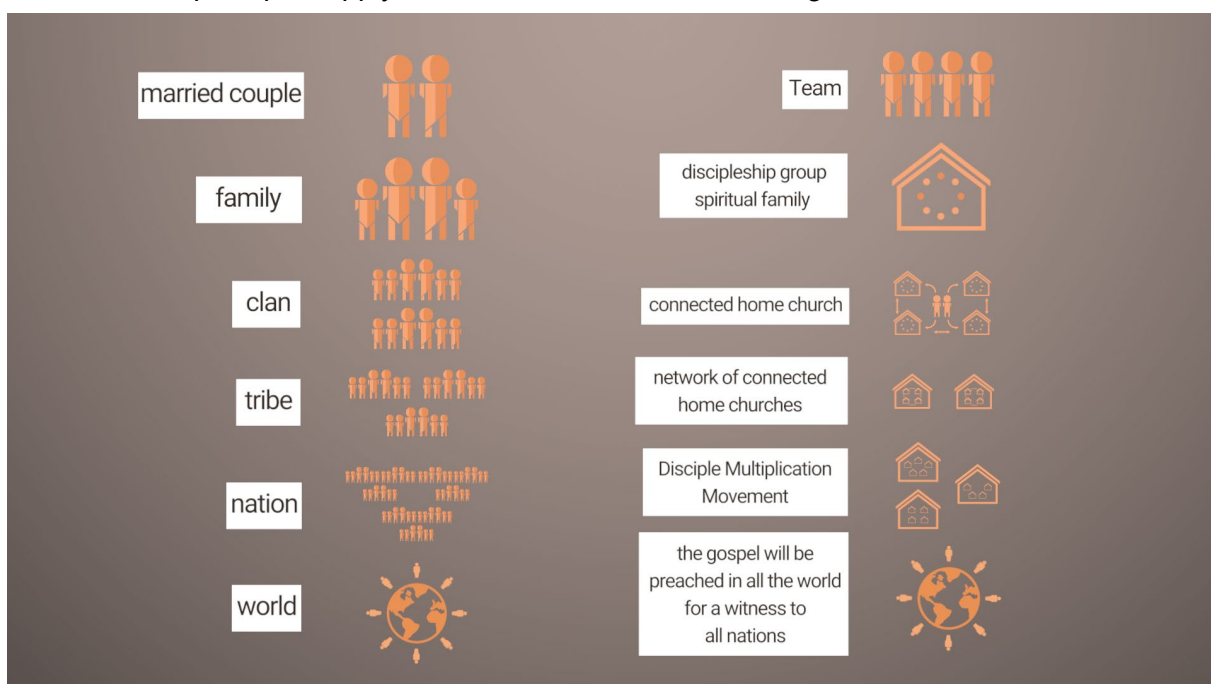


How does this discipleship commandment work?

We start with a group of sent ones. They start a discipleship group. A community of faith is then formed, which then develops into more communities of faith and then into a networked house church. Out of this networked house church, more networked house churches are formed, which starts a movement. This goes on until all ethnic groups, tribes and peoples are “covered” with the Gospel. This is clearly the goal, the vision that Jesus had and which he entrusted and is entrusting it to his disciples.

Summary

Multiplication is a core value in creation and as well in the Kingdom of God. The great cultural duty to multiply and fill the earth and the great discipleship commandment cannot be fulfilled without multiplication. When we compare the following two columns in the illustration we see that the same principles apply in creation as well as in the Kingdom of God.



Multiplication is a central part for the sending of teams

Genesis 1:28

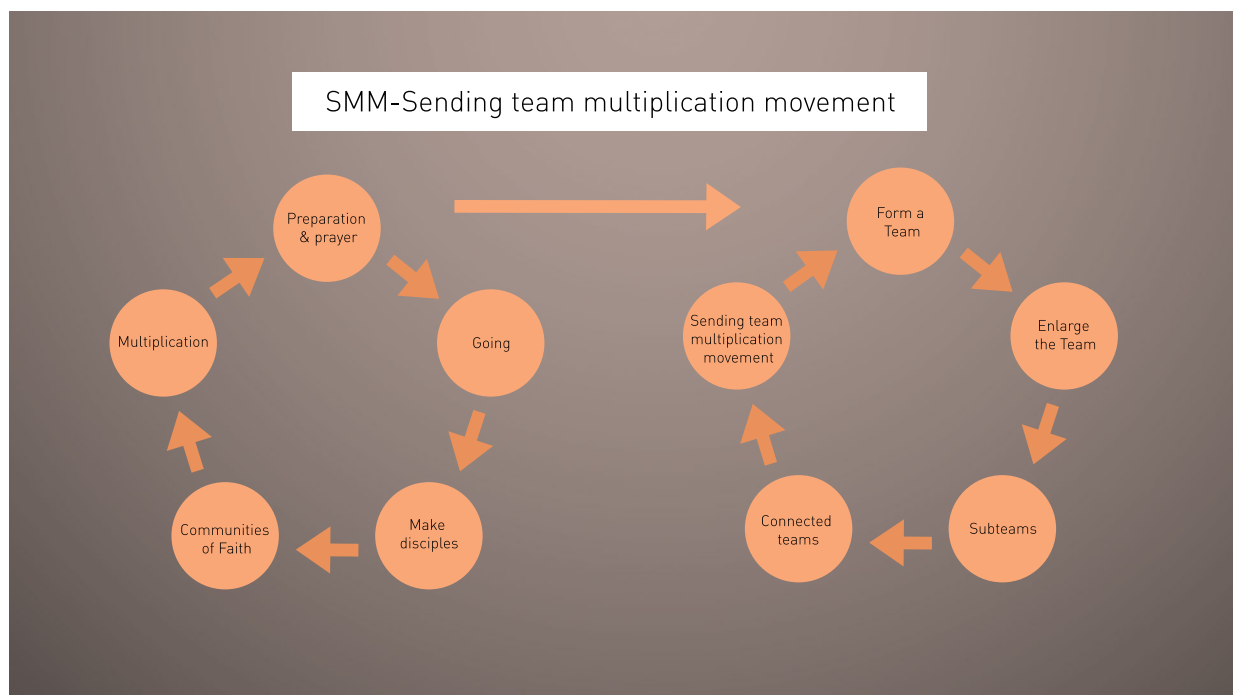
"God blessed them and said to them, 'Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it.'"

- Without the principal of multiplication, it wouldn't have been possible to fulfil the great cultural duty to multiply and fill the earth.

Matthew 28:19-20

"Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you."

- Without the principal of multiplication, it's impossible to fulfil the great commission. Only disciples that make disciples who make disciples can make disciples of all nations. This leads to a DMM.
- The most effective tool to fulfil the great commission and to make disciples of all ethnic groups is not a DMM in itself, but the multiplication of sending teams. We call this SMM – (sending team multiplication movement). A sending team grows, goes on to form subteams. The subteams grow in number and therefore they become mature, connected teams. This goes on to a sending team multiplication movement. Every sending team multiplies sending teams. Each of these teams can start many DMMs.



Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:
 - A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
 - B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
 - C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐
14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
15. Continue to train leaders of networked house churches ☐
16. Introduce the "Pass on what you've received"-principle to your disciples, discipleship groups, spiritual families, networked house churches, deacons and elders. ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 46

Multiplication – The Jesus model

- Multiplication is one of the core aspects in the natural creation, as well as in the Kingdom of God.
- Both the great cultural duty and the great discipleship commandment cannot be fulfilled without multiplication.
- The goal of this BEsent training is to put into practice the discipleship commandment in a way that enables real reproduction and multiplication.
- We also have the desire to see more discipleship movements.
- A Disciple Multiplication Movement (DMM) means at least 1,000 baptized people that meet in at least 100 groups and have already reproduced at least four times (four generations).

Discipleship movement in the ministry of Jesus

- How did Jesus demonstrate all of this? We find most examples for discipleship and church life in the book of Acts and not in the Gospels. However, some steps of a discipleship movement can also be seen in the Gospels.
- Jesus had 12 disciples. That is a ratio of **1:12**. Some Gospels show that he invested more time discipling Peter, John, and James than other disciples. Here we see a ratio of **1:3**. I could imagine that these three may have passed on what they have learned from Jesus to the rest of the twelve. That again would be a ratio of **1:3**.
- Matthew 9 mentions how Levi (Matthew) was called into discipleship and trained by Jesus at the tax booths. Levi was present and saw how Jesus healed and delivered people. Already one chapter later (Matthew 10) he is being sent out as one of the twelve disciples.
- In Luke 9 the twelve are sent out. The 72 disciples are sent out in Luke 10. Most likely, the twelve trained the 72 disciples. This would be a ratio of **1:6**.
- Jesus was crucified three years later. After another 50 days, the first church was formed at Pentecost. We read that 120 disciples prayed in the upper room. Assuming the twelve disciples trained all of those present, this would mean there were 108 being training by the twelve, a ratio of **1:9**.

Paul writes:

1 Corinthians 15:6

“After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of the brothers and sisters at the same time, most of whom are still living, though some have fallen asleep.”

- If these 500 were trained by the 120, we would have a ratio of about **1:3** (500-120=380.) Then there were 3,000 converts at Pentecost. If the 500 trained these new converts, we would have a ratio of **1:6**.

Acts 2:47

“...praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved.”

Acts 4:4

“But many who heard the message believed; so the number of men who believed grew to about five thousand.”

- 5,000 men are mentioned. Perhaps there were 5,000 more women and another 5,000 children. The Jerusalem church was estimated to have numbered 15,000 to 25,000 people. The 3,000 could have discipled the 12,000 ($15,000 - 3,000 = 12,000$), which would be a ratio of **1:4** and if we use 22,000 ($25,000 - 3,000 = 22,000$), there would be a ratio of **1:7**.
- Then something very interesting happens: persecution! This persecution is interesting because we can deduct from the biblical circumstances that the church being planted in Jerusalem went through a discipleship process, those who came to faith were discipled.
- After the initial exceedingly fruitful growth, Stephen was stoned. By the way, Paul was present there. The first persecution ensued and the disciples were scattered. Interestingly, only the disciples were persecuted and scattered but not the Apostles in Jerusalem.

Acts 8:1

“And Saul approved of their killing him [Stephen]. On that day a great persecution broke out against the church in Jerusalem, and all except the apostles were scattered throughout Judea and Samaria.”

- It happened just as the Jesus had predicted: “when the power comes, they will be witnesses in Jerusalem, in Judea, in Samaria and to the ends of the earth.” This did not happen directly after Pentecost. The church in Jerusalem grew strongly and the people enjoyed fellowship in Jerusalem. Only because of persecution did the disciples go to the places the Jesus had announced. God was able to use the circumstances of this persecution to send out these 15,000 to 20,000 disciples. What did these Christians then do?

Acts 8:4

“Those who had been scattered preached the word wherever they went.”

Acts 11:19-22

“Now those who had been scattered by the persecution that broke out when Stephen was killed travelled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus and Antioch, spreading the word only among Jews. Some of them, however, men from Cyprus and Cyrene, went to Antioch and began to speak to Greeks also, telling them the good news about the Lord Jesus. The Lord’s hand was with them, and a great number of people believed and turned to the Lord. News of this reached the church in Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch.”

- From the behaviour of the persecuted and scattered disciples, we can deduce that these people had been discipled in Jerusalem.
- Wherever they went they proclaimed the Gospel and many came to faith, so many that Barnabas, who brought along his friend Paul, was sent out to them. They came to Antioch and helped disciple the people there.
- Later Paul, Barnabas and John Mark were sent out by the Holy Spirit and the church in Antioch to fulfil the great discipleship commandment.

Acts 13:1-2

“Now in the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen (who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch) and Saul. While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them.”

- Barnabas was probably discipled in Jerusalem and was a part of the local community (Acts 2:42-46). He sold a field and laid the revenue at the feet of the Apostles (Acts 5:36-37).
- Barnabas and Paul then did the ministry of sent ones on their first missionary journey. They made disciples and planted communities in different places.

Discipleship movement in the ministry of Paul

- Paul was not alone on his second missionary journey, he travelled with a team. Silas, Timothy, Luke and perhaps Titus were a part of this team. First, they came to Philippi and started a church in Lydia's house and one in the house of the jailor. They moved on to the city of Thessalonica. A part of the team probably remained in Philippi and continued to disciple the new believers. Meanwhile Paul travelled to Thessalonica with the rest of the team. A discipleship movement then developed there. Due to unrest, Paul was only able to stay in Thessalonica for three weeks. He left behind another part of his team, while he moved on to Berea and Corinth. Later, Paul writes to the newly developed movement in Thessalonica in the first and second letters to the Thessalonians.

1 Thessalonians 2:1+11-12

„You know, brothers and sisters, that our visit to you was not without results....

For you know that we dealt with each of you as a father deals with his own children, encouraging, comforting and urging you to live lives worthy of God, who calls you into his kingdom and glory.“

- Paul describes here how they disciplined these people as a team. In the next passage, we read what these disciples did in Thessalonica.

1 Thessalonians 1:6-8

“For we know, brothers and sisters ... You became imitators of us and of the Lord, for you welcomed the message in the midst of severe suffering with the joy given by the Holy Spirit. And so you became a model to all the believers in Macedonia and Achaia. The Lord's message rang out from you not only in Macedonia and Achaia—your faith in God has become known everywhere. Therefore we do not need to say anything about it.”

- Paul came to Thessalonica in Greece and founded this church within three weeks there. Since he could not stay himself, his team disciplined these people. In his letter, we read that the Gospel was proclaimed in all of Macedonia (Northern Greece) and Achaia (Southern Greece), in short, in all of Greece and even beyond, originating from the church in Thessalonica. This is a huge discipleship movement.
- This happened because these people were disciplined and passed on what they had received. They followed the example of Paul and Jesus.

1 Thessalonians 1:6-8

“You became imitators of us and of the Lord, for you welcomed the message in the midst of severe suffering with the joy given by the Holy Spirit. And so you became a model to all the believers in Macedonia and Achaia. The Lord's message rang out from you not only in Macedonia and Achaia—your faith in God has become known everywhere. Therefore we do not need to say anything about it.”



- Paul experienced another huge discipleship movement on his third missionary journey. He came to Ephesus, the capital city of the former Roman province of Asia Minor, located in modern day western Turkey. The province of Asia Minor encompassed 4 to 5 million inhabitants; the city of Ephesus had about 200,000 inhabitants.
- Through the Apostle Paul and his team, a discipleship movement was started in Ephesus that reached all of Asia Minor with its 4 to 5 million inhabitants, all of this within the timespan of three years.
- Paul proclaimed the Gospel of the Kingdom of God in Ephesus and disciplined the people there very intensely for three years, day and night.

Acts 20:31

"So be on your guard! Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you night and day with tears."

Acts 19:8-10

"Paul entered the synagogue and spoke boldly there for three months, arguing persuasively about the kingdom of God. But some of them became obstinate; they refused to believe and publicly maligned the Way. So Paul left them. He took the disciples with him and had discussions daily in the lecture hall of Tyrannus. This went on for two years, so that all the Jews and Greeks who lived in the province of Asia heard the word of the Lord."

- Paul trained the people on the premises of Tyrannus. The disciples he trained then carried the Gospel into the whole province, so that the whole province was reached.
- For Paul this meant that house churches began to form everywhere.

Acts 19:10

"This went on for two years, so that all the Jews and Greeks who lived in the province of Asia heard the word of the Lord."

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:

A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐

B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐

C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐

2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐

3. Look for persons of peace ☐

4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐

5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐

6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐

7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐

8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐

9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐

10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐

11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐

12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐

13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your
"persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you ☐

14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐

15. Continue to train leaders of networked house churches ☐

16. Appoint your main disciples and the key people for multiplication that you
want to send out. Invest yourself especially into these multipliers. ☐

17. Introduce the multiplication principle to your disciples, discipleship groups,
spiritual families, networked house churches, deacons and elders. ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 47

Multiplication – multiplication principles

In this 47th lesson, we are going to look in detail at the following multiplication principles:

- The 222 Principle according 2 Timothy 2:2
- Exponential growth
- Elephants and rabbits
- Make disciples of all peoples – everyone can win the whole world
- Multiplication on all levels

222 – 2 Timothy 2:2

The secret of a movement is that the disciples directly pass on what they have received.

2 Timothy 2:2

And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.

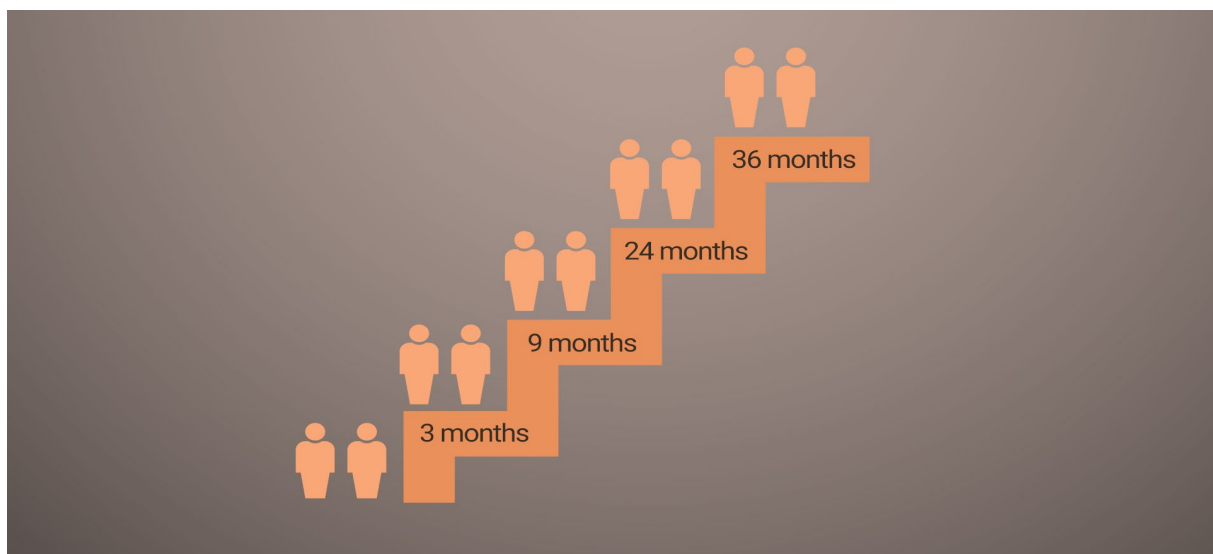
This verse implies four multiplication levels:

1. Paul
2. Timothy
3. Reliable people
4. Others

This is why having four multiplication levels (four generations) helps define a movement today. There is something like a critical point. Once this point is reached, the dynamics of a movement typically can't be stopped anymore. This critical point is reached once these factors are in place

- 1,000 disciples in
- 100 house churches throughout
- 4th generation.

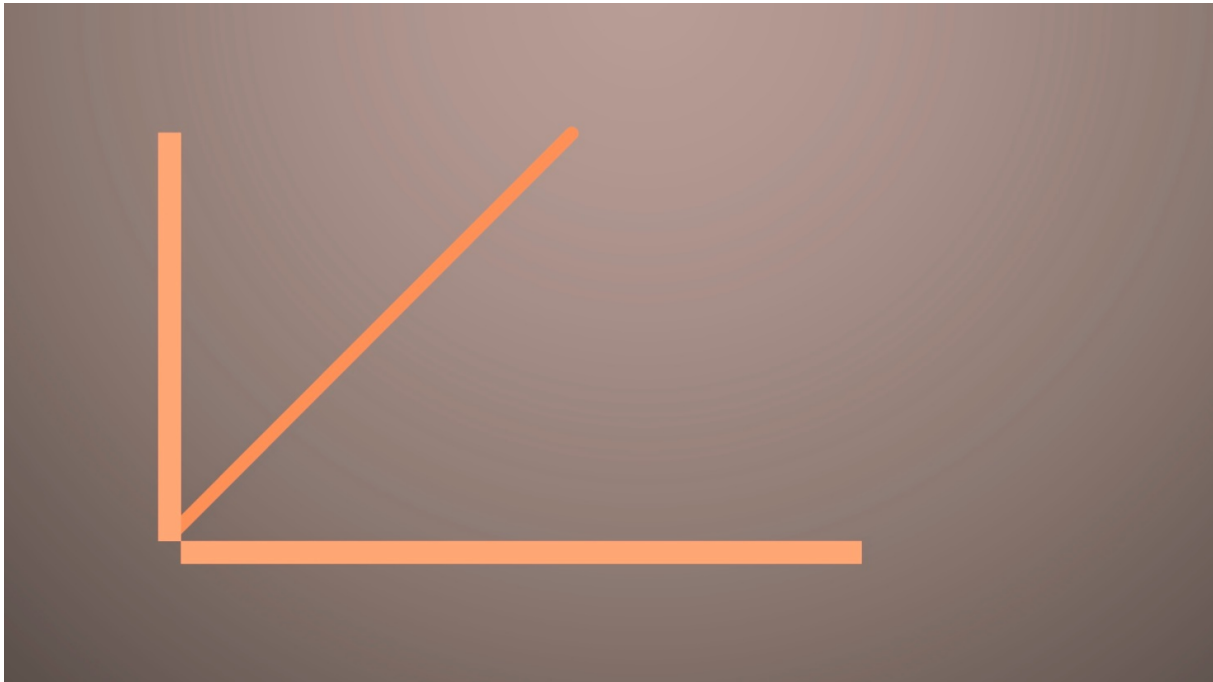
This is the definition of a DMM. It is truly a breath-taking phenomenon to see the Holy Spirit creating such movements everywhere in the world.



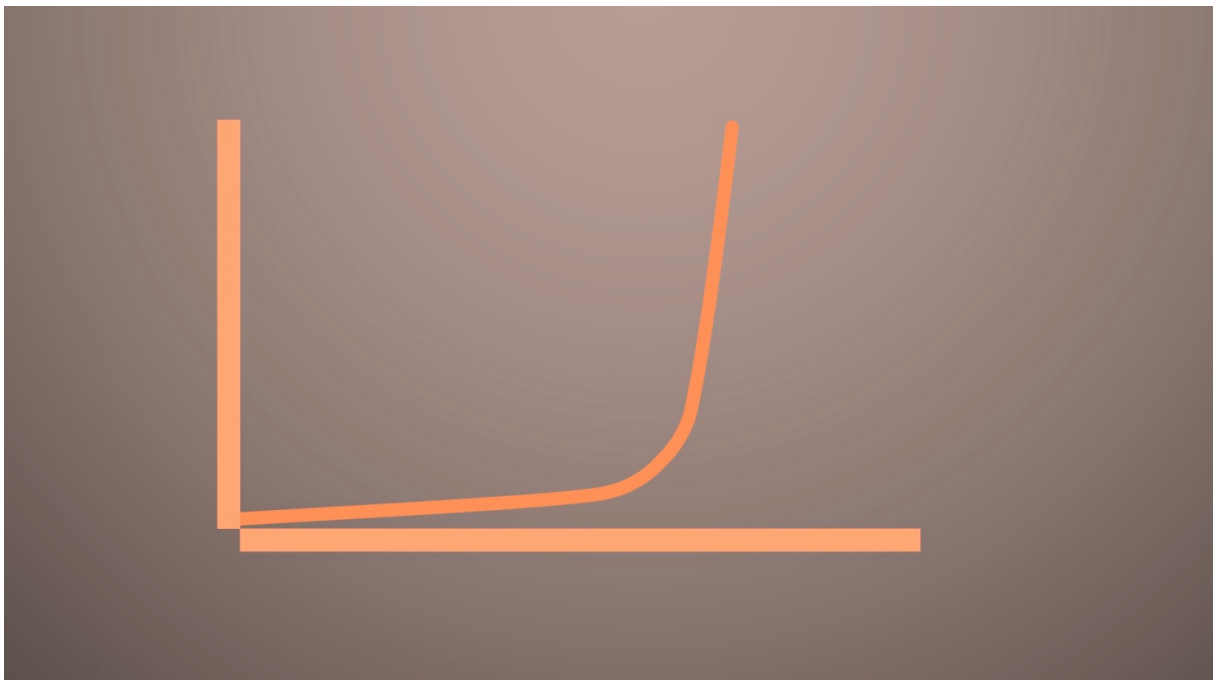
Exponential growth

There are two types of growth: linear and exponential. Linear growth in movements happens when people are added one at a time. However, there is also exponential growth (growth by multiplication.) The key to exponential growth is that real disciples make disciples of others who again make disciples of even more people. This is growth by multiplication.

When new believers are added to the church one at a time, not discipled, and therefore do not pass on what they have received it is linear growth (growth by addition.) It still increases steadily, as seen in the linear growth curve below.

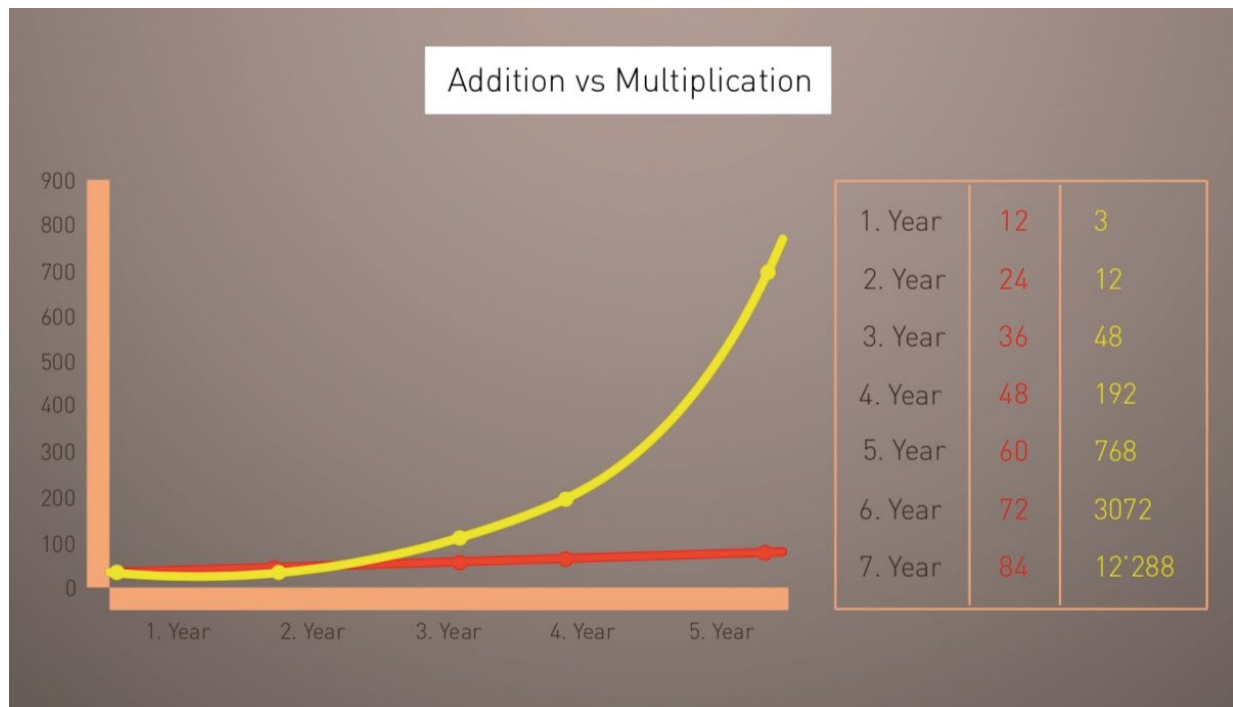


However, with exponential growth the curve looks quite different, as seen in the diagram below.



It is interesting that the exponential curve grows slower than the linear curve at the beginning. One invests a lot of time to train the first disciples, but then they start to disciple others who disciple even more. The first generation begins to reproduce generations. Then between the 5th and the 7th multiplication level there is suddenly an explosive boost and the exponential curve begins to grow exceedingly faster than the linear curve.

The right foundation is required for an exponential boost to happen. At first, much patience is needed to invest in disciples so that they are so excited that they themselves would invest in others with joy and not out of a sense of obligation.



God loves lots of fruit.

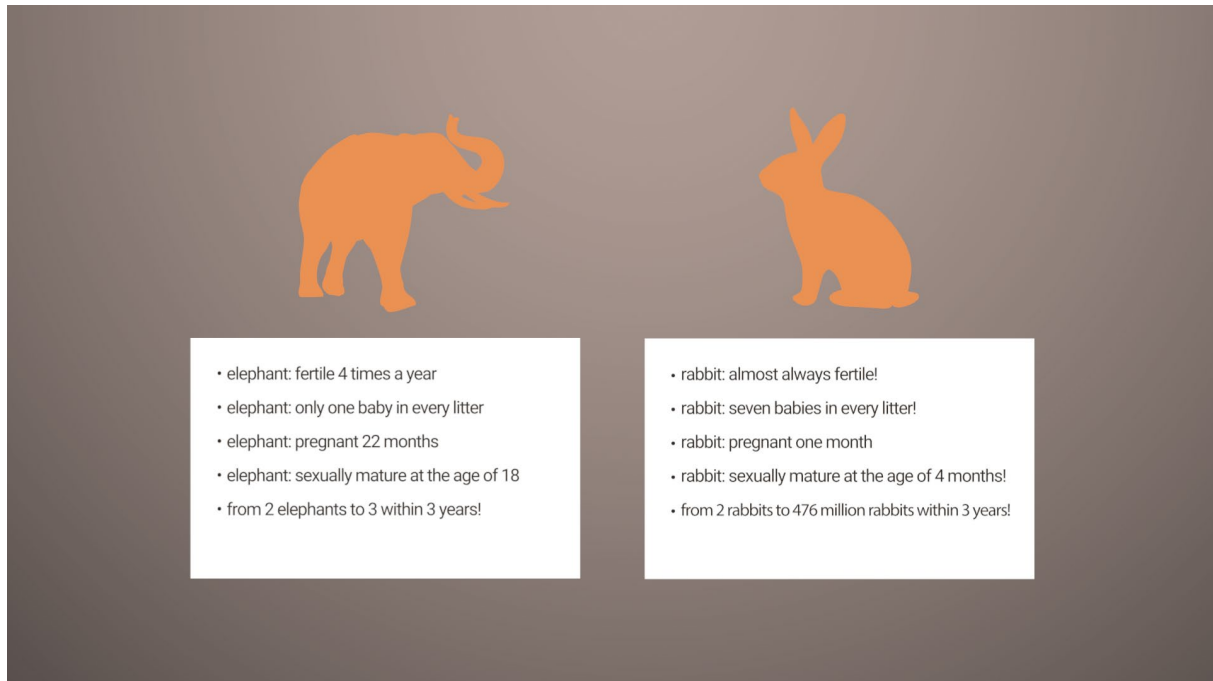
John 15:2-16

"He cuts off every branch in me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit he prunes so that it will be even more fruitful. ... If you remain in me and I in you, you will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. ... You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you so that you might go and bear fruit—fruit that will last—and so that whatever you ask in my name the Father will give you."

Lots of fruit, more fruit, fruit that will last!

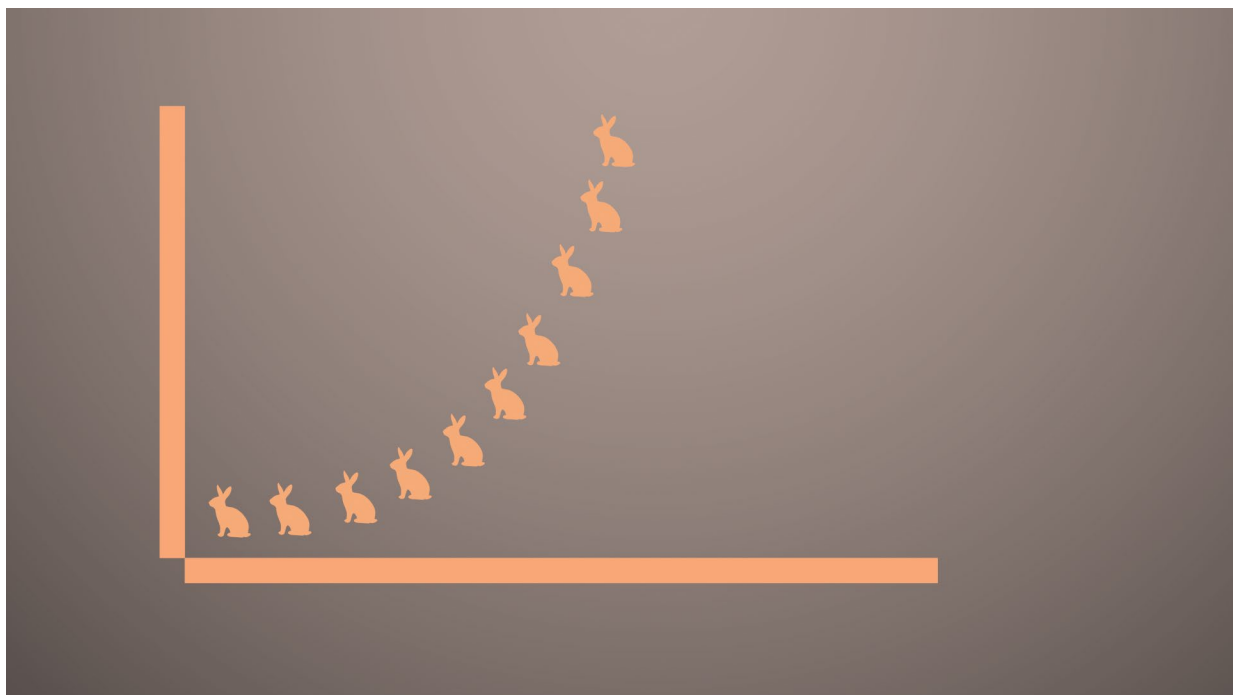
Elephants or rabbits

There is an instructive example from nature that nicely illustrates the difference between linear and exponential growth: the reproduction rate of elephants and rabbits.



What is the rabbit's secret?

- Rabbits are almost always ready for multiplication.
- Rabbits begin multiplying earlier.
- Rabbits multiply one group at once.
- Rabbits need less time for multiplication.



The key to every multiplication movements is thorough discipleship! That is why the Lord told his disciples at the end of His time on the earth: "Make disciples!"

Everyone can win the whole world!

The first Christians in Jerusalem lived multiplicative discipleship. The Gospel spread at a breath-taking pace from there to the former Roman Empire. The reason for this expansion was multiplicative growth.

In Paul's letters, we often read about his disciples. He obviously made disciples in a multiplicative way, unlike Peter. One could assume that the church in Jerusalem and in Israel almost died out in the course of church history perhaps was because Peter focused less on multiplication.

Everyone can win the whole world. If someone would invest himself/herself exclusively into multiplicative discipleship between age 20 and 65 (having 45 strong years feely available), he/she could win the whole world.

A) 5 Disciples in 3 years

01-03 years $1 + 5 = 6$ Disciples
 04-06 years $6 \times 5 = 30 + 6 = 36$ Disciples
 07-09 years $36 \times 5 = 180 + 36 = 216$ Disciples
 10-12 years $216 \times 5 = 1'080 + 216 = 1'296$ Disciples
 13-15 years $1'296 \times 5 = 6'480 + 1'296 = 7'776$ Disciples
 16-18 years $7'776 \times 5 = 38'880 + 7'776 = 46'656$ Disciples
 19-21 years $46'656 \times 5 = 233'280 + 46'656 = 279'936$ Disciples
 22-24 years $279'936 \times 5 = 1'399'680 + 279'936 = 1'679'616$ Disciples
 25-27 years $1'679'616 \times 5 = 8'398'080 + 1'679'616 = 10'077'696$ Disciples
 28-30 years $10'077'696 \times 5 = 50'388'480 + 10'077'696 = 60'466'176$ Disciples
 31-33 years $60'466'176 \times 5 = 302'330'880 + 60'466'176 = 362'797'056$ Disciples
 34-36 years $362'797'056 \times 5 = 1'813'985'280 + 362'797'056 = 2'176'782'336$ Disciples
 37-39 years $2'176'782'336 \times 5 = 10'883'911'680 + 2'176'782'336 = 13'060'694'016$ Disciples
 40-42 years $13'060'694'016 \times 5 = 65'303'470'080 + 13'060'694'016 = 78'364'164'096$ Disciples
 43-45 years $78'364'164'096 \times 5 = 391'820'820'480 + 78'364'164'096 = 470'184'984'576$ Disciples

B) 4 Disciples in 3 years

01-03 years $1 + 4 = 5$ Disciples
 04-06 years $5 \times 4 = 20 + 5 = 25$ Disciples
 07-09 years $25 \times 4 = 100 + 25 = 125$ Disciples
 10-12 years $125 \times 4 = 500 + 125 = 625$ Disciples
 13-15 years $625 \times 4 = 2500 + 625 = 3125$ Disciples
 16-18 years $3125 \times 4 = 12'500 + 3125 = 15'625$ Disciples
 19-21 years $15'625 \times 4 = 62'500 + 15'625 = 78'125$ Disciples
 22-24 years $78'125 \times 4 = 312'500 + 78'125 = 390'625$ Disciples
 25-27 years $390'625 \times 4 = 1'562'500 + 390'625 = 1'953'125$ Disciples
 28-30 years $1'953'125 \times 4 = 7'812'500 + 1'953'125 = 9'765'625$ Disciples
 31-33 years $9'765'625 \times 4 = 48'828'125 + 9'765'625 = 58'593'750$ Disciples
 34-36 years $58'593'750 \times 4 = 234'375'000 + 58'593'750 = 292'968'750$ Disciples
 37-39 years $292'968'750 \times 4 = 1'171'875'000 + 292'968'750 = 1'464'843'750$ Disciples
 40-42 years $1'464'843'750 \times 4 = 5'859'357'000 + 1'464'843'750 = 7'324'200'750$ Disciples
 43-45 years $7'324'200'750 \times 4 = 29'296'803'000 + 7'324'200'750 = 36'621'003'750$ Disciples

C) 3 Disciples in 3 years

01-03 years $1 + 3 = 4$ Disciples

04-06 years $4 \times 3 = 12 + 4 = 16$ Disciples

07-09 years $16 \times 3 = 48 + 16 = 64$ Disciples

10-12 years $64 \times 3 = 192 + 64 = 256$ Disciples

13-15 years $256 \times 3 = 768 + 256 = 1024$ Disciples

16-18 years $1024 \times 3 = 3072 + 1024 = 4096$ Disciples

19-21 years $4096 \times 3 = 12'288 + 4096 = 16'384$ Disciples

22-24 years $16'384 \times 3 = 49'152 + 16'384 = 65'536$ Disciples

25-27 years $65'536 \times 3 = 196'608 + 65'536 = 262'144$ Disciples

28-30 years $262'144 \times 3 = 786'432 + 262'144 = 1'048'576$ Disciples

31-33 years $1'048'576 \times 3 = 3'145'728 + 1'048'576 = 4'194'304$ Disciples

34-36 years $4'194'304 \times 3 = 12'582'912 + 4'194'304 = 16'777'216$ Disciples

37-39 years $16'777'216 \times 3 = 50'331'648 + 16'777'216 = 67'108'864$ Disciples

40-42 years $67'108'864 \times 3 = 201'326'592 + 67'108'864 = 268'435'456$ Disciples

43-45 years $268'435'456 \times 3 = 805'306'368 + 268'435'456 = 1'073'741'824$ Disciples

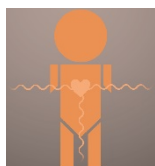
46-48 years $1'073'741'824 \times 3 = 3'221'225'472 + 1'073'741'824 = 4'294'967'296$ Disciples

49-51 years $4'294'967'296 \times 3 = 12'884'901'888 + 4'294'967'296 = 17'179'869'184$ Disciples

One individual could theoretically fulfil the Great Commission alone through multiplicative discipleship.

John 7:38

"Whoever believes in me, as Scripture has said, rivers of living water will flow from within them!"



If we start to make disciples, who make disciples themselves, this is like a stream that never stops to flow. We can also start again and again. In this way we make springs of discipleship that will not cease to flow. Even after we die, these streams will continue to flow. This certainly is the best way to invest our lives. ²

John 7:38

"Whoever believes in me, as Scripture has said, rivers of living water will flow from within them."

² Image: pixabay.com

Multiplication on all levels

Our vision is to start DMMs amongst all unreached peoples. This happens on two different levels:

- On the one hand, by making self-reproducing discipleship amongst the unreached.
- On the other hand, by planting self-reproducing discipleship communities of faith and networked house churches.

Note

- The Holy Spirit has started such discipleship movements worldwide in a sovereign and mighty way. Most of these movements are in Asia (for example in India or China). Many are also in Africa or South America. Sadly, there are comparatively only a few reported in the Western world (Europe, North America, Australia).
- Many of these movements have developed in the high religions (Hinduism, Islam, Buddhism). Some of these movements are huge, with hundreds of thousands of disciples.
- One thing that stands out is that none of these movements conform to the program church model (i.e. regular meetings in one place, pastor, Sunday church service). This kind of church cannot produce a movement. Big, new movements function almost entirely according to the model of the house church and networked house church, with the exception of some cell group churches that reproduce themselves.

Our vision is to start

- Self-reproducing disciples
- Self-reproducing communities of faith
- Movements

The basic principle is:

2 Timothy 2:2

“And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable people who will also be qualified to teach others.”

When we speak of multiplication in terms of natural birth: (conception and birth of a child), not only is a new life born, but the DNA of the parents is also passed on. There should not only be quantitative (quantity) multiplication but also qualitative (quality) multiplication.

Through quantitative multiplication, new followers of Jesus are made and new leaders are trained.

Through qualitative multiplication we multiply

- the 16 discipleship topics
- the 12 core values of a community of faith
- the 5 qualifications of leaders – sent ones, elders, deacons
 1. Maturity in marriage
 2. Maturity in family
 3. Maturity in character
 4. Maturity in life
 5. Ability to teach

The key to every quality multiplication movement is:

- Thorough discipleship
- Healthy communities of faith that live out the 12 values
- Leadership that shows maturity in these 5 areas

Multiplication – each according to its kind

- Disciples bring forth new disciples
- Communities of faith bring forth communities of faith
- Networked house churches bring forth networked house churches
- Sending teams bring forth new sending teams
- Elders bring forth more elders
- Deacons bring forth more deacons
- The five-fold ministry brings forth new five-fold ministries

Vision of a firework at night

A rocket launches into the sky at night and explodes. Out of the first exploding rocket, a second one launches and explodes, followed by a third and fourth and so on, until the whole night sky is lit up. This is the same for a movement that multiplies itself. In the end, we will see multiplication that brings the light of the Kingdom of God to a dark place.

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:
 - A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
 - B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
 - C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
15. Continue to train leaders of networked house churches ☐
16. Appoint your main disciples and the key people for multiplication that you want to send out. Invest yourself especially into these multipliers. ☐
17. Decide with whom you want to share and practice these principles of multiplication. Do it NOW! ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!



Training Unit 48

Multiplication – the goal ahead

This 48th lesson looks at the following topics:

- Case studies
- Mentoring a developing DMM
- Setting goals
- The best is yet to come

John 17:18

As you sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world.

This lesson is about the sending, the ministry of sending and about training for the ministry of sending. Based on the Bible verse above we set Jesus, the great Sent One, as an example for every step of sending.

- Receiving the Holy Spirit, at the beginning of the ministry
- Going – mainly to the villages and towns of Galilee
- Finding persons of peace (Zacchaeus)
- Doing the ministry of the Holy Spirit: healing, casting out evil spirits, raising the dead
- Discipling the twelve disciples
- Forming a community of faith with his disciples
- Multiplying and starting a movement

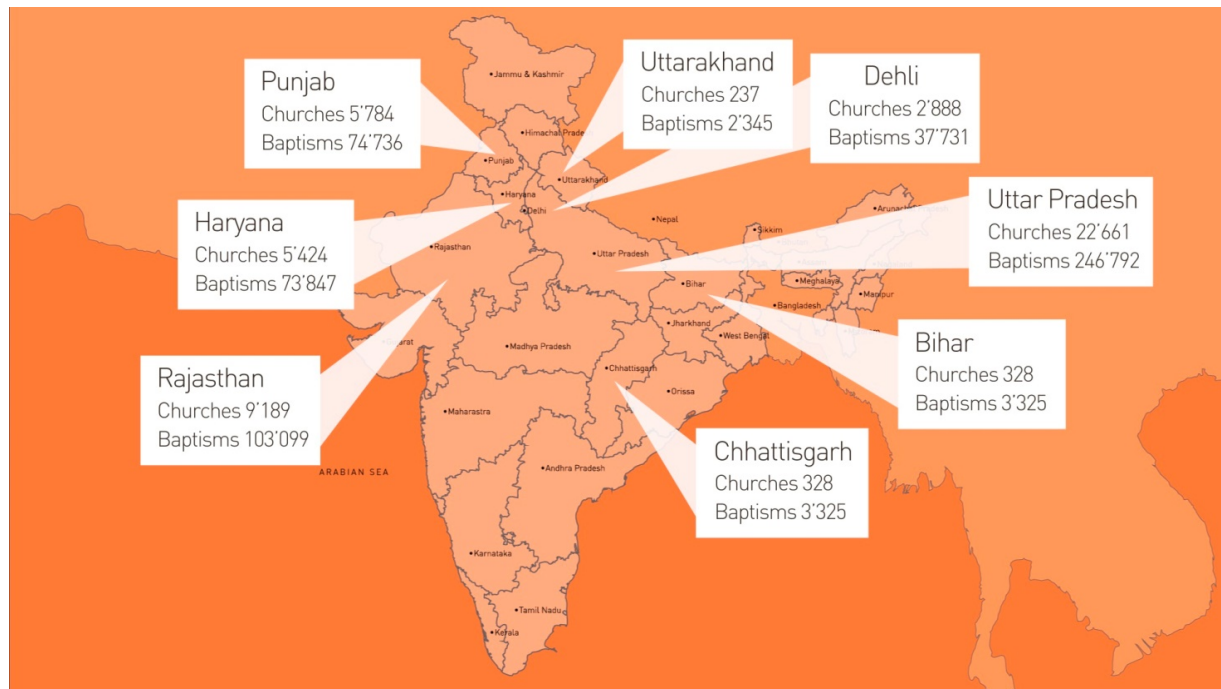
Case studies

1. Case study: Himalaya – systematically-mobile



The map shows where we have been active. We started a movement together with a team. We worked in a mobile-systematic way. For five weeks we covered the same topics as in this BEsent training. We trained 200 people. The days were structured as follows: Morning: teaching, sharing, application. Afternoon: outreach. 136 of these 200 people are still in the ministry. They have formed 186 teams of 2 to 4 people in 12 big regions of the Himalaya. They have baptized 5,000 people within three years who are now being disciplined in the 300 newly planted house churches. On average the disciples and house churches have multiplied four times, in some places, there are even 8 generations of disciples. The work is not done yet. We will continue to support them, until they are mature and strong enough.

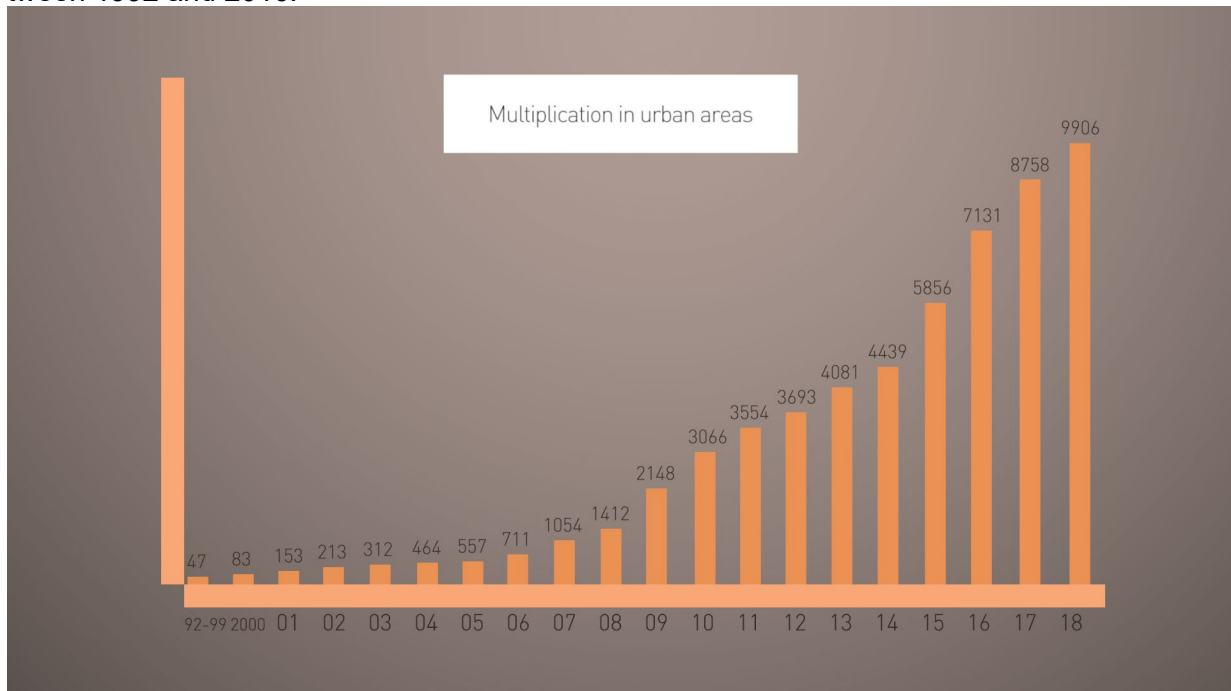
2. Case study: Delhi – organically, locally



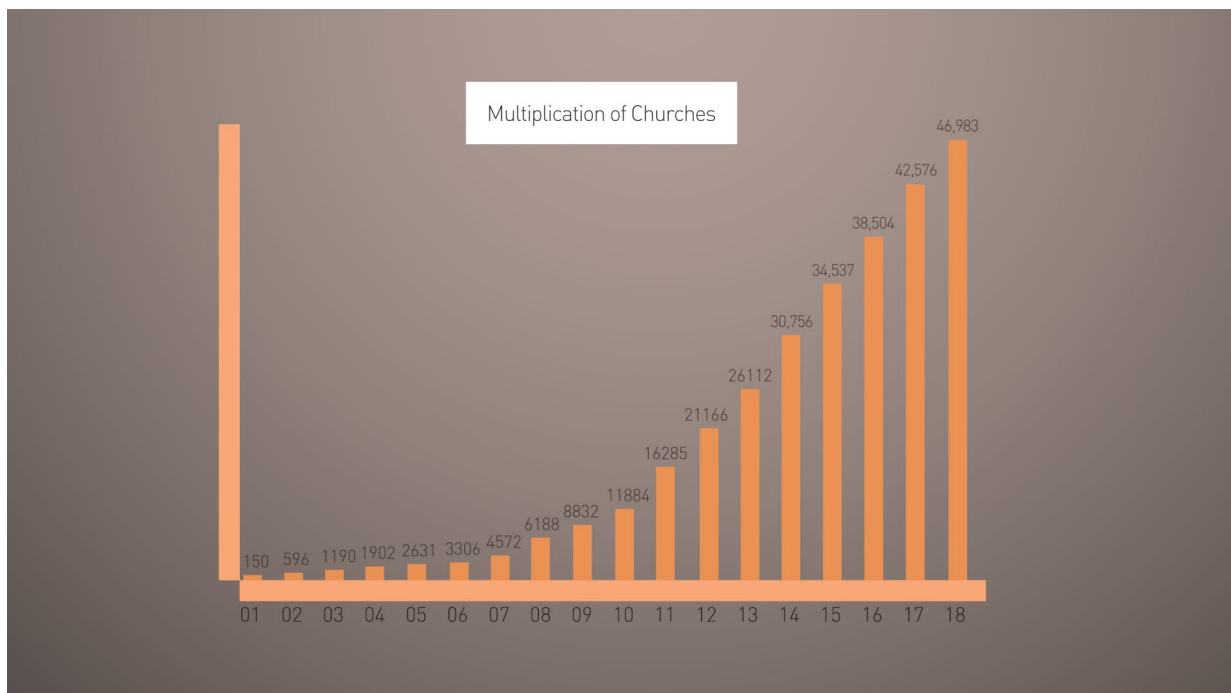
The second case study comes from the capital of India, Delhi. The approach of this example was organic-local. The work began in 1992. A man went to the slums of Delhi, sang songs with his guitar and found a few people who converted. One evening they organized an evangelistic meeting where strong acts of healing happened.

This man was so happy about this evangelistic breakthrough that he laid awake at night and could not sleep anymore. At 3am the Lord spoke to him. He gave him two options to choose from: "Either you continue in your power evangelism ministry and I will bless you, or you really start to disciple these people so that they would make disciples of others." He then decided to follow the discipleship assignment. This work started to spread to the neighbouring provinces. The work begun amongst the Dalit, the descendants of the native Indian people (the "untouchables"), but it also reached Hindus of different castes and later also Muslims.

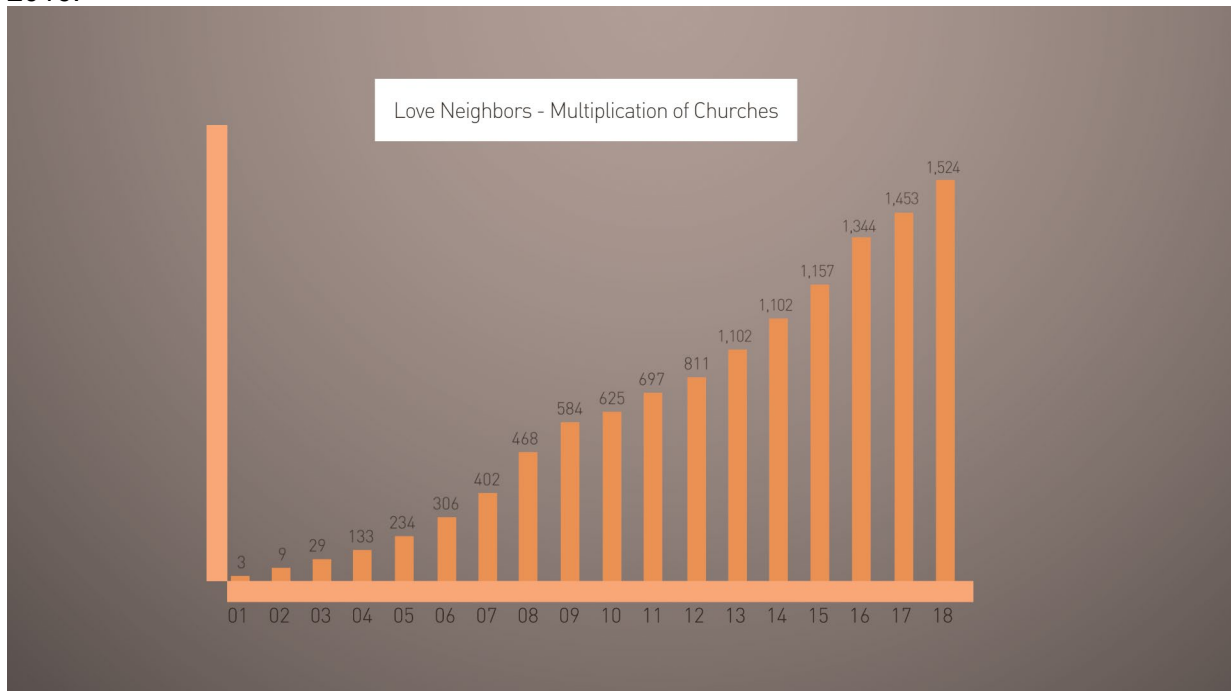
The following graph shows the exponential growth of this work in the metropolis of Delhi, between 1992 and 2016:



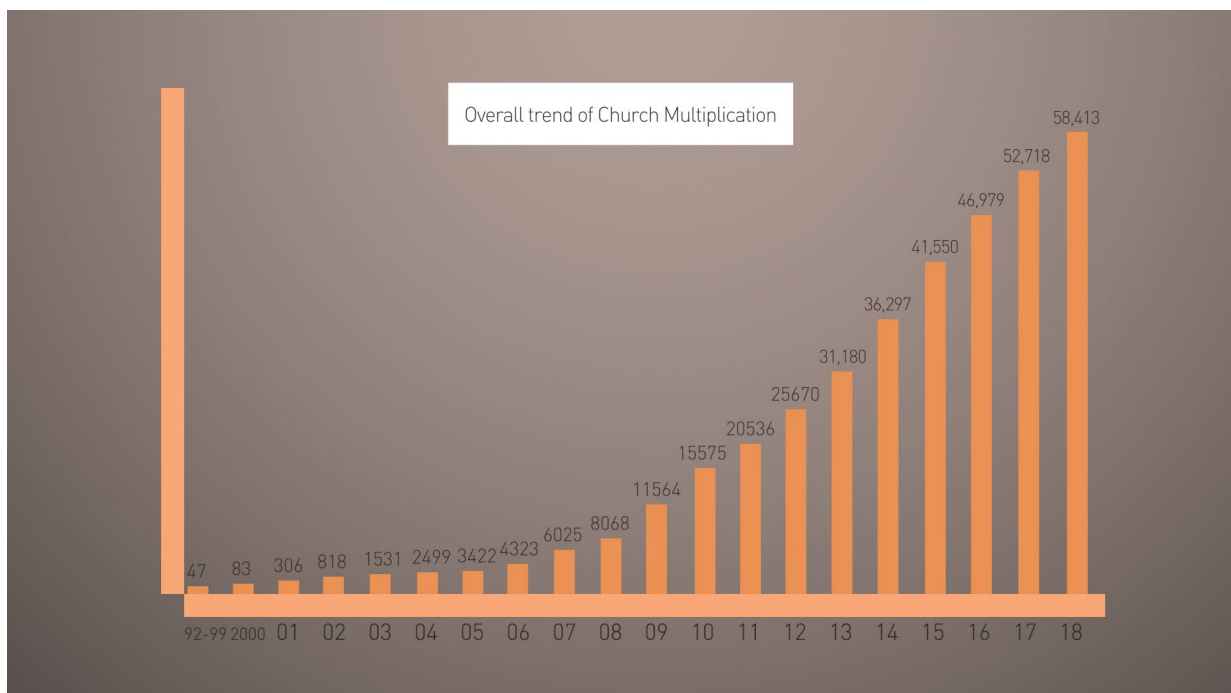
The following graph shows the growth of the house churches in rural areas, between 2001 and 2016:



The following graph shows the growth of house churches in Islamic regions between 2001 and 2016:



The following graph shows the growth of all house churches, between 1992 and 2016:



Within 25 years this DMM ministry grew to more than 500,000 baptized people who are meeting in more than 50,000 house churches.

3. Case study: India – systematically, mobile



India is a worldwide leading example regarding DMMs or discipleship movements. Dr. Victor Choudhrie is the grandfather of these DMM in India. After his early retirement, when he was 60 years old, he started local movements in Central India. He then started working at multiple places simultaneously. Within 20 years, between the age of 60 and 80 years old, he started 25 such movements. He trained people locally and nationally. Whole training chains for sent ones and trainers of sent ones were started.

The development steps in detail:

- Disciples are trained and equipped for the ministry of sending.
- Of the fruitful and successful ones, some become trainers for the training of other disciples.
- From the fruitful and successful trainers, some are chosen to be trainers for trainers, so-called master trainers.
- This ministry of equipping and educating trainers has brought forth 25 movements with several million baptisms and hundreds of thousands of new spiritual families in India within 20 years.

The goal ahead

You cannot just start a DMM and let it run on its own without looking after it.

There are two approaches to start a DMM:

- A) Organic-locally, regional → Requires more time. It took Jesus and Paul (in Ephesus) at least three years.
- B) Systematically-mobile → We have much shorter training times there. However, this also means that longer mentoring times are needed afterwards. On Paul's first and second missionary journey we read about such short training times (between 3 and 18 months). Later, longer mentoring times became necessary because there were gaps in the churches in Galatia and Corinth (see the letters to these churches).

Now, when a DMM is started but the sent ones are not fully trained yet and do not have enough practical experience in all 5 areas of sending:

- Being filled with the Holy Spirit and prayer
- Going, preaching, healing, finding persons of peace
- Discipleship
- Community of faith and leadership training
- Multiplication

... then this DMM work needs mentoring. It is important to support the DMM during this process to fill the remaining gaps.

As mentioned before, the Apostle Paul planted some churches very quickly on his first two missionary journeys to Antioch, Lystra and Derbe. He stayed at each of these places for about three months and then moved on. These DMM then needed a good and healthy mentoring so that they could grow.



The map shows the geographic areas of Paul's first and second missionary journey.

Mentoring can happen in different ways.

- Through indirect contact: Paul wrote lengthy letters to the churches or his disciples. Today one would write e-mails, skype, call, etc.
- Through direct contact by visiting.

Practical example

All DMM teams are visited once a month in the Himalaya. Twice a year, for one week, all sent ones meet for briefing and evaluation, in which they receive training in areas where there are still gaps.

When we visit the different work fields, mentoring covers four areas:

- The team of the sent ones
- The individual team members
- The new disciples and the leaders they have trained
- The spiritual families

Mentoring the team

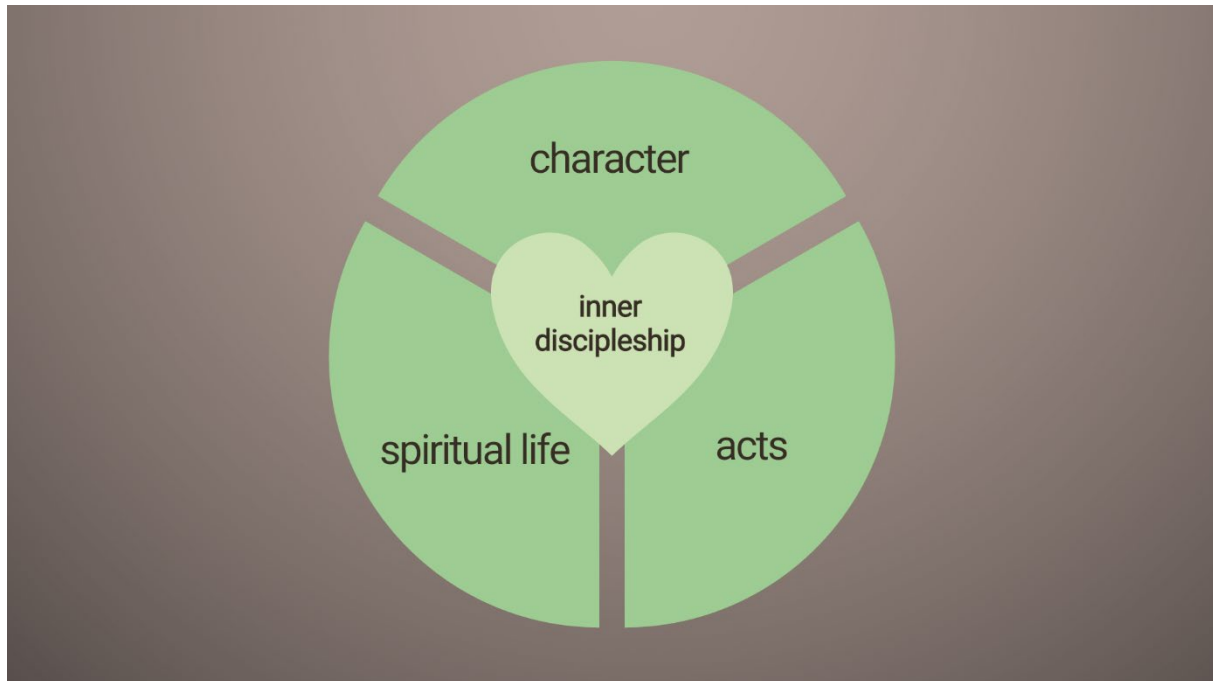
When we visit a team, we look at different areas.

- The spiritual life: do they have times of fellowship and prayer?
- Are they faithful and fruitful in all the steps of the ministry (in prayer, going, discipling, starting and building healthy spiritual families, in multiplication)?
- We continue to train them where we find gaps and we put the emphasis on calling and training new leaders.
- Team conflicts, if present
- Team multiplication: are new people being accepted that can be sent out?
- Team vision
- Team strategy

Mentoring each sent one

- Does everyone have a healthy spiritual life?
- Is the married life and family life healthy?
- Are they faithful and fruitful in the DMM ministry (in prayer, going, discipling, starting and building healthy spiritual families, in multiplication)?

Mentoring each new disciple

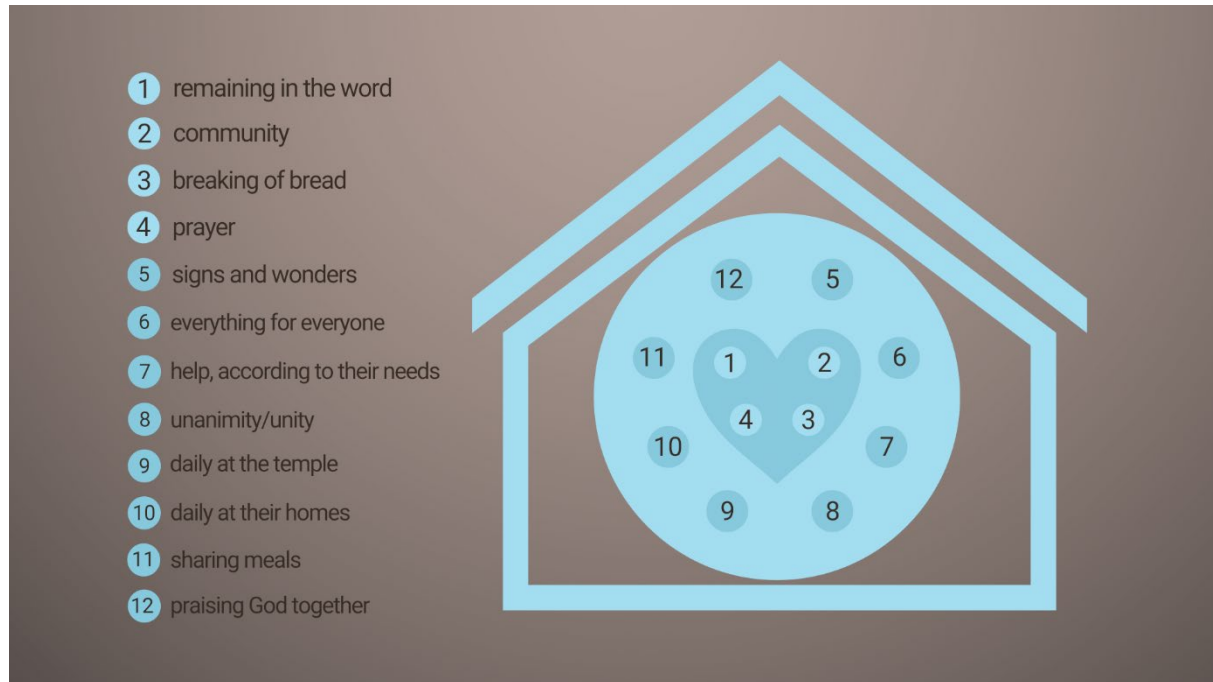


Who was converted? We find out what the spiritual maturity is of every new disciple.

- At which point in the discipleship process are they? In what have they already been trained?
- Which of the 16 topics do they practice autonomously?

	Inner discipleship	Was trained in	Is practicing autonomously
1a	Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ		
1b	Love of the Father		
1c	Fellowship with the Holy Spirit		
	The spiritual life of a disciple		
2	Bible reading DBS		
3	Personal prayer		
4	Assurance of salvation		
5	Being filled with the Holy Spirit		
6	Living in community		
	Deeds of a disciple		
7	Giving testimony		
8	Go and preach the Gospel		
9	The ministry of the Holy Spirit		
10	Giving and sharing		
11	Make disciples		
	Character of a disciple		
12	Love God and your neighbour		
13	Transformational ministry		
14	Forgiveness		
15	Serving		
16	Living by faith		

Mentoring each new community of faith



We evaluate the maturity of the spiritual families:

- In which of the 12 core values of a community of faith have they been trained in?
- Which of the 12 core values of a community of faith are they practicing autonomously?
- How far have deacons come in their training?

	12 core values of a community of faith	Were trained in	Practicing autonomously
1	Remaining in the word - group DBS		
2	Fellowship		
3	Breaking of bread		
4	Prayers		
5	Signs and wonders		
6	Having everything in common		
7	Giving to everyone in need		
8	With one voice		
9	Daily in the temple		
10	Daily in the homes		
11	Sharing meals		
12	Praising God together		

Mentoring: training leaders

Through this practical evaluation of the quality of teams, sent ones, discipleship and spiritual families we can see clearly, what kind of movement is developing and how healthy it is. We examine where there are still gaps and how we can fix these gaps.

- How are the leaders (deacons, elders, sent ones) called and trained? And how are people called and trained for the fivefold ministry?
- We often find a gap here that needs to be fixed during the mentoring time.
- Paul did this the same way by writing letters to his disciples Timothy and Titus.
- Paul taught topics like:
 - Character of a leader, transformational ministry
 - Biblical marriage and family life
 - The fivefold ministry
- Later in his phase as a mentor, he gave instructions about how to apply these topics in a movement. This is one reason he wrote the letters to Timothy and Titus.
- We too should look at these topics during the mentoring time and go deeper where there are still gaps.

Goal setting

Setting goals is an act of faith. Healthy goal setting creates faith in us and makes us courageous to move forward in the direction of the goals we set. If we were commissioned by the Lord to do the ministry of a sent one, then we should expect that the Holy Spirit is already preparing a ripe and great harvest.

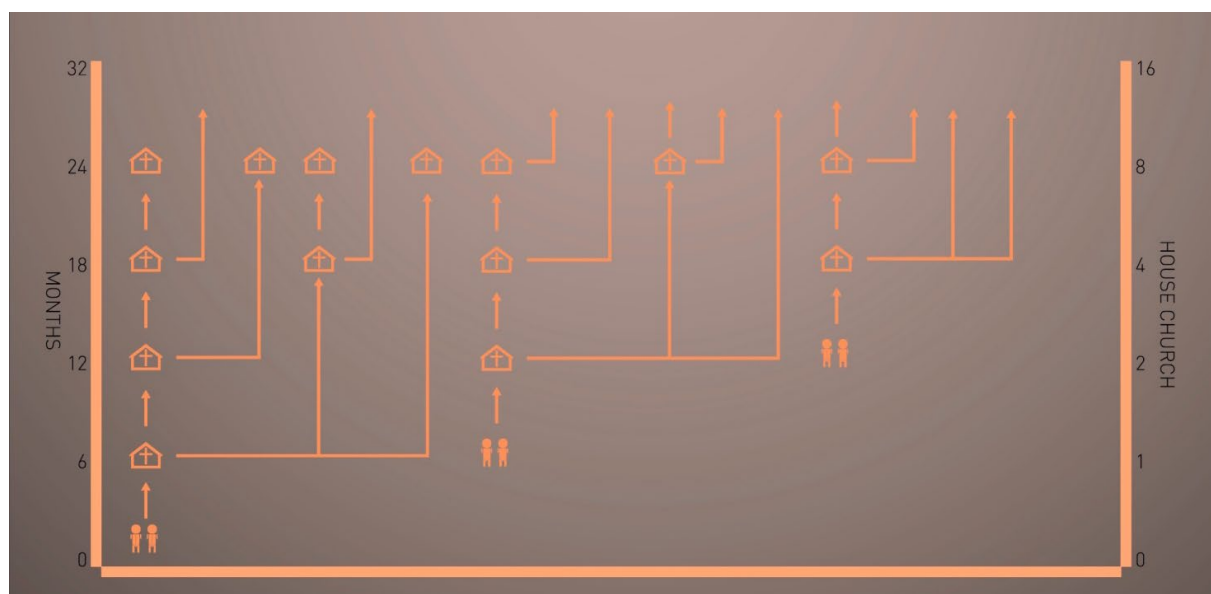
John 4:35

Don't you have a saying, 'It's still four months until harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest.

Matthew 7:7

"Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you.

Of course, the spiritual harvest is not as ripe in some places as in other places. That is why multiplication will be quicker in some places than others.



Example

The Himalaya region is spiritually in the middle; it is neither very open but also not very closed. We set the following goals during a five-week training for the coming two years. The trainees have already experienced a lot during the training. They practiced and experienced the DMM cycle up to the first multiplication and were sent to their fields as pioneer teams.

The goal setting was:

- Within the first 6 months, a team starts a first house church (average size: 8 persons).
- The team disciples the group of new converts (person of peace and his/her house) according to the 16 discipleship topics.
- We call this community of faith the first generation.

Summary of Goal I: After 6 months: 1 house church with 8 baptized disciples that are being discipled intensely according to the 16 topics. This is the first generation.

- After 12 months the team starts another house church.
- The team also disciples this group of new converts (person of peace and his/her house) according to the 16 discipleship topics.
- At the same time, the first generation house church plants a first community of faith and disciples these new converts. At this point we reach the second generation of house churches.

Goal I: After 6 months: 1 community of faith, 1st generation, 8 baptized disciples.

Goal II: After 12 months: 3 communities of faith, 2nd generation, 24 baptized disciples.

Goal III: After 18 months: 7 communities of faith, 3rd generation, 56 baptized disciples.

Goal IV: After 24 months: 15 communities of faith, 4th generation, 120 baptized disciples.

Goal V: After 30 months: 31 communities of faith, 5th generation, 248 baptized disciples.

Goal III: After 36 months: 63 communities of faith, 6th generation, 504 baptized disciples.

Goal VII: After 42 months: 127 communities of faith, 7th generation, 1016 baptized disciples.

That is a DMM!

These are optimistic but realistic goals. People have achieved these goals and the Lord has confirmed it. The key to reaching these goals lies in thorough and healthy discipleship.

The best is yet to come

Matthew 18:18-20

“Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. “Again, truly I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything they ask for, it will be done for them by my Father in heaven. For where two or three gather in my name, there am I with them.”

The disciples asked Jesus what is to come at the end. His answer was: wars, famines, earthquakes and love growing cold. The picture Jesus is painting is quite dark, but then comes a bright flash of lightning in the dark night:

Matthew 24:14

And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.

In the original Greek text this is a very strong statement. It will be preached! It will be this way! There will be great proclamation reaching all peoples. With this BEsent training we want to contribute to this. For His glory!

Application

- a) Someone from the group summarize this teaching in your own words. If anything is missing, the others can add to the summary.
- b) Group discussion.
- c) Write down personal insights from the teaching.

- d) Share with the group who you want to train in this lesson.

- e) Every group explains what they have learned and presents their goals of application.

Outreach

Prayer (4 hours/week), going (4 hours/week), discipleship (4 hours/week), community of faith (3 hours/week).

1. PRAYING:
 - A) Prayer walk with a partner or the team for 2 hours every week ☐
 - B) Pray 1 hour for your disciples before every discipleship meeting ☐
 - C) Pray 1 hour before every community meeting ☐
2. GO: to the unreached you have a heart for ☐
3. Look for persons of peace ☐
4. PREACH: the gospel of the Kingdom of God ☐
5. EXPLAINING: the way of salvation ☐
6. Evangelistic Bible studies with interested people ☐
7. Share your personal testimony with five other people ☐
8. Call to repentance and to follow Jesus ☐
9. FAITH, REPENTANCE, BAPTISM AND RECEIVING THE HOLY SPIRIT ☐
10. Pray for sick people during an outreach ☐
11. Raise a dead person if you are led to do so ☐
12. Seek to hear God's voice and the guidance of the Holy Spirit ☐
13. Pray for the 200 million persecuted Christians in the world, pray for your "persecutors" and bless those who are cursing you. ☐
14. Continue to teach all 16 lessons to the discipleship group and coach them in it ☐
15. Continue to train leaders of networked house churches ☐
16. Appoint your main disciples and the key people for multiplication that you want to send out. Invest yourself especially into these multipliers. ☐
17. Introduce the mentoring system on all levels and fix the gaps in the process. ☐

BEsent is a training - without practice it is almost useless!